

The Project Gutenberg eBook of A Harmony of the Gospels for Students of the Life of Christ, by John Albert Broadus and A. T. Robertson

This ebook is for the use of anyone anywhere in the United States and most other parts of the world at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this ebook or online at www.gutenberg.org. If you are not located in the United States, you'll have to check the laws of the country where you are located before using this eBook.

Title: A Harmony of the Gospels for Students of the Life of Christ

Author: John Albert Broadus

Author: A. T. Robertson

Release date: May 29, 2011 [EBook #36264]

Most recently updated: January 7, 2021

Language: English

Credits: Produced by Ron Swanson

*** START OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK A HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS FOR STUDENTS OF THE LIFE OF CHRIST ***



A HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS FOR STUDENTS OF THE LIFE OF CHRIST

*Based on the Broadus Harmony
in the Revised Version*

BY
A. T. ROBERTSON, M.A., D.D., LL.D., LITT.D.

CHAIR OF NEW TESTAMENT INTERPRETATION
SOUTHERN BAPTIST THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY
LOUISVILLE, KENTUCKY

"Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me."



HARPER & BROTHERS PUBLISHERS
NEW YORK AND LONDON

COPYRIGHT, 1922,
BY HARPER & BROTHERS

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

TO

ELIZA S. BROADUS

ELDEST DAUGHTER OF JOHN A. BROADUS
AN ELECT LADY BELOVED IN MANY LANDS

PREFACE

It is now just thirty years since one day his young assistant suggested to Dr. John A. Broadus that he prepare a harmony of the Gospels that should depart from the old plan of following the feasts as the turning points in the life of Jesus. He acted on the hint and led the way that all modern harmonies have followed. The book has gone through a dozen large editions and has become the standard harmony for many thousands of students all over the world. Broadus was concerned to bring out "the inner movements of the history, towards that long-delayed, but foreseen and inevitable collision, in which, beyond all other instances, the wrath of man was made to praise God." This he succeeded in doing with marvelous power.

A generation has passed by and it is meet that the work of Broadus should be reviewed in the light of modern synoptic criticism and research into every phase of the life of Christ. So I have made a new analysis that preserves Broadus's real purpose, but with new sections and new notes. The notes at the end of the old volume, written by me for the first edition, have been thoroughly revised and brought up to date. The Old Testament passages referred to in the Gospels are given in the text. The Gospel of Mark appears in the first column, then Matthew, Luke, and John. It is now known that Matthew and Luke made use of Mark for the framework of their Gospels. This change simplifies amazingly the unfolding of the narrative.

There is still dispute concerning the historical worth of the Gospel of John, but the Johannine authorship is not disproved. It still holds the field in my opinion. Dr. C. F. Burney's theory of an Aramaic original is already giving a new turn to Johannine criticism.

A harmony of the Gospels cannot meet every phase of modern criticism. The data are given, as free from bias as circumstances allow, so that all students can use the book and interpret the facts according to their various theories. Numerous historical items call for notes of various kinds that throw light on the passage in question. No effort is made to reconcile all the divergent statements of various details in the different Gospels. The differences challenge the student's interest as much as the correspondences and are natural marks of individual work. The notes and appendices at the end of the volume are meant for students who wish help for historical study of the life of Christ. A harmony cannot give all the aid that one needs, but it is the one essential book for the serious study of the life of Jesus. Students in colleges, theological seminaries, Young Men's Christian Association and Young Women's Christian Association classes, Sunday School teachers and pupils, preachers, all who read the Gospels intelligently must have a modern harmony of the Gospels. One who has never read a harmony will be amazed at the flood of light that flashes from the parallel and progressive records of the life of Jesus Christ.

Broadus began teaching the life of Jesus in 1859 and kept it up till his death in 1895. I began like work in 1888 and have kept on without a break till now. I count it one of the crowning mercies of my life that I have led so many successive classes of young ministers and young women (some five thousand in all) through the study of Christ's life. If only one can pass on to others in all their freshness and power the teachings of Jesus, he cannot fail. There was a time when men hung in wonder upon the words of Jesus, listening with awe and rapture as he spoke. The Figure of Christ fills the world today as never before. Back to Christ the world has come, the Christ of Faith and of Experience, the Jesus of History, the Man of Galilee, the Hope of Today, the Jesus Christ of the Four Gospels, in the full blaze of modern critical and historical study.

A. T. ROBERTSON.

*Louisville,
Kentucky.*

CONTENTS

[PREFACE](#)

[CHIEF DIVISIONS OF THE HARMONY](#)

[ANALYTICAL OUTLINE OF THE HARMONY](#)

[TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN THE HARMONY](#)

[THE HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS](#)

[EXPLANATORY NOTES ON POINTS OF SPECIAL DIFFICULTY IN THE HARMONY](#)

- [1. About Harmonies of the Gospels](#)
 - [2. Synoptic Criticism](#)
 - [3. The Authorship of the Fourth Gospel](#)
 - [4. The Jesus of History](#)
 - [5. The Two Genealogies of Christ](#)
 - [6. The Probable Time of the Saviour's Birth](#)
 - [7. The Feast of John 5:1, and the Duration of Our Lord's Ministry](#)
 - [8. The Four Lists of the Twelve Apostles](#)
 - [9. The Sermon on the Mount](#)
 - [10. The Combination of Luke and John](#)
 - [11. Did Christ Eat the Passover?](#)
 - [12. The Hour of the Crucifixion](#)
 - [13. The Time of the Resurrection of Christ](#)
 - [14. The Length of Our Lord's Stay in the Tomb](#)
- [A LIST OF THE PARABLES OF JESUS](#)
- [A LIST OF THE MIRACLES OF JESUS](#)
- [LIST OF OLD TESTAMENT QUOTATIONS IN THE GOSPELS](#)
- [A LIST OF SOME UNCANONICAL SAYINGS OF JESUS](#)
- [SIMILAR INCIDENTS AND CHIEF REPEATED SAYINGS](#)

CHIEF DIVISIONS OF THE HARMONY

PART I: THE SOURCES OF THE GOSPELS

§ 1

PART II: THE PRE-EXISTENT STATE OF CHRIST AND HIS INCARNATION

§ 2

PART III: THE TWO GENEALOGIES IN MATTHEW AND LUKE

§ 3

PART IV: THE BIRTH AND CHILDHOOD OF THE BAPTIST AND OF JESUS

§§ 4-19. (Probably B.C. 7 to A.D. 7)

PART V: THE BEGINNING OF THE BAPTIST'S MINISTRY

§§ 20-23. (Probably A.D. 25)

PART VI: THE BEGINNING OF CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY

§§ 24-36. (In all parts of Palestine. Probably A.D. 26 and 27)

PART VII: THE GREAT GALLILEAN MINISTRY

§§ 37-71. (Probably A.D. 27 to 29)

PART VIII: THE SPECIAL TRAINING OF THE TWELVE IN DISTRICTS AROUND GALILEE

§§ 72-95. (Probably Passover in A.D. 29 to Tabernacles in A.D. 29)

PART IX: THE LATER JUDEAN MINISTRY

§§ 96-111. (Probably Tabernacles to Dedication in A.D. 29)

PART X: THE LATER PEREAN MINISTRY

§§ 112-127. (Probably Dedication in A.D. 29 to Last Journey in A.D. 30)

PART XI: THE LAST PUBLIC MINISTRY IN JERUSALEM

§§ 128a-138. (Friday before the Passover to Tuesday of Passion Week, A.D. 30 or 29)

PART XII: IN THE SHADOW WITH JESUS

§§ 139-152. (Tuesday afternoon to Thursday night of Passion Week, A.D. 30 or 29)

PART XIII: THE ARREST, TRIAL, CRUCIFIXION, AND BURIAL OF JESUS

§§ 153-168. (Early Friday morning to Saturday of Passion Week, A.D. 30 or 29)

PART XIV: THE RESURRECTION, APPEARANCES, AND ASCENSION OF CHRIST

§§ 169-184. (Forty days from Sunday of Passion Week, A.D. 30 or 29)

ANALYTICAL OUTLINE OF THE HARMONY

PART I: THE SOURCES OF THE GOSPELS

§ 1: IN THE DEDICATION LUKE EXPLAINS HIS METHOD OF RESEARCH
Luke 1:1-4.

PART II: THE PRE-EXISTENT STATE OF CHRIST AND HIS INCARNATION

§ 2: IN HIS INTRODUCTION JOHN PICTURES CHRIST AS THE WORD (LOGOS)
John 1:1-18.

PART III: THE TWO GENEALOGIES IN MATTHEW AND LUKE

§ 3: APPARENTLY JOSEPH'S GENEALOGY IN MATTHEW AND MARY'S IN LUKE
Matt. 1:1-17; Luke 3:23-38.

PART IV: THE BIRTH AND CHILDHOOD OF THE BAPTIST AND OF JESUS

SECTIONS 4-19

§ 4: THE ANNUNCIATION OF THE BIRTH OF THE BAPTIST TO ZACHARIAS
Luke 1:5-25.

§ 5: THE ANNUNCIATION TO THE VIRGIN MARY OF THE BIRTH OF JESUS
Luke 1:26-38.

§ 6: THE SONG OF ELIZABETH TO MARY UPON HER VISIT
Luke 1:39-45.

§ 7: THE MAGNIFICAT OF MARY
Luke 1:46-56.

§ 8: THE BIRTH AND CHILDHOOD OF THE BAPTIST AND HIS DESERT LIFE
Luke 1:57-80.

§ 9: THE ANNUNCIATION TO JOSEPH OF THE BIRTH OF JESUS
Matt. 1:18-25.

§ 10: THE BIRTH OF JESUS
Luke 2:1-7.

§ 11: THE PRAISE OF THE ANGELS AND THE HOMAGE OF THE SHEPHERDS
Luke 2:8-20.

§ 12: THE CIRCUMCISION OF JESUS
Luke 2:21.

§ 13: THE PRESENTATION IN THE TEMPLE WITH THE HOMAGE OF SIMEON AND ANNA
Luke 2:22-38.

§ 14: MAGI VISIT THE NEW-BORN KING OF THE JEWS
Matt. 2:1-12.

§ 15: THE CHILD JESUS CARRIED TO EGYPT, AND THE CHILDREN AT BETHLEHEM SLAIN
Matt. 2:13-18.

§ 16: THE CHILD BROUGHT FROM EGYPT TO NAZARETH
Matt. 2:19-23; Luke 2:39.

§ 17: THE CHILDHOOD OF JESUS AT NAZARETH
Luke 2:40.

§ 18: THE VISIT OF THE BOY JESUS TO JERUSALEM WHEN TWELVE YEARS OLD
Luke 2:41-50.

§ 19: THE EIGHTEEN YEARS AT NAZARETH
Luke 2:51-52.

PART V: THE BEGINNING OF THE BAPTIST'S MINISTRY

SECTIONS 20-23

§ 20: THE TIME OF THE BEGINNING
Mark 1:1; Luke 3:1-2.

§ 21: THE MESSAGE AND THE MESSENGER
Mark 1:2-6; Matt. 3:1-6; Luke 3:3-6.

§ 22: A SPECIMEN OF JOHN'S PREACHING
Matt. 3:7-10; Luke 3:7-14.

§ 23: THE FORERUNNER'S PICTURE OF THE MESSIAH BEFORE SEEING HIM
Mark 1:7-8; Matt. 3:11-12; Luke 3:15-18.

PART VI: THE BEGINNING OF CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY

SECTIONS 24-36

- [§ 24:](#) JESUS BAPTIZED BY JOHN IN THE JORDAN
Mark 1:9-11; Matt. 3:13-17; Luke 3:21-23.
- [§ 25:](#) THE THREE TEMPTATIONS OF JESUS
Mark 1:12-13; Matt. 4:1-11; Luke 4:1-13.
- [§ 26:](#) THE TESTIMONY OF THE BAPTIST TO THE COMMITTEE OF THE SANHEDRIN
John 1:19-28.
- [§ 27:](#) JOHN'S IDENTIFICATION OF JESUS AS THE MESSIAH
John 1:29-34.
- [§ 28:](#) JESUS MAKES HIS FIRST DISCIPLES
John 1:35-51.
- [§ 29:](#) JESUS WORKS HIS FIRST MIRACLE
John 2:1-11.
- [§ 30:](#) JESUS MAKES A FIRST SOJOURN AT CAPERNAUM, ACCOMPANIED BY HIS KINDRED AND HIS EARLY DISCIPLES
John 2:12.
- [§ 31:](#) THE FIRST CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE AT THE PASSOVER
John 2:13-22.
- [§ 32:](#) THE INTERVIEW OF NICODEMUS WITH JESUS
John 2:23-3:21.
- [§ 33:](#) THE PARALLEL MINISTRY OF JESUS AND JOHN WITH JOHN'S LOYALTY TO JESUS
John 3:22-36.
- [§ 34:](#) CHRIST'S REASONS FOR LEAVING JUDEA
Mark 1:14; Matt. 4:12; Luke 3:19-20; 4:14; John 4:1-4.
- [§ 35:](#) JESUS IN SAMARIA AT JACOB'S WELL AND IN SYCHAR
John 4:5-42.
- [§ 36:](#) THE ARRIVAL OF JESUS IN GALILEE
John 4:43-45.

PART VII: THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

SECTIONS 37-71

Eight Groups in the Period

- (1) The Rejection at Nazareth and the New Home in Capernaum
Sections 37-43.
- (2) The First Tour of Galilee with the Four Fishermen and the Call of Matthew (Levi) on the Return with the Growing Fame of Jesus
Sections 44-48.
- (3) The Sabbath Controversy in Jerusalem and in Galilee
Sections 49-51.
- (4) The Choice of the Twelve and the Sermon on the Mount
Sections 52-54.
- (5) The Spread of Christ's Influence and the Inquiry from John in Prison
Sections 55-59.
- (6) The Second Tour of Galilee (now with the Twelve) and the Intense Hostility of the Pharisees
Sections 60-63.
- (7) The First Great Group of Parables with the Visit to Gerasa (Khersa) and to Nazareth (final one)
Sections 64-69.
- (8) The Third Tour of Galilee (following the Twelve) and the Effect on Herod Antipas
Sections 70-71.

- [§ 37:](#) GENERAL ACCOUNT OF HIS TEACHING IN GALILEE
Mark 1:14-15; Matt. 4:17; Luke 4:14-15.
- [§ 38:](#) THE HEALING AT CANA OF THE SON OF A COURTIER OF CAPERNAUM
John 4:46-54.
- [§ 39:](#) THE FIRST REJECTION AT NAZARETH
Luke 4:16-31.
- [§ 40:](#) THE NEW HOME IN CAPERNAUM
Matt. 4:13-16.
- [§ 41:](#) JESUS FINDS FOUR FISHERS OF MEN IN FOUR FISHERMEN
Mark 1:16-20; Matt. 4:18-22; Luke 5:1-11.
- [§ 42:](#) THE EXCITEMENT IN THE SYNAGOGUE BECAUSE OF THE TEACHING OF JESUS AND THE HEALING OF A DEMONIAK ON THE SABBATH
Mark 1:21-28; Luke 4:31-37.
- [§ 43:](#) HE HEALS PETER'S MOTHER-IN-LAW AND MANY OTHERS
Mark 1:29-34; Matt. 8:14-17; Luke 4:38-41.
- [§ 44:](#) THE FIRST TOUR OF GALILEE WITH THE FOUR FISHERMEN
Mark 1:35-39; Matt. 4:23-25; Luke 4:42-44.
- [§ 45:](#) A LEPER HEALED AND MUCH POPULAR EXCITEMENT

- Mark 1:40-45; Matt. 8:2-4; Luke 5:12-16.
- [§ 46:](#) THRONGED IN CAPERNAUM, HE HEALS A PARALYTIC LOWERED THROUGH THE ROOF OF PETER'S HOUSE
Mark 2:1-12; Matt. 9:1-8; Luke 5:17-26.
- [§ 47:](#) THE CALL OF MATTHEW (LEVI) AND HIS RECEPTION IN HONOR OF JESUS
Mark 2:13-17; Matt. 9:9-13; Luke 5:27-32.
- [§ 48:](#) JESUS IN THREE PARABLES DEFENDS HIS DISCIPLES FOR FEASTING INSTEAD OF FASTING
Mark 2:18-22; Matt. 9:14-17; Luke 5:33-39.
- [§ 49:](#) AT A FEAST IN JERUSALEM (POSSIBLY THE PASSOVER) JESUS HEALS A LAME MAN ON THE SABBATH AND DEFENDS THIS ACTION TO THE PHARISEES IN A GREAT DISCOURSE
John 5:1-47.
- [§ 50:](#) ANOTHER SABBATH CONTROVERSY WITH THE PHARISEES WHEN THE DISCIPLES PLUCK EARS OF GRAIN IN THE FIELDS
Mark 2:23-28; Matt. 12:1-8; Luke 6:1-5.
- [§ 51:](#) A THIRD SABBATH CONTROVERSY WITH THE PHARISEES OVER THE HEALING OF A MAN WITH A WITHERED HAND IN A SYNAGOGUE
Mark 3:1-6; Matt. 12:9-14; Luke 6:6-11.
- [§ 52:](#) JESUS TEACHES AND HEALS GREAT MULTITUDES BY THE SEA OF GALILEE
Mark 3:7-12; Matt. 12:15-21.
- [§ 53:](#) AFTER A NIGHT OF PRAYER JESUS SELECTS TWELVE APOSTLES
Mark 3:13-19; Luke 6:12-16.
- [§ 54:](#) THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT. PRIVILEGES AND REQUIREMENTS OF THE MESSIANIC REIGN, CHRIST'S STANDARD OF RIGHTEOUSNESS
Matt. 5-7; Luke 6:17-49.
The Place and the Audience
Matt. 5:1-2; Luke 6:17-19.
- [\(1\)](#) The Introduction: The Beatitudes and the Woes. Privileges of the Messiah's Subjects
Matt. 5:3-12; Luke 6:20-26.
- [\(2\)](#) The Theme of the Sermon: Christ's Standard of Righteousness in Contrast with that of the Scribes and Pharisees
Matt. 5:13-20.
- [\(3\)](#) Christ's Ethical Teaching Superior to that of the Scribes (both the Old Testament and the Oral Law) in Six Items or Illustrations (Murder, Adultery, Divorce, Oaths, Retaliations, Love of Enemies)
Matt. 5:21-48; Luke 6:27-30, 32-36.
- [\(4\)](#) The Practice of Real Righteousness unlike the Ostentatious Hypocrisy of the Pharisees as in Almsgiving, Prayer, Fasting
Matt. 6:1-18.
- [\(5\)](#) Single-hearted Devotion to God as Opposed to Worldly Aims and Anxieties
Matt. 6:19-34.
- [\(6\)](#) Captious Criticism, or Judging Others
Matt. 7:1-6; Luke 6:37-42.
- [\(7\)](#) Prayer and the Golden Rule
Matt. 7:7-12; Luke 6:31.
- [\(8\)](#) The Conclusion of the Sermon. The Lesson of Personal Righteousness Driven Home by Powerful Parables
Matt. 7:13-8:1; Luke 6:43-49.
- [§ 55:](#) JESUS HEALS A CENTURION'S SERVANT AT CAPERNAUM
Matt. 8:5-13; Luke 7:1-10.
- [§ 56:](#) HE RAISES A WIDOW'S SON AT NAIN
Luke 7:11-17.
- [§ 57:](#) THE MESSAGE FROM THE BAPTIST AND THE EULOGY OF JESUS
Matt. 11:2-19; Luke 7:18-35.
- [§ 58:](#) WOES UPON THE CITIES OF OPPORTUNITY. THE CLAIMS OF CHRIST AS THE TEACHER ABOUT THE FATHER
Matt. 11:20-30.
- [§ 59:](#) THE ANOINTING OF CHRIST'S FEET BY A SINFUL WOMAN IN THE HOUSE OF SIMON A PHARISEE. THE PARABLE OF THE TWO DEBTORS
Luke 7:36-50.
- [§ 60:](#) THE SECOND TOUR OF GALILEE
Luke 8:1-3.
- [§ 61:](#) BLASPHEMOUS ACCUSATION OF LEAGUE WITH BEELZEBUB
Mark 3:19-30; Matt. 12:22-37.
- [§ 62:](#) SCRIBES AND PHARISEES DEMAND A SIGN
Matt. 12:38-45.
- [§ 63:](#) CHRIST'S MOTHER AND BRETHREN SEEK TO TAKE HIM HOME
Mark 3:31-35; Matt. 12:46-50; Luke 8:19-21.
- [§ 64:](#) THE FIRST GREAT GROUP OF PARABLES

Mark 4:1-34; Matt. 13:1-53; Luke 8:4-18.

Introduction to the Group

Mark 4:1-2; Matt. 13:1-3; Luke 8:4.

1: To the Crowds by the Sea

(a) Parable of the Sower

Mark 4:3-25; Matt. 13:3-23; Luke 8:5-18.

(b) Parable of the Seed Growing of Itself

Mark 4:26-29.

(c) Parable of the Tares

Matt. 13:24-30.

(d) Parable of the Mustard Seed

Mark 4:30-32; Matt. 13:31-32.

(e) Parable of the Leaven and Many Such Parables

Mark 4:33-34; Matt. 13:33-35.

2. To the Disciples in the House

(a) Explanation of the Parable of the Tares

Matt. 13:36-43.

(b) The Parable of the Hid Treasure

Matt. 13:44.

(c) The Parable of the Pearl of Great Price

Matt. 13:45-46.

(d) The Parable of the Net

Matt. 13:47-50.

(e) The Parable of the Householder

Matt. 13:51-53.

§ 65: IN CROSSING THE LAKE, JESUS STILLS THE TEMPEST

Mark 4:35-41; Matt. 8:18, 23-27; Luke 8:22-25.

§ 66: BEYOND THE LAKE JESUS HEALS THE GERASENE DEMONIAK

Mark 5:1-20; Matt. 8:28-34; Luke 8:26-39.

§ 67: THE RETURN AND THE HEALING OF JAIRUS' DAUGHTER AND OF THE WOMAN WHO ONLY TOUCHED CHRIST'S GARMENT

Mark 5:21-43; Matt. 9:18-26; Luke 8:40-56.

§ 68: HE HEALS TWO BLIND MEN AND A DUMB DEMONIAK, A BLASPHEMOUS ACCUSATION

Matt. 9:27-34.

§ 69: THE LAST VISIT TO NAZARETH

Mark 6:1-6; Matt. 13:54-58.

§ 70: THE THIRD TOUR OF GALILEE AFTER INSTRUCTING THE TWELVE AND SENDING THEM FORTH BY TWOS

Mark 6:6-13; Matt. 9:35-11:1; Luke 9:1-6.

§ 71: THE GUILTY FEARS OF HEROD ANTIPAS IN TIBERIAS ABOUT JESUS BECAUSE HE HAD BEHEADED THE BAPTIST IN MACHÆRUS

Mark 6:14-29; Matt. 14:1-12; Luke 9:7-9.

PART VIII: THE SPECIAL TRAINING OF THE TWELVE IN DISTRICTS AROUND GALILEE

SECTIONS 72-95

§ 72: THE FIRST RETIREMENT. THE TWELVE RETURN, AND JESUS RETIRES WITH THEM BEYOND THE LAKE TO REST. FEEDING OF THE FIVE THOUSAND

Mark 6:30-44; Matt. 14:13-21; Luke 9:10-17; John 6:1-13.

§ 73: THE PREVENTION OF THE REVOLUTIONARY PURPOSE TO PROCLAIM JESUS KING (A POLITICAL MESSIAH)

Mark 6:45-46; Matt. 14:22-23; John 6:14-15.

§ 74: THE PERIL TO THE TWELVE IN THE STORM AT SEA AND CHRIST'S COMING TO THEM ON THE WATER IN THE DARKNESS

Mark 6:47-52; Matt. 14:24-33; John 6:16-21.

§ 75: THE RECEPTION AT GENNESARET

Mark 6:53-56; Matt. 14:34-36.

§ 76: THE COLLAPSE OF THE GALILEAN CAMPAIGN BECAUSE JESUS WILL NOT CONFORM TO POPULAR MESSIANIC EXPECTATIONS

John 6:22-71.

§ 77: PHARISEES FROM JERUSALEM REPROACH JESUS FOR ALLOWING HIS DISCIPLES TO DISREGARD THEIR TRADITIONS ABOUT CEREMONIAL DEFILEMENT OF THE HANDS. A PUZZLING PARABLE IN REPLY

Mark 7:1-23; Matt. 15:1-20; John 7:1.

§ 78: THE SECOND WITHDRAWAL TO THE REGION OF TYRE AND SIDON AND THE HEALING OF THE DAUGHTER OF A SYRO-PHOENICIAN WOMAN

Mark 7:24-30; Matt. 15:21-28.

§ 79: THE THIRD WITHDRAWAL NORTH THROUGH PHOENICIA AND EAST TOWARDS HERMON AND

SOUTH INTO DECAPOLIS (KEEPING OUT OF THE TERRITORY OF HEROD ANTIPAS) WITH THE HEALING OF THE DEAF AND DUMB MAN AND THE FEEDING OF THE FOUR THOUSAND

Mark 7:31-8:9; Matt. 15:29-38.

[§ 80:](#) THE BRIEF VISIT TO MAGADAN (DALMANUTHA) IN GALILEE AND THE SHARP ATTACK BY THE PHARISEES AND SADDUCEES. (NOTE THEIR APPEARANCE NOW AGAINST JESUS)

Mark 8:10-12; Matt. 15:39-16:4.

[§ 81:](#) THE FOURTH RETIREMENT TO BETHSAIDA JULIAS IN THE TETRARCHY OF HEROD PHILIP WITH SHARP REBUKE OF THE DULNESS OF THE DISCIPLES ON THE WAY ACROSS AND THE HEALING OF A BLIND MAN IN BETHSAIDA

Mark 8:13-26; Matt. 16:5-12.

[§ 82:](#) NEAR CÆSAREA PHILIPPI JESUS TESTS THE FAITH OF THE TWELVE IN HIS MESSIAHSHIP

Mark 8:27-30; Matt. 16:13-20; Luke 9:18-21.

[§ 83:](#) JESUS DISTINCTLY FORETELLS THAT HE, THE MESSIAH, WILL BE REJECTED AND KILLED AND WILL RISE THE THIRD DAY

Mark 8:31-37; Matt. 16:21-26; Luke 9:22-25.

[§ 84:](#) THE COMING OF THE SON OF MAN IN THAT GENERATION

Mark 8:38-9:1; Matt. 16:27-28; Luke 9:26-27.

[§ 85:](#) THE TRANSFIGURATION OF JESUS ON A MOUNTAIN (PROBABLY HERMON) NEAR CÆSAREA PHILIPPI

Mark 9:2-8; Matt. 17:1-8; Luke 9:28-36.

[§ 86:](#) THE PUZZLE OF THE THREE DISCIPLES ABOUT THE RESURRECTION AND ABOUT ELIJAH ON THEIR WAY DOWN THE MOUNTAIN

Mark 9:9-13; Matt. 17:9-13; Luke 9:36.

[§ 87:](#) THE DEMONIAK BOY, WHOM THE DISCIPLES COULD NOT HEAL

Mark 9:14-29; Matt. 17:14-20; Luke 9:37-43.

[§ 88:](#) RETURNING PRIVATELY THROUGH GALILEE, HE AGAIN FORETELLS HIS DEATH AND RESURRECTION

Mark 9:30-32; Matt. 17:22-23; Luke 9:43-45.

[§ 89:](#) JESUS, THE MESSIAH, PAYS THE HALF-SHEKEL FOR THE TEMPLE

Matt. 17:24-27.

[§ 90:](#) THE TWELVE CONTEND AS TO WHO SHALL BE THE GREATEST UNDER THE MESSIAH'S REIGN. HIS SUBJECTS MUST BE CHILDLIKE

Mark 9:33-37; Matt. 18:1-5; Luke 9:46-48.

[§ 91:](#) THE MISTAKEN ZEAL OF THE APOSTLE JOHN REBUKED BY JESUS IN PERTINENT PARABLES

Mark 9:38-50; Matt. 18:6-14; Luke 9:49-50.

[§ 92:](#) RIGHT TREATMENT OF A BROTHER WHO HAS SINNED AGAINST ONE, AND DUTY OF PATIENTLY FORGIVING A BROTHER (PARABLE OF THE UNMERCIFUL SERVANT)

Matt. 18:15-35.

[§ 93:](#) THE MESSIAH'S FOLLOWERS MUST GIVE UP EVERYTHING FOR HIS SERVICE

Matt. 8:19-22; Luke 9:57-62.

[§ 94:](#) THE UNBELIEVING BROTHERS OF JESUS COUNSEL HIM TO EXHIBIT HIMSELF IN JUDEA, AND HE REJECTS THE ADVICE

John 7:2-9.

[§ 95:](#) HE GOES PRIVATELY TO JERUSALEM THROUGH SAMARIA

Luke 9:51-56; John 7:10.

PART IX: THE LATER JUDEAN MINISTRY

SECTIONS 96-111

[§ 96:](#) THE COMING OF JESUS TO THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES CREATES INTENSE EXCITEMENT CONCERNING THE MESSIAHSHIP

John 7:11-52.

[§ 97:](#) STORY OF AN ADULTEROUS WOMAN BROUGHT TO JESUS FOR JUDGMENT

John 7:53-8:11.

[§ 98:](#) AFTER THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES IN THE TEMPLE JESUS ANGERS THE PHARISEES BY CLAIMING TO BE THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD

John 8:12-20.

[§ 99:](#) THE PHARISEES ATTEMPT TO STONE JESUS WHEN HE EXPOSES THEIR SINFULNESS

John 8:21-59.

[§ 100:](#) JESUS HEALS A MAN BORN BLIND WHO OUTWITS THE PHARISEES. THE RULERS FORBID THE RECOGNITION OF JESUS AS THE MESSIAH. THE CONVERSION OF THE HEALED MAN

John 9:1-41.

[§ 101:](#) IN THE PARABLE (ALLEGORY) OF THE GOOD SHEPHERD JESUS DRAWS THE PICTURE OF THE HOSTILE PHARISEES AND INTIMATES THAT HE IS GOING TO DIE FOR HIS FLOCK AND COME TO LIFE AGAIN

John 10:1-21.

[§ 102:](#) THE MISSION OF THE SEVENTY. CHRIST'S JOY IN THEIR WORK ON THEIR RETURN

Luke 10:1-24.

[§ 103:](#) JESUS ANSWERS A LAWYER'S QUESTION AS TO ETERNAL LIFE, GIVING THE PARABLE OF THE GOOD SAMARITAN

Luke 10:25-37.

[§ 104](#): JESUS THE GUEST OF MARTHA AND MARY

Luke 10:38-42.

[§ 105](#): JESUS AGAIN GIVES A MODEL OF PRAYER (COMP. [§ 54](#)) AND ENCOURAGES HIS DISCIPLES TO PRAY. PARABLE OF THE IMPORTUNATE FRIEND

Luke 11:1-13.

[§ 106](#): BLASPHEMOUS ACCUSATION OF LEAGUE WITH BEELZEBUB

Luke 11:14-36.

[§ 107](#): WHILE BREAKFASTING WITH A PHARISEE, JESUS SEVERELY DENOUNCES THE PHARISEES AND LAWYERS AND EXCITES THEIR ENMITY

Luke 11:37-54.

[§ 108](#): HE SPEAKS TO HIS DISCIPLES AND A VAST THROG ABOUT HYPOCRISY, COVETOUSNESS (PARABLE OF THE RICH FOOL), WORLDLY ANXIETIES, WATCHFULNESS (PARABLE OF THE WAITING SERVANTS AND OF THE WISE STEWARD), AND HIS OWN APPROACHING PASSION

Luke 12.

[§ 109](#): ALL MUST REPENT OR PERISH. (TWO CURRENT TRAGEDIES); PARABLE OF THE BARREN FIG TREE

Luke 13:1-9.

[§ 110](#): JESUS HEALS A CRIPPLED WOMAN ON THE SABBATH AND DEFENDS HIMSELF AGAINST THE RULER OF THE SYNAGOGUE. (CF. [§§ 49-51](#) AND [114](#).) REPETITION OF THE PARABLES OF THE MUSTARD SEED AND OF THE LEAVEN

Luke 13:10-21.

[§ 111](#): AT THE FEAST OF DEDICATION JESUS WILL NOT YET OPENLY SAY THAT HE IS THE MESSIAH. THE JEWS TRY TO STONE HIM

John 10:22-39.

PART X: THE LATER PEREAN MINISTRY

SECTIONS 112-127

[§ 112](#): THE WITHDRAWAL FROM JERUSALEM TO BETHANY BEYOND JORDAN

John 10:40-42.

[§ 113](#): TEACHING IN PEREA, ON A JOURNEY TOWARD JERUSALEM, WARNED AGAINST HEROD ANTIPAS

Luke 13:22-35.

[§ 114](#): WHILE DINING (BREAKFASTING) WITH A CHIEF PHARISEE, HE AGAIN HEALS ON THE SABBATH AND DEFENDS HIMSELF (COMP. [§§ 49 TO 51](#) AND [110](#)) THREE PARABLES SUGGESTED BY THE OCCASION

Luke 14:1-24.

[§ 115](#): GREAT CROWDS FOLLOW HIM, AND HE WARNS THEM TO COUNT THE COST OF DISCIPLESHIP TO HIM (COMP. [§§ 70](#) AND [83](#))

Luke 14:25-35.

[§ 116](#): THE PHARISEES AND THE SCRIBES MURMUR AGAINST JESUS FOR RECEIVING SINNERS. HE DEFENDS HIMSELF BY THREE GREAT PARABLES (THE LOST SHEEP, THE LOST COIN, THE LOST SON)

Luke 15:1-32.

[§ 117](#): THREE PARABLES ON STEWARDSHIP (TO THE DISCIPLES, THE PARABLE OF THE UNJUST STEWARD; TO THE PHARISEES, THE PARABLE OF THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS; TO THE DISCIPLES, THE PARABLE OF THE UNPROFITABLE SERVANTS)

Luke 16:1-17:10.

[§ 118](#): JESUS RAISES LAZARUS FROM THE DEAD

John 11:1-44.

[§ 119](#): THE EFFECT OF THE RAISING OF LAZARUS (ON THE PEOPLE, ON THE SANHEDRIN, ON THE MOVEMENTS OF JESUS)

John 11:45-54.

[§ 120](#): JESUS STARTS ON THE LAST JOURNEY TO JERUSALEM BY WAY OF SAMARIA AND GALILEE

Luke 17:11-37.

[§ 121](#): TWO PARABLES ON PRAYER (THE IMPORTUNATE WIDOW, THE PHARISEE AND THE PUBLICAN)

Luke 18:1-14.

[§ 122](#): GOING FROM GALILEE THROUGH PEREA, HE TEACHES CONCERNING DIVORCE

Mark 10:1-12; Matt. 19:1-12.

[§ 123](#): CHRIST AND CHILDREN AND THE FAILURE OF THE DISCIPLES TO UNDERSTAND THE ATTITUDE OF JESUS

Mark 10:13-16; Matt. 19:13-15; Luke 18:15-17.

[§ 124](#): THE RICH YOUNG RULER, THE PERILS OF RICHES, AND AMAZEMENT OF THE DISCIPLES. THE REWARDS OF FORSAKING ALL TO FOLLOW THE MESSIAH WILL BE GREAT, BUT WILL BE SOVEREIGN (PARABLE OF THE LABORERS IN THE VINEYARD)

Mark 10:17-31; Matt. 19:16-20:16; Luke 18:18-30.

[§ 125](#): JESUS AGAIN FORETELLS TO THE DISCIPLES HIS DEATH AND RESURRECTION (COMP. [§§ 83, 85, 86, 88](#)), AND REBUKES THE SELFISH AMBITION OF JAMES AND JOHN

Mark 10:32-45; Matt. 20:17-28; Luke 18:31-34.

[§ 126](#): BLIND BARTIMEUS AND HIS COMPANION HEALED

Mark 10:46-52; Matt. 20:29-34; Luke 18:35-43.

[§ 127:](#) JESUS VISITS ZACCHÆUS, AND SPEAKS THE PARABLE OF THE POUNDS, AND SETS OUT FOR JERUSALEM
Luke 19:1-28.

PART XI: THE LAST PUBLIC MINISTRY IN JERUSALEM

SECTIONS 128-138

[§ 128a:](#) JESUS ARRIVES AT BETHANY NEAR JERUSALEM

John 11:55-12:1, 9-11.

[§ 128b:](#) HIS TRIUMPHAL ENTRY INTO JERUSALEM AS THE MESSIAH

Mark 11:1-11; Matt. 21:1-11, 14-17; Luke 19:29-44; John 12:12-19.

[§ 129:](#) THE BARREN FIG TREE CURSED, AND THE SECOND CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE (COMP. [§ 31](#))

Mark 11:12-18; Matt. 21:18-19, 12-13; Luke 19:45-48.

[§ 130:](#) THE DESIRE OF SOME GREEKS TO SEE JESUS PUZZLES THE DISCIPLES AND LEADS JESUS IN AGITATION OF SOUL TO INTERPRET LIFE AND DEATH AS SACRIFICE AND TO SHOW HOW BY BEING "LIFTED UP" HE WILL DRAW ALL MEN TO HIM

John 12:20-50.

[§ 131:](#) THE BARREN FIG TREE FOUND TO HAVE WITHERED

Mark 11:19-25; Matt. 21:19-22; Luke 21:37-38.

[§ 132:](#) THE RULERS (SANHEDRIN) FORMALLY CHALLENGE THE AUTHORITY OF JESUS AS AN ACCREDITED TEACHER (RABBI)

Mark 11:27-12:12; Matt. 21:23-22:14; Luke 20:1-19.

[§ 133:](#) THE PHARISEES AND THE HERODIANS TRY TO ENSNARE JESUS ABOUT PAYING TRIBUTE TO CÆSAR

Mark 12:13-17; Matt. 22:15-22; Luke 20:20-26.

[§ 134:](#) THE SADDUCEES ASK HIM A PUZZLING QUESTION ABOUT THE RESURRECTION

Mark 12:18-27; Matt. 22:23-33; Luke 20:27-40.

[§ 135:](#) THE PHARISEES REJOICE OVER THE ROUT OF THE SADDUCEES AND A PHARISAIC LAWYER ASKS JESUS A LEGAL QUESTION

Mark 12:28-34; Matt. 22:34-40.

[§ 136:](#) JESUS, TO THE JOY OF THE MULTITUDE, SILENCES HIS ENEMIES BY THE PERTINENT QUESTION OF THE MESSIAH'S DESCENT FROM DAVID AND LORDSHIP OVER DAVID

Mark 12:35-37; Matt. 22:41-46; Luke 20:41-44.

[§ 137:](#) IN HIS LAST PUBLIC DISCOURSE, JESUS SOLEMNLY DENOUNCES THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES (COMP. [§ 107](#))

Mark 12:38-40; Matt. 23:1-39; Luke 20:45-47.

[§ 138:](#) JESUS CLOSELY OBSERVES THE CONTRIBUTIONS IN THE TEMPLE, AND COMMENDS THE POOR WIDOW'S GIFT

Mark 12:41-44; Luke 21:1-4.

PART XII: IN THE SHADOW WITH JESUS

SECTIONS 139-152

[§ 139:](#) SITTING ON THE MOUNT OF OLIVES, JESUS SPEAKS TO HIS DISCIPLES ABOUT THE DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM, AND HIS OWN SECOND COMING IN APOCALYPTIC LANGUAGE. THE GREAT ESCHATOLOGICAL DISCOURSE

Mark 13:1-37; Matt. 24, 25; Luke 21:5-36.

[§ 140:](#) JESUS PREDICTS HIS CRUCIFIXION TWO DAYS HENCE (JEWISH FRIDAY)

Mark 14:1-2; Matt. 26:1-5; Luke 22:1-2.

[§ 141:](#) AT THE FEAST IN THE HOUSE OF SIMON THE LEPER MARY OF BETHANY ANOINTS JESUS FOR HIS BURIAL

Mark 14:3-9; Matt. 26:6-13; John 12:2-8.

[§ 142:](#) JUDAS, STUNG BY THE REBUKE OF JESUS AT THE FEAST, BARGAINS WITH THE RULERS TO BETRAY JESUS

Mark 14:10-11; Matt. 26:14-16; Luke 22:3-6.

[§ 143:](#) THE PREPARATION FOR THE PASCHAL MEAL AT THE HOME OF A FRIEND (POSSIBLY THAT OF JOHN MARK'S FATHER AND MOTHER)

Mark 14:12-16; Matt. 26:17-19; Luke 22:7-13.

[§ 144:](#) JESUS PARTAKES OF THE PASCHAL MEAL WITH THE TWELVE APOSTLES AND REBUKES THEIR JEALOUSY

Mark 14:17; Matt. 26:20; Luke 22:14-16, 24-30.

[§ 145:](#) DURING THE PASCHAL MEAL, JESUS WASHES THE FEET OF HIS DISCIPLES

John 13:1-20.

[§ 146:](#) AT THE PASCHAL MEAL JESUS POINTS OUT JUDAS AS THE BETRAYER

Mark 14:18-21; Matt. 26:21-25; Luke 22:21-23; John 13:21-30.

[§ 147:](#) AFTER THE DEPARTURE OF JUDAS JESUS WARNS THE DISCIPLES (PETER IN PARTICULAR) AGAINST DESERTION, WHILE ALL PROTEST THEIR LOYALTY

Mark 14:27-31; Matt. 26:31-35; Luke 22:31-38; John 13:31-38.

[§ 148:](#) JESUS INSTITUTES THE MEMORIAL OF EATING BREAD AND DRINKING WINE

Mark 14:22-25; Matt. 26:26-29; Luke 22:17-20; 1 Cor. 11:23-26.

- [§ 149:](#) THE FAREWELL DISCOURSE TO HIS DISCIPLES IN THE UPPER ROOM
John 14.
- [§ 150:](#) THE DISCOURSE ON THE WAY TO GETHSEMANE
John 15, 16.
- [§ 151:](#) CHRIST'S INTERCESSORY PRAYER
John 17.
- [§ 152:](#) GOING FORTH TO GETHSEMANE, JESUS SUFFERS LONG IN AGONY
Mark 14:26, 32-42; Matt. 26:30, 36-46; Luke 22:39-46; John 18:1.

PART XIII: THE ARREST, TRIAL, CRUCIFIXION, AND BURIAL OF JESUS SECTIONS 153-168

- [§ 153:](#) JESUS IS BETRAYED, ARRESTED, AND FORSAKEN
Mark 14:43-52; Matt. 26:47-56; Luke 22:47-53; John 18:2-12.
- [§ 154:](#) JESUS FIRST EXAMINED BY ANNAS, THE EX-HIGH PRIEST
John 18:12-14, 19-23.
- [§ 155:](#) JESUS HURRIEDLY TRIED AND CONDEMNED BY CAIAPHAS AND THE SANHEDRIN, WHO MOCK AND BUFFET HIM
Mark 14:53, 55-65; Matt. 26:57, 59-68; Luke 22:54, 63-65; John 18:24.
- [§ 156:](#) PETER THRICE DENIES HIS LORD
Mark 14:54, 66-72; Matt. 26:58, 69-75; Luke 22:54-62; John 18:15-18, 25-27.
- [§ 157:](#) AFTER DAWN, JESUS IS FORMALLY CONDEMNED BY THE SANHEDRIN
Mark 15:1; Matt. 27:1; Luke 22:66-71.
- [§ 158:](#) REMORSE AND SUICIDE OF JUDAS THE BETRAYER
Matt. 27:3-10; Acts 1:18-19.
- [§ 159:](#) JESUS BEFORE PILATE THE FIRST TIME
Mark 15:1-5; Matt. 27:2, 11-14; Luke 23:1-5; John 18:28-38.
- [§ 160:](#) JESUS BEFORE HEROD ANTIPAS THE TETRARCH
Luke 23:6-12.
- [§ 161:](#) JESUS THE SECOND TIME BEFORE PILATE
Mark 15:6-15; Matt. 27:15-26; Luke 23:13-25; John 18:39-19:16.
- [§ 162:](#) THE ROMAN SOLDIERS MOCK JESUS
Mark 15:16-19; Matt. 27:27-30.
- [§ 163:](#) JESUS ON THE WAY TO THE CROSS (VIA DOLOROSA) ON GOLGOTHA
Mark 15:20-23; Matt. 27:31-34; Luke 23:26-33; John 19:16-17.
- [§ 164:](#) THE FIRST THREE HOURS ON THE CROSS
Mark 15:24-32; Matt. 27:35-44; Luke 23:33-43; John 19:18-27.
- [§ 165:](#) THE THREE HOURS OF DARKNESS FROM NOON TO THREE P.M.
Mark 15:33-37; Matt. 27:45-50; Luke 23:44-46; John 19:28-30.
- [§ 166:](#) THE PHENOMENA ACCOMPANYING THE DEATH OF CHRIST
Mark 15:38-41; Matt. 27:51-56; Luke 23:45, 47-49.
- [§ 167:](#) THE BURIAL OF THE BODY OF JESUS IN THE TOMB OF JOSEPH OF ARIMATHEA AFTER PROOF OF HIS DEATH
Mark 15:42-46; Matt. 27:57-60; Luke 23:50-54; John 19:31-42.
- [§ 168:](#) THE WATCH OF THE WOMEN BY THE TOMB OF JESUS
Mark 15:47; Matt. 27:61-66; Luke 23:55-56.

PART XIV: THE RESURRECTION, APPEARANCES, AND ASCENSION OF CHRIST SECTIONS 169-184

- [§ 169:](#) THE VISIT OF THE WOMEN TO THE TOMB OF JESUS
Mark 16:1; Matt. 28:1.
- [§ 170:](#) THE EARTHQUAKE, THE ROLLING AWAY OF THE STONE BY AN ANGEL, AND THE FRIGHT OF THE ROMAN WATCHERS
Matt. 28:2-4.
- [§ 171:](#) THE VISIT OF THE WOMEN TO THE TOMB OF JESUS ABOUT SUNRISE SUNDAY MORNING AND THE MESSAGE OF THE ANGELS ABOUT THE EMPTY TOMB
Mark 16:2-8; Matt. 28:5-8; Luke 24:1-8; John 20:1.
- [§ 172:](#) MARY MAGDALENE AND THE OTHER WOMEN REPORT TO THE APOSTLES, AND PETER AND JOHN VISIT THE EMPTY TOMB
Luke 24:9-12; John 20:2-10.
- [§ 173:](#) THE APPEARANCE OF JESUS TO MARY MAGDALENE AND THE MESSAGE TO THE DISCIPLES
Mark 16:9-11; John 20:11-18.
- [§ 174:](#) THE APPEARANCE OF JESUS TO THE OTHER WOMEN
Matt. 28:9-10.
- [§ 175:](#) SOME OF THE GUARD REPORT TO THE JEWISH RULERS
Matt. 28:11-15.
- [§ 176:](#) THE APPEARANCE TO TWO DISCIPLES (CLEOPAS AND ANOTHER) ON THE WAY TO EMMAUS
Mark 16:12-13; Luke 24:13-32.
- [§ 177:](#) THE REPORT OF THE TWO DISCIPLES AND THE NEWS OF THE APPEARANCE TO SIMON PETER

- Luke 24:33-35; 1 Cor. 15:5.
- [§ 178](#): THE APPEARANCE TO THE ASTONISHED DISCIPLES (THOMAS ABSENT) WITH A COMMISSION AND THEIR FAILURE TO CONVINCING THOMAS
Mark 16:14; Luke 24:36-43; John 20:19-25.
- [§ 179](#): THE APPEARANCE TO THE DISCIPLES THE NEXT SUNDAY NIGHT AND THE CONVINCING OF THOMAS
John 20:26-31; 1 Cor. 15:5.
- [§ 180](#): THE APPEARANCE TO SEVEN DISCIPLES BESIDE THE SEA OF GALILEE. THE MIRACULOUS DRAUGHT OF FISHES
John 21.
- [§ 181](#): THE APPEARANCE TO ABOUT FIVE HUNDRED ON AN APPOINTED MOUNTAIN IN GALILEE, AND A COMMISSION GIVEN
Mark 16:15-18; Matt. 28:16-20; 1 Cor. 15:6.
- [§ 182](#): THE APPEARANCE TO JAMES THE BROTHER OF JESUS
1 Cor. 15:7.
- [§ 183](#): THE APPEARANCE TO THE DISCIPLES WITH ANOTHER COMMISSION
Luke 24:44-49; Acts 1:3-8.
- [§ 184](#): THE LAST APPEARANCE AND THE ASCENSION
Mark 16:19-20; Luke 24:50-53; Acts 1:9-12.

TABLE FOR FINDING ANY PASSAGE IN THE HARMONY

MARK

Chap.	Verse	Section	Chap.	Verse	Section
1	1	20	9	33-37	90
1	2-6	21	9	38-50	91
1	7-8	23	10	1-12	122
1	9-11	24	10	13-16	123
1	12-13	25	10	17-31	124
1	14	34	10	32-45	125
1	14-15	37	10	46-52	126
1	16-20	41	11	1-11	128b
1	21-28	42	11	12-18	129
1	29-34	43	11	19-25	131
1	35-39	44	11	27-12:12	132
1	40-45	45	12	13-17	133
2	1-12	46	12	18-27	134
2	13-17	47	12	28-34	135
2	18-22	48	12	35-37	136
2	23-28	50	12	38-40	137
3	1-6	51	12	41-44	138
3	7-12	52	13	1-37	139
3	13-19	53	14	1-2	140
3	19-30	61	14	3-9	141
3	31-35	63	14	10-11	142
4	1-2	64	14	12-16	143
4	3-25	64	14	17	144
4	26-29	64	14	18-21	146
4	30-32	64	14	27-31	147
4	33-34	64	14	22-25	148
4	35-41	65	14	26, 32-42	152
5	1-20	66	14	43-52	153
5	21-43	67	14	53, 55-65	155
6	1-6	69	14	54, 66-72	156

6 6-13	70	15 1	157
6 14-29	71	15 1-5	159
6 30-44	72	15 6-15	161
6 45-46	73	15 16-19	162
6 47-52	74	15 20-23	163
6 53-56	75	15 24-32	164
7 1-23	77	15 33-37	165
7 24-30	78	15 38-41	166
7 31-8:9	79	15 42-46	167
8 10-12	80	15 47	168
8 13-26	81	16 1	169
8 27-30	82	16 2-8	171
8 31-37	83	16 9-11	173
8 38-9:1	84	16 12-13	176
9 2-8	85	16 14	178
9 9-13	86	16 15-18	181
9 14-29	87	16 19-20	184
9 30-32	88		

MATTHEW

Chap.	Verse	Section	Chap.	Verse	Section
1	1-17	3	15	1-20	77
1	18-25	9	15	21-28	78
2	1-12	14	15	29-38	79
2	13-18	15	15	39-16:4	80
2	19-23	16	16	5-12	81
3	1-6	21	16	13-20	82
3	7-10	22	16	21-26	83
3	11-12	23	16	27-28	84
3	13-17	24	17	1-8	85
4	1-11	25	17	9-13	86
4	12	34	17	14-20	87
4	13-16	40	17	22-23	88
4	17	37	17	24-27	89
4	18-22	41	18	1-5	90
4	23-25	44	18	6-14	91
5	1-2	54	18	15-35	92
5	3-12	54	19	1-12	122
5	13-20	54	19	13-15	123
5	21-48	54	19	16-20:16	124
6	1-18	54	20	17-28	125
6	19-34	54	20	29-34	126
7	1-6	54	21	1-11, 14-17	128b
7	7-12	54	21	18-19, 12-13	129
7	13-8:1	54	21	19-22	131
8	2-4	45	21	23-22:14	132
8	5-13	55	22	15-22	133
8	14-17	43	22	23-33	134
8	18, 23-27	65	22	34-40	135
8	19-22	93	22	41-46	136
8	28-34	66	23	1-39	137
9	1-8	46	24, 25	...	139
9	9-13	47	26	1-5	140
9	14-17	48	26	6-13	141
9	18-26	67	26	14-16	142
9	27-34	68	26	17-19	143
9	35-11:1	70	26	20	144
11	2-19	57	26	21-25	146
11	20-30	58	26	31-35	147
12	1-8	50	26	26-29	148

12	9-14	51	26	30, 36-46	152
12	15-21	52	26	47-56	153
12	22-37	61	26	57, 59-68	155
12	38-45	62	26	58, 69-75	156
12	46-50	63	27	1	157
13	1-3	64	27	3-10	158
13	3-23	64	27	2, 11-14	159
13	24-30	64	27	15-26	161
13	31-32	64	27	27-30	162
13	33-35	64	27	31-34	163
13	36-43	64	27	35-44	164
13	44	64	27	45-50	165
13	45-46	64	27	51-56	166
13	47-50	64	27	57-60	167
13	51-53	64	27	61-66	168
13	54-58	69	28	1	169
14	1-12	71	28	2-4	170
14	13-21	72	28	5-8	171
14	22-23	73	28	9-10	174
14	24-33	74	28	11-15	175
14	34-36	75	28	16-20	181

LUKE

Chap.	Verse	Section	Chap.	Verse	Section
1	1-4	1	9	49-50	91
1	5-25	4	9	51-56	95
1	26-38	5	9	57-62	93
1	39-45	6	10	1-24	102
1	46-56	7	10	25-37	103
1	57-80	8	10	38-42	104
2	1-7	10	11	1-13	105
2	8-20	11	11	14-36	106
2	21	12	11	37-54	107
2	22-38	13	12	1-59	108
2	39	16	13	1-9	109
2	40	17	13	10-21	110
2	41-50	18	13	22-35	113
2	51-52	19	14	1-24	114
3	1-2	20	14	25-35	115
3	3-6	21	15	1-32	116
3	7-14	22	16	1-17:10	117
3	15-18	23	17	11-37	120
3	19-20	34	18	1-14	121
3	21-23	24	18	15-17	123
3	23-38	3	18	18-30	124
4	1-13	25	18	31-34	125
4	14	34	18	35-43	126
4	14-15	37	19	1-28	127
4	16-31	39	19	29-44	128b
4	31-37	42	19	45-48	129
4	38-41	43	21	37-38	131
4	42-44	44	20	1-19	132
5	1-11	41	20	20-26	133
5	12-16	45	20	27-40	134
5	17-26	46	20	41-44	136
5	27-32	47	20	45-47	137
5	33-39	48	21	1-4	138
6	1-5	50	21	5-36	139
6	6-11	51	22	1-2	140

612-16	53	22	3-6	142
617-19	54	22	7-13	143
620-26	54	22	14-16, 24-30	144
627-36	54	22	21-23	146
637-42	54	22	31-38	147
643-49	54	22	17-20	148
7 1-10	55	22	39-46	152
711-17	56	22	47-53	153
718-35	57	22	54, 63-65	155
736-50	59	22	54-62	156
8 1-3	60	22	66-71	157
8 4	64	23	1-5	159
8 5-18	64	23	6-12	160
819-21	63	23	13-25	161
822-25	65	23	26-33	163
826-39	66	23	33-43	164
840-56	67	23	44-46	165
9 1-6	70	23	45, 47-49	166
9 7-9	71	23	50-54	167
910-17	72	23	55-56	168
918-21	82	24	1-8	171
922-25	83	24	9-12	172
926-27	84	24	13-32	176
928-36	85	24	33-35	177
9 36	86	24	36-43	178
937-43	87	24	44-49	183
943-45	88	24	50-53	184
946-48	90			

JOHN

Chap.	Verse	Section	Chap.	Verse	Section
1	1-18	2	11	1-44	118
1	19-28	26	11	45-54	119
1	29-34	27	11	55-12:1, 9-11	128a
1	35-51	28	12	12-19	128b
2	1-11	29	12	20-50	130
2	12	30	12	2-8	141
2	13-22	31	13	1-20	145
2	23-3:21	32	13	21-30	146
3	22-36	33	13	31-38	147
4	1-4	34	14	...	149
4	5-42	35	15, 16	...	150
4	43-45	36	17	...	151
4	46-54	38	18	1	152
5	1-47	49	18	2-12	153
6	1-13	72	18	12-14, 19-23	154
6	14-15	73	18	24	155
6	16-21	74	18	15-18, 25-27	156
6	22-71	76	18	28-38	159
7	1	77	18	39-19:16	161
7	2-9	94	19	16-17	163
7	10	95	19	18-27	164
7	11-52	96	19	28-30	165
7	53-8:11	97	19	31-42	167
8	12-20	98	20	1	171
8	21-59	99	20	2-10	172
9	1-41	100	20	11-18	173

10	1-21	101	20	19-25	178
10	22-39	111	20	26-31	179
10	40-42	112	21	...	180

NOTE.—The verses that are omitted in the Canterbury Revision do not appear in this Harmony. They are Mark 7:16; 9:44, 46; 11:26; 15:28; Matthew 17:21; 18:11; 23:14; Luke 17:36; 23:17; John 5:4.

In addition to the Gospels use is made of

- Acts 1:3-8 in [§ 183](#).
- Acts 1:9-12 in [§ 184](#).
- Acts 1:18-19 in [§ 158](#).
- 1 Cor. 11:23-26 in [§ 148](#).
- 1 Cor. 15:5 in [§ 177](#).
- 1 Cor. 15:5 in [§ 179](#).
- 1 Cor. 15:6 in [§ 181](#).
- 1 Cor. 15:7 in [§ 182](#).

A HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS FOR STUDENTS OF THE LIFE OF CHRIST

PART I THE SOURCES OF THE GOSPELS

§ 1. IN THE DEDICATION LUKE EXPLAINS HIS METHOD OF RESEARCH^a

Luke 1:1-4

1 Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to draw up a narrative concerning those matters which have been ¹fulfilled among us, ²even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses and ministers of the word, ³it seemed good to me also, having traced the course of all things accurately from the first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus;^b ⁴that thou mightest know the certainty concerning the ²things ³wherein thou wast instructed.

¹ Or, *fully establish*.

² Gr. *words*.

³ Or, *which thou wast taught by word of mouth*.

^a Luke is the first critic of the life of Christ whose criticism has been preserved to us. Others had drawn up narratives of certain portions of Christ's work. Others still had been eyewitnesses of the ministry of Jesus and gave Luke their oral testimony. Luke sifted it all with care and produced an orderly and reasonably full narrative of the earthly ministry of Jesus. We cannot reproduce all the sources that Luke had at his command, but it is clear that he followed in the main our Gospel of Mark, as any one can see for himself by comparing the two Gospels in this Harmony. Both Matthew and Luke made use of Mark. But they had other sources also. See [note 2](#) on Synoptic Criticism at the close of the Harmony. See also Chapter IV, "Luke's Method of Research" in my *Luke the Historian in the Light of Research*.

^b Luke alone follows the method of ancient historians in dedicating his Gospel, as also the Acts (1:1), to a patron who probably met the expense of publication. So Luke as a Gentile Christian writes an historical introduction in literary (*Koine*) Greek after the fashion of Thucydides and Plutarch. Mark had no formal introduction. Matthew's introduction is genealogical because he is writing for Jewish readers to prove that Jesus is the Messiah of Jewish hope. John, writing last of all, has a theological introduction to meet the Gnostic and philosophical misconceptions concerning the Person of Christ. Thus he pictures Christ as the Eternal Logos, with God in his pre-incarnate state, who became flesh and thus revealed the Father to men.

PART II THE PRE-EXISTENT STATE OF CHRIST AND HIS INCARNATION

§ 2. IN HIS INTRODUCTION JOHN PICTURES CHRIST AS THE WORD (LOGOS)

John 1:1-18

1 In the beginning was the Word,^a and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 The same was in the beginning with God. 3 All things were made ¹by him; and without him ²was not anything made that hath been made. 4 In him was life; and the life was the light of men. 5 And the light shineth in the darkness; and the darkness ³apprehended it not. 6 There came a man, sent from God, whose name was John. 7 The same came for witness, that he might bear witness of the light, that all might believe through him. 8 He was not the light, but *came* that he might bear witness of the light. 9 ⁴There was the true light, *even the light* which lighteth ⁵every man, coming into the world. 10 He was in the world, and the world was made ¹by him, and the world knew him not. 11 He came unto ⁶his own, and they that were his own received him not. 12 But as many as received him, to them gave he the right to become children of God, *even* to them that believe on his name: 13 which were ⁷born, not of ⁸blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. 14 And the Word^a became flesh, and ⁹dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, glory as of ¹⁰the only begotten from the Father), full of grace and truth. 15 John beareth witness of him, and crieth, saying, ¹¹This was he of whom I said, He that cometh after me is become before me: for he was ¹²before me. 16 For of his fulness we all received, and grace for grace. 17 For the law was given ¹by Moses; grace and truth came ¹by Jesus Christ. 18 No man hath seen God at any time; ¹³the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared *him*.

¹ Or, *through*.

² Or, *was not anything made. That which hath been made was life in him; and the life &c.*

³ Or, *overcame*.

⁴ Or, *The true light, which lighteth every man, was coming*.

⁵ Or, *every man as he cometh*.

⁶ Gr. *his own things*.

⁷ Or, *begotten*.

⁸ Gr. *bloods*.

⁹ Gr. *tabernacled*.

¹⁰ Or, *an only begotten from a father*.

¹¹ Some ancient authorities read *this was he that said*.

¹² Gr. *first in regard of me*.

¹³ Many very ancient authorities read *God only begotten*.

^a The Fourth Gospel makes no further use of the term Logos (Word) for Christ. No other Gospel employs the term, but in 1 John 1:1 we find "the Word of life" in this sense and in Rev. 19:14 we have: "and his name is called the Word of God." The Greek word has a double sense (reason and speech) and John seems to have both ideas in mind (1:18). Christ is the Idea of God and the Expression of God. The Stoics followed Plato in the philosophical use of Logos. Philo took it up and

made it familiar to Jewish readers who were already used to the Hebrew *Mémra* (Word) in a personal sense. But John carried the term further than any of his predecessors and placed it on a par with Messiah, Son of God, Son of Man, and other phrases that portray aspects of the Person of Christ. John writes his Gospel to prove the deity of Jesus ([John 20:31](#)) against Gnostics (Cerinthian) who denied it, as he wrote his First Epistle (1 John 1:1-4) to prove the humanity of Jesus against Docetic Gnostics who disclaimed it. See [note 3](#) at end of Harmony.

PART III THE TWO GENEALOGIES IN MATTHEW AND LUKE

§ 3. APPARENTLY JOSEPH'S GENEALOGY IN MATTHEW AND MARY'S IN LUKE^a

<p>Matt. 1:1-17. (<i>Cf.</i> 1 Chron. 1:34; 2:1-25; 3:1-19.)</p> <p>1 ¹The book of the ²generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.</p> <p>2 Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judah and his brethren; 3 and Judah begat Perez and Zerah of Tamar; and Perez begat Hezron; and Hezron begat ³Ram; 4 and ³Ram begat Amminadab; and Amminadab begat Nahshon; and Nahshon begat Salmon; 5 and Salmon begat Boaz of Rahab; and Boaz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse; 6 and Jesse begat David the king.</p> <p>And David begat Solomon of her <i>that had been the wife</i> of Uriah; 7 and Solomon begat Rehoboam; and Rehoboam begat Abijah; and Abijah begat ⁴Asa; 8 and ⁴Asa begat Jehoshaphat; and Jehoshaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Uzziah; 9 and Uzziah begat Jotham; and Jotham begat Ahaz; and Ahaz begat Hezekiah; 10 and Hezekiah begat Manasseh; and Manasseh begat ⁵Amon; and ⁵Amon begat Josiah; 11 and Josiah begat Jechoniah and his brethren, at the time of the ⁶carrying away to Bablyon.</p> <p>12 And after the ⁶carrying away to Bablyon, Jechoniah begat ⁷Shealtiel; and ⁷Shealtiel begat Zerubbabel; 13 and Zerubbabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor; 14 and Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; 15 and Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob; 16 and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born^b Jesus, who is called Christ.</p> <p>17 So all the generations from</p>	<p>Luke 3:23-38. (<i>Cf.</i> 1 Chron. 1:1-4, 24-28; 2:1-15; 3:17; Ruth 4:18-22.)</p> <p>Being the son (as was supposed) of Joseph, the <i>son</i> of Heli, ²⁴ the <i>son</i> of Matthat, the <i>son</i> of Levi, the <i>son</i> of Melchi, the <i>son</i> of Jannai, the <i>son</i> of Joseph, ²⁵ the <i>son</i> of Mattathias, the <i>son</i> of Amos, the <i>son</i> of Nahum, the <i>son</i> of Esli, the <i>son</i> of Naggai, ²⁶ the <i>son</i> of Maath, the <i>son</i> of Mattathias, the <i>son</i> of Semein, the <i>son</i> of Josech, the <i>son</i> of Joda, ²⁷ the <i>son</i> of Joanan, the <i>son</i> of Rhesa, the <i>son</i> of Zerubbabel, the <i>son</i> of ⁷Shealtiel, the <i>son</i> of Neri, ²⁸ the <i>son</i> of Melchi, the <i>son</i> of Addi, the <i>son</i> of Cosam, the <i>son</i> of Elmadam, the <i>son</i> of Er, ²⁹ the <i>son</i> of Jesus, the <i>son</i> of Eliezer, the <i>son</i> of Jorim, the <i>son</i> of Matthat, the <i>son</i> of Levi, ³⁰ the <i>son</i> of Symeon, the <i>son</i> of Judas, the <i>son</i> of Joseph, the <i>son</i> of Jonam, the <i>son</i> of Eliakim, ³¹ the <i>son</i> of Melea, the <i>son</i> of Menna, the <i>son</i> of Mattatha, the <i>son</i> of Nathan, the <i>son</i> of David, ³² the <i>son</i> of Jesse, the <i>son</i> of Obed, the <i>son</i> of Boaz, the <i>son</i> of ⁸Salmon, the <i>son</i> of Nahshon, ³³ the <i>son</i> of Amminadab, ⁹the <i>son</i> of ¹⁰Arni, the <i>son</i> of Hezron, the <i>son</i> of Perez, the <i>son</i> of Judah, ³⁴ the <i>son</i> of Jacob, the <i>son</i> of Isaac, the <i>son</i> of Abraham, the <i>son</i> of Terah, the <i>son</i> of Nahor, ³⁵ the <i>son</i> of Serug, the <i>son</i> of Reu, the <i>son</i> of Peleg, the <i>son</i> of Eber, the <i>son</i> of Shelah, ³⁶ the <i>son</i> of Cainan, the <i>son</i> of Arphaxad, the <i>son</i> of Shem, the <i>son</i> of Noah, the <i>son</i> of Lamech, ³⁷ the <i>son</i> of Methuselah, the <i>son</i> of Enoch, the <i>son</i> of Jared, the <i>son</i> of Mahalaleel, the <i>son</i> of Cainan, ³⁸ the <i>son</i> of Enos, the <i>son</i> of Seth, the <i>son</i> of Adam, the <i>son</i> of God.</p>
---	--

Abraham unto David are fourteen generations; and from David unto the ⁶carrying away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the ⁶carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen generations.^c

¹ Or, *The genealogy of Jesus Christ*.

² Or, *birth*: as in [ver. 18](#).

³ Gr. *Aram*.

⁴ Gr. *Asaph*.

⁵ Gr. *Amos*.

⁶ Or, *removal to Babylon*.

⁷ Gr. *Salathiel*.

⁸ Some ancient authorities write *Sala*.

⁹ Many ancient authorities insert *the son of Admin*; and one writes *Admin* for *Amminadab*.

¹⁰ Some ancient authorities write *Aram*.

^a This view is not accepted by all scholars, though it is found as early as Eusebius (*Hist. Eccl.* i, 7). See [note 5](#) at end of Harmony.

^b The Sinaitic Syriac, against all the early Greek manuscripts, reads in Matt. 1:16: "But Joseph, to whom the Virgin Mary was betrothed, begat Jesus." This ancient Ebionitic text is followed by Von Soden in his *Griechisches Neues Testament* and by Moffatt in his *New Translation of the New Testament*, but it is difficult to believe it genuine, for in [Matt. 1:18-22](#) the writer pictures Joseph as on the point of putting Mary away privily. The two reports in the Sinaitic Syriac flatly contradict each other. Those who accept it say that the writer of the Virgin Birth view in [1:18-20](#) overlooked 1:16 (certainly a serious oversight). It is easier to think that an Ebionitic scribe in copying altered 1:16, but passed by [1:18-20](#). The Ebionites denied the deity of Jesus. Both Matthew and Luke ([1:26-38](#)) give the Virgin Birth of Jesus, but they preserve separate traditions on the subject.

^c Observe that Matthew's three divisions of the genealogy represent three great periods in the history of Israel. See [note 5](#) at end of Harmony for discussion of the differences between the genealogies in Matthew and in Luke.

PART IV THE BIRTH AND CHILDHOOD OF THE BAPTIST AND OF JESUS

Probably B.C. 7 to A.D. 7

§§ 4-19. These sections include the annunciations, the birth, infancy, and childhood of both John and Jesus.

§ 4. THE ANNUNCIATION^a OF THE BIRTH OF THE BAPTIST TO ZACHARIAS

Jerusalem, in the Temple. Probably B.C. 7

Luke 1:5-25^b

5 There was in the days of Herod, king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abijah: and he had a wife of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth. 6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. 7 And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were *now* ¹well stricken in years.

8 Now it came to pass, while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course, 9 according to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to enter into the ²temple of the Lord and burn incense. 10 And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the hour of incense. 11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense. 12 And Zacharias was troubled when he saw *him*, and fear fell upon him. 13 But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: because thy supplication is heard, and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. 14 And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. 15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and he shall drink no wine nor ³strong drink [*see Num. 6:3; Judg. 13:4-6; 1 Sam. 1:11*]; and he shall be filled with the ⁴Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. 16 And many of the children of Israel shall he turn unto the Lord their God. 17 And he shall ⁵go before his face in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children [*see Mal. 3:1; 4:5-6*], and the disobedient *to walk* in the wisdom of the just; to make ready for the Lord a people prepared *for him*. 18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife ⁶well stricken in years. 19 And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God [*see Dan. 8:16; 9:21*]; and I was sent to speak unto thee, and to bring thee these good tidings. 20 And behold, thou shalt be silent and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall come to pass, because thou believedst not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season. 21 And the people were waiting for Zacharias, and they marvelled ⁷while he tarried in the ²temple. 22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the ²temple: and he continued making signs unto them, and remained dumb. 23 And it came to pass, when the days of his ministration were fulfilled, he departed unto his house.

24 And after these days Elisabeth his wife conceived; and she hid herself five months, saying, 25 Thus hath the Lord done unto me in the days wherein he looked upon *me*, to take away my reproach among men.

¹ Gr. *advanced in their days*.

² Or, *sanctuary*.

³ Gr. *sikera*.

⁴ Or, *Holy Spirit*: and so throughout all the Gospels.

⁵ Some ancient authorities read *come nigh before his face*.

⁶ Gr. *advanced in her days*.

⁷ Or, *at his tarrying*.

^a There are three annunciations: (1) to Zacharias § 4, (2) to Mary § 5, (3) to Joseph § 9. Luke gives the first two and Matthew the third. The Angel Gabriel is named by Luke (1:19, 26), but Matthew simply has "an angel of the Lord" (1:20).

^b It is certain that Luke tells the infancy stories from the standpoint of Mary while Matthew writes from the standpoint of Joseph. Matthew gives the public account while Luke tells the private story from Mary herself (Ramsay, *Was Christ Born at Bethlehem?* p. 79). Luke could have seen Mary, if still alive, or could have obtained it from one of Mary's circle either orally or in manuscript form. Some scholars even suggest "Gospel of Mary" and even, "Gospel of the Baptist" as a written source for Luke in 1:5-2:52. Sanday (*The Life of Christ in Recent Research*, p. 166) says: "These two chapters—whatever the date at which they were first committed to writing—are essentially the most archaic thing in the whole New Testament." Certainly Luke reveals the use of Aramaic or Hebrew sources by the sudden changes in his style from 1:1-4. Luke, if familiar with the current account as seen in Matthew, apparently felt that he owed it to Mary to record her story of her great experience.

§ 5. THE ANNUNCIATION TO THE VIRGIN MARY OF THE BIRTH OF JESUS

Nazareth. Probably B.C. 7 or 6

Luke 1:26-38

26 Now in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, 27 to a virgin betrothed to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary. 28 And he came in unto her, and said, Hail, thou that art ¹highly favoured, the Lord *is* with thee.² 29 But she was greatly troubled at the saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this might be. 30 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for

thou hast found ³favour with God. 31 And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS [*see Isa. 7:14*]. 32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Most High: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David [*see 2 Sam. 7:12-17*]: 33 and he shall reign over the house of Jacob ⁴for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. 34 And Mary said unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? 35 And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Most High shall overshadow thee: wherefore also ⁵that which ⁶is to be born ⁷shall be called holy [*see Ex. 13:12*], the Son of God. 36 And behold, Elisabeth thy kinswoman, she also hath conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her that ⁸was called barren. 37 For no word from God shall be void of power [*see Gen. 18:14*]. 38 And Mary said, Behold, the ⁹handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

¹ Or, *endued with grace*.

² Many ancient authorities add *blessed art thou among women*. (See [ver. 42](#).)

³ Or, *grace*.

⁴ Gr. *unto the ages*.

⁵ Or, *the holy thing which is to be born shall be called the son of God*.

⁶ Or, *is begotten*.

⁷ Some ancient authorities insert *of thee*.

⁸ Or, *is*.

⁹ Gr. *bondmaid*.

§ 6. THE SONG^a OF ELISABETH TO MARY UPON HER VISIT

Hill Country of Judea

Luke 1:39-45

39 And Mary arose in these days and went into the hill country with haste, into a city of Judah; 40 and entered into the house of Zacharias and saluted Elisabeth. 41 And it came to pass, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost; 42 and she lifted up her voice with a loud cry, and said, Blessed *art* thou among women, and blessed *is* the fruit of thy womb. 43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come unto me? 44 For behold, when the voice of thy salutation came into mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. 45 And blessed *is* she that ¹believed; for there shall be a fulfilment of the things which have been spoken to her from the Lord.

¹ Or, *believed that there shall be*.

^a This hymn or psalm springs from the omen to Elisabeth.

§ 7. THE MAGNIFICAT OF MARY

Hill Country of Judea

Luke 1:46-56

46

And Mary said,

My soul doth magnify the Lord [*see 1 Sam. 2:1-10*],

- 47 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.
 48 For he hath looked upon the low estate of his ¹handmaiden:
 For behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed [*see 1 Sam 1:11*].
 49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things;
 And holy is his name [*see 1 Sam. 2:2*].
 50 And his mercy is unto generations and generations
 On them that fear him [*see Ps. 103:17*].
 51 He hath shewed strength with his arm;
 He hath scattered the proud ²in the imagination of their heart [*see 1 Sam. 2:4; Ps. 89:10*].
 52 He hath put down princes from *their* thrones,
 And hath exalted them of low degree [*see Job 5:11; 12:19*].
 53 The hungry he hath filled with good things;
 And the rich he hath sent empty away [*see Ps. 107:9*].
 54 He hath holpen Israel his servant,
 That he might remember mercy [*see Isa. 41:8-9*]
 55 (As he spake unto our fathers)
 Toward Abraham and his seed for ever [*see Gen. 17:7; Mic. 7:20*].
- 56 And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned unto her house.

¹ Gr. *bondmaiden*.

² Or, *by*.

§ 8. THE BIRTH AND CHILDHOOD OF THE BAPTIST, AND HIS DESERT LIFE

Hill Country of Judea. B.C. 7 or 6

Luke 1:57-80

- 57 Now Elisabeth's time was fulfilled that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son.
 58 And her neighbours and her kinsfolk heard that the Lord had magnified his mercy toward her;
 and they rejoiced with her. 59 And it came to pass on the eighth day, that they came to circumcise
 the child; and they would have called him Zacharias, after the name of his father. 60 And his
 mother answered and said, Not so; but he shall be called John. 61 And they said unto her, There is
 none of thy kindred that is called by this name. 62 And they made signs to his father, what he
 would have him called. 63 And he asked for a writing tablet, and wrote, saying, His name is John.
 And they marvelled all. 64 And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue *loosed*, and he
 spake, blessing God. 65 And fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings
 were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judea. 66 And all that heard them laid them
 up in their heart, saying, What then shall this child be? For the hand of the Lord was with him.
- 67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,
- 68 Blessed *be* the Lord, the God of Israel;
 For he hath visited and wrought redemption for his people [*see Ps. 72:18; 111:9*],
 69 And hath raised up a horn of salvation for us
 In the house of his servant David [*see 1 Sam. 2:10; Ps. 18:3*]
 70 (As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets which have been since the world began),
 71 Salvation from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us [*see Ps. 106:10*];
 72 To shew mercy towards our fathers,
 And to remember his holy covenant;
 73 The oath which he sware unto Abraham our father [*see Gen. 17:7; Lev. 26:42; Ps. 105:8;*
Mic. 7:20],
 74 To grant unto us that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies
 Should serve him without fear,
 75 In holiness and righteousness before him all our days.
 76 Yea and thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Most High:
 For thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to make ready his ways [*see Mal. 3:1*];
 77 To give knowledge of salvation unto his people
 In the remission of their sins,
 78 Because of the ¹tender mercy of our God,
²Whereby the dayspring from on high ³shall visit us [*see Mal. 4:2*],

79 To shine upon them that sit in darkness and the shadow of death;
To guide our feet into the way of peace [*see Isa. 8:22; 9:2*].

80 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.^a

¹ Or, *heart of mercy*.

² Or, *Wherein*.

³ Many ancient authorities read *hath visited us*.

^a Dwell on this summary statement as to John's retired life in the wild regions of Judea, whence he will come forth thirty years later.

§ 9. THE ANNUNCIATION TO JOSEPH OF THE BIRTH OF JESUS

Nazareth

Matt. 1:18-25

18 Now the ¹birth ²of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before they came together she was found with child of the ³Holy Ghost. 19 And Joseph her husband, being a righteous man, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privily. 20 But when he thought on these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is ⁴conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. 21 And she shall bring forth a son; and thou shalt call his name JESUS; for it is he that shall save his people from their sins. 22 Now all this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying,

23 Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son [*see Isa. 7:14*],
And they shall call his name ⁵Immanuel;

which is, being interpreted, God with us. 24 And Joseph arose from his sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took unto him his wife; 25 and knew her not till she had brought forth a son: and he called his name JESUS.

¹ Or, *generation*: as in ver. 1 in § 3.

² Some ancient authorities read *of the Christ*.

³ Or, *Holy Spirit*.

⁴ Gr. *begotten*.

⁵ Gr. *Emmanuel*.

§ 10. THE BIRTH OF JESUS

Bethlehem. Probably B.C. 6 or 5

Luke 2:1-7

1 Now it came to pass in those days, there went out a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that all the ¹world should be enrolled. 2 This was the first enrolment made when Quirinius was governor of Syria. 3 And all went to enrol themselves, every one to his own city.^a 4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, to the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, because he was of the house and family of David; 5 to enrol himself with Mary, who

was betrothed to him, being great with child. 6 And it came to pass, while they were there, the days were fulfilled that she should be delivered. 7 And she brought forth her firstborn son; and she wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.

¹ Gr. *inhabited earth*.

^a Observe how the ruler of the civilized world is unconsciously bringing it about that the Messiah, the son of David, shall be born at Bethlehem, though his mother's home was Nazareth. All the previous history of Rome and of Israel gathers about this manger. As to Quirinius, and as to the probable time of the Saviour's birth, see [note 6](#) at the end of the book. The vindication of Luke's historical statements in these verses is one of the triumphs of modern research, as is shown in that note.

§ 11. THE PRAISE OF THE ANGELS AND THE HOMAGE OF THE SHEPHERDS

Near Bethlehem

Luke 2:8-20

8 And there were shepherds in the same country abiding in the field, and keeping ¹watch by night over their flock. 9 And an angel of the Lord stood by them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. 10 And the angel said unto them, Be not afraid; for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which shall be to all the people: 11 for there is born to you this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is ²Christ the Lord. 12 And this *is* the sign unto you; Ye shall find a babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, and lying in a manger. 13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising^a God, and saying,

14 Glory to God in the highest,
And on earth ³peace among ⁴men in whom he is well pleased.

15 And it came to pass, when the angels went away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this ⁵thing that is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. 16 And they came with haste, and found both Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in the manger. 17 And when they saw it, they made known concerning the saying which was spoken to them about this child. 18 And all that heard it wondered at the things which were spoken unto them by the shepherds. 19 But Mary kept all these ⁶sayings, pondering them in her heart. 20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, even as it was spoken unto them.

¹ Or, *night-watches*.

² Or, *Anointed Lord*.

³ Many ancient authorities read *peace, good pleasure among men*.

⁴ Gr. *men of good pleasure*.

⁵ Or, *saying*.

⁶ Or, *things*.

^a The Gloria in Excelsis.

§ 12. THE CIRCUMCISION OF JESUS

Bethlehem

Luke 2:21

21 And when eight days were fulfilled for circumcising him [*see Gen. 17:12; Lev. 12:3*], his name was called JESUS, which was so called by the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

§ 13. THE PRESENTATION IN THE TEMPLE WITH THE HOMAGE OF SIMEON AND ANNA

Jerusalem

Luke 2:22-38

22 And when the days of their purification according to the law of Moses were fulfilled, they brought him up to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord 23 (as it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord) [*see Ex. 13:2, 12, 15; Lev. 12:1-8*], 24 and to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons. 25 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and this man was righteous and devout, looking for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Spirit was upon him. 26 And it had been revealed unto him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. 27 And he came in the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, that they might do concerning him after the custom of the law, 28 then he received him into his arms, and blessed God, and said,^a

29 Now lettest thou thy ¹servant depart, O ²Lord,
According to thy word, in peace;
30 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation [*see Isa. 52:10*],
31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all peoples;
32 A light for ³revelation to the Gentiles,
And the glory of thy people Israel [*see Isa. 42:6; 49:6*].

33 And his father and his mother were marvelling at the things which were spoken concerning him; 34 and Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this *child* is set for the falling and rising up of many in Israel; and for a sign which is spoken against; 35 yea and a sword shall pierce through thine own soul; that thoughts out of many hearts may be revealed. 36 And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher (she was ⁴of a great age, having lived with a husband seven years from her virginity, 37 and she had been a widow even for fourscore and four years), which departed not from the temple, worshipping with fastings and supplications night and day. 38 And coming up at that very hour she gave thanks unto God, and spake of him to all them that were looking for the redemption of Jerusalem.

¹ Gr. *bondservant*.

² Gr. *Master*.

³ Or, *the unveiling of the Gentiles*.

⁴ Gr. *advanced in many days*.

^a The four New Testament psalms, given by Luke, breathe the atmosphere of Old Testament piety, quite in contrast to the formalism of the Pharisees and yet thoroughly Jewish in background and Christian in sentiment. But it is primitive Christian feeling. [Section 7](#) gives the Magnificat of Mary in response to the song of Elisabeth in [§ 6](#). In [§ 8](#) we have the *Benedictus* of Zacharias and in [§ 13](#) The *Nunc Dimittis* of Simeon.

§ 14. MAGI VISIT THE NEW-BORN KING OF THE JEWS

Jerusalem and Bethlehem

Matt. 2:1-12

1 Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, ¹wise

men from the east [*see Num. 24:17*] came to Jerusalem, saying, ²Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we saw his star in the east, and are come to worship him. ³And when Herod the king heard it, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. ⁴And gathering together all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he inquired of them where the Christ should be born. ⁵And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written ³by the prophet,

6 And thou Bethlehem, land of Judah,
Art in no wise least among the princes of Judah:
For out of thee shall come forth a governor [*see Mic. 5:1-2*],
Which shall be shepherd of my people Israel.

⁷Then Herod privily called the ¹wise men, and learned of them carefully ⁴what time the star appeared. ⁸And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search out carefully concerning the young child; and when ye have found *him*, bring me word, that I also may come and worship him. ⁹And they, having heard the king, went their way; and lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. ¹⁰And when they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. ¹¹And they came into the house and saw the young child with Mary his mother; and they fell down and worshipped him; and opening their treasures they offered unto him gifts, gold and frankincense and myrrh. ¹²And being warned *of God* in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

¹ Gr. *Magi*. Compare Esther 1:13; Dan. 2:12.

² Or, *Where is the King of the Jews that is born?*

³ Or, *through*.

⁴ Or, *the time of the star that appeared*.

§ 15. THE CHILD JESUS CARRIED TO EGYPT, AND THE CHILDREN AT BETHLEHEM SLAIN

Probably B.C. 5

Matt. 2:13-18

¹³ Now when they were departed, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I tell thee: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him. ¹⁴And he arose and took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt; ¹⁵and was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt did I call my son [*see Hos. 11:1*]. ¹⁶Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the ¹wise men, was exceeding wrath, and sent forth, and slew all the male children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the borders thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had carefully learned of the ¹wise men. ¹⁷Then was fulfilled that which was spoken ²by Jeremiah the prophet, saying [*see Jer. 31:15*],

18 A voice was heard in Ramah,
Weeping and great mourning,
Rachel weeping for her children;
And she would not be comforted, because they are not.

¹ Gr. *Magi*.

² Or, *through*.

§ 16. THE CHILD BROUGHT FROM EGYPT TO NAZARETH

Matt. 2:19-23

19 But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying, 20 Arise and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead that sought the young child's life. 21 And he arose and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. 22 But when he heard that Archelaus was reigning over Judea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither; and being warned *of God* in a dream, he withdrew into the parts of Galilee, 23 and came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken ¹by the prophets,^a that he should be called a Nazarene.

Luke 2:39

39 And when they had accomplished all things that were according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.

¹ Or, *through*.

^a Cf. Isa. 11:1 where the Messiah is called *Netzer*, a Branch, though Nazareth is not mentioned in the Old Testament.

§ 17. THE CHILDHOOD OF JESUS AT NAZARETH

Probably B.C. 4 to A.D. 7

Luke 2:40

40 And the child grew, and waxed strong, ¹filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon him.^a

¹ Gr. *becoming full of wisdom*.

^a This simple statement of Luke tells more in one sentence than all the apocryphal Gospels of the Infancy, with their silly legends about the miraculous prowess of the child Jesus.

§ 18. THE VISIT OF THE BOY JESUS TO JERUSALEM WHEN TWELVE YEARS OLD

Probably A.D. 7 or 8

Luke 2:41-50

41 And his parents went every year to Jerusalem at the feast of the passover [*see Ex. 23:14-17; Deut. 16:1-8*]. 42 And when he was twelve years old, they went up after the custom of the feast; 43 and when they had fulfilled the days, as they were returning, the boy Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and his parents knew it not; 44 but supposing him to be in the company, they went a day's journey; and they sought for him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance: 45 and when they found him not, they returned to Jerusalem, seeking for him. 46 And it came to pass, after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the ¹doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions: 47 and all that heard him were amazed at his understanding and his answers. 48 And when they saw him, they were astonished: and his mother said unto him, ²Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I sought thee sorrowing. 49 And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be ³in my Father's house? 50 And

they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

¹ Or, *teachers*.

² Gr. *Child*.

³ Or, *about my Father's business*.

§ 19. THE EIGHTEEN YEARS^a AT NAZARETH

Probably A.D. 7 to A.D. 26 (or 6 to 25)

Luke 2:51-52

51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth; and he was subject unto them: and his mother kept all *these* ¹sayings in her heart.

52 And Jesus advanced in wisdom and ²stature, and in ³favour with God and men [*see 1 Sam. 2:26*].

¹ Or, *things*.

² Or, *age*.

³ Or, *grace*.

^a After the return to Nazareth, we know nothing of Jesus' life at that place beyond the general statements of Luke 2:52, with the knowledge and dispositions indicated in the narrative of § 18 and the fact that he was a carpenter, until he comes forth to be baptized by John, his forerunner. The social and political conditions of this period in Galilee are described by Edersheim, D. Smith, and other writers on the Life of Jesus, and briefly stated in Broadus's Commentary on Matthew, p. 30 f. Dwell on the general statement of Luke 2:52. Other passages throw light on the life in Nazareth as to habits of worship ([Luke 4:16](#)), the family group of brothers and sisters ([Mark 6:3 = Matt. 13:55 f.](#)), work as carpenter (*ibid.*). A helpful book on this obscure period is Ramsay's *The Education of Christ*.

PART V THE BEGINNING OF THE BAPTIST'S MINISTRY

Probably six months and in A.D. 25. In the Wilderness of Judea and beside the Jordan, §§ 20-23

§ 20. THE TIME OF THE BEGINNING

Mark 1:1

¹ The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, ¹the Son God.

Luke 3:1-2

Now in the fifteenth ^ayear of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of the region of Ituræa and Trachonitis, and Lysanias^b tetrarch of Abilene, ² in the highpriesthood of Annas and Caiaphas, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.

¹ Some ancient authorities omit *the son of God*.

^a See [note 6](#) at end of Harmony.

^b See [note 6](#). Luke follows the custom of ancient historians in dating events by the names of the rulers. As the son of a priest John was probably thirty years old when he came forth.

§ 21. THE MESSAGE AND THE MESSENGER

Mark 1:2-6	Matt. 3:1-6	Luke 3:3-6
2 Even as it is written ¹ in Isaiah the prophet, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face [<i>see</i> <i>Mal. 3:1</i>], Who shall prepare thy way;	1 And in those days cometh John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea, saying, ^a 2 Repent ye; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. 3 For this is he that was spoken of ² by Isaiah the prophet, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make ye ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths straight.	3 And he came into all the region round about Jordan, preach- ing the baptism of repentance unto re- mission of sins; 4 as it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make ye ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths straight.
3 The voice of one crying in the wilderness [<i>see</i> <i>Isa. 40:3</i>], Make ye ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths straight;	4 Now John himself had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his food was locusts and wild honey. 5 Then went out unto him Jerusalem, and all the region round about Jordan; 6 and they were baptized of him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.	5 Every valley shall be filled, And every moun- tain and hill shall be brought low; And the crooked shall become straight, And the rough ways smooth;
4 John came, who baptized in the wilderness and preached the baptism of repentance unto a remission of sins. 5 And there went out unto him all the country of Judea, and all they of Jerusalem; and they were baptized of him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.	6 And John was clothed with camel's hair, and <i>had</i> a leathern girdle about his loins, and did eat locusts and wild honey.	6 And all flesh shall see the salvation of God [<i>see Isa.</i> <i>40:4-5</i>].

¹ Some ancient authorities read *in the prophets*.

² Or, *through*.

^a See [Mark 1:15](#) (= [Matt. 4:17](#)); [Matt. 10:7](#); Acts 2:38.

§ 22. A SPECIMEN^a OF JOHN'S PREACHING

Matt. 3:7-10

7 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said unto them, Ye offspring of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? 8 Bring forth therefore fruit worthy of ¹repentance: 9 and think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. 10 And even now is the axe laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

Luke 3:7-14

7 He said therefore to the multitudes that went out to be baptized of him, Ye offspring of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? 8 Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of ¹repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. 9 And even now is the axe also laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. 10 And the multitudes asked him, saying, What then must we do? 11 And he answered and said unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath food, let him do likewise. 12 And there came also ²publicans to be baptized, and they said unto him, ³Master, what must we do? 13 And he said unto them, Extort no more than that which is appointed you. 14 And ⁴soldiers also asked him, saying, And we, what must we do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither ⁵exact *anything* wrongfully; and be content with your wages.

¹ Or, *your repentance*.

² That is, *collectors or renters of Roman taxes*.

³ Or, *Teacher*.

⁴ Gr. *soldiers on service*.

⁵ Or, *accuse* any one.

^a Here we see Matthew and Luke preserving a non-Markan section, as so frequently hereafter, an example of the so-called Logia (Discourses).

§ 23. THE FORERUNNER'S PICTURE OF THE MESSIAH BEFORE SEEING HIM

Mark 1:7-8

7 And he preached, saying, There cometh after me he that is mightier than I, the latchet of whose shoes I am not ²worthy to stoop down and unloose. 8 I baptized you ¹with water; but he shall baptize you ¹with the ³Holy Ghost.

Matt. 3:11-12

11 I indeed baptize you ¹with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not ²worthy to bear: he shall baptize you ¹with the ³Holy Ghost and *with* fire: 12 whose fan is in his hand, and he will throughly cleanse his threshing-floor; and he will

Luke 3:15-18

15 And as the people were in expectation, and all men reasoned in their hearts concerning John, whether haply he were the Christ; 16 John answered, saying unto them all, I indeed baptize you with water; but there cometh he that is mightier than I, the latchet of whose

gather his wheat into the garner, but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire.

shoes I am not
²worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you
¹with the ³Holy Ghost and *with* fire: ¹⁷ whose fan is in his hand, throughly to cleanse his threshing-floor, and to gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire.
¹⁸ With many other exhortations therefore preached he ⁴good tidings unto the people.^a

¹ Or, *in*.

² Gr. *sufficient*.

³ Or, *Holy Spirit*.

⁴ Or, *the gospel*.

^a One can easily put together all that we are told of John the Baptist in [John 1:6-15](#) and in Sections [4](#), [6](#), [8](#), [20](#), [21](#), [22](#), [23](#), [24](#), [26](#), [27](#), [28](#), [33](#), [34](#), [49](#), [57](#), [71](#), [86](#), [132](#). See also [Acts 1:5](#), 22; 10:37; 13:24; 18:25; 19:1-7. For a full discussion of the Baptist see my *John the Loyal*. These months of John's ministry prepared the way for the Messiah.

PART VI THE BEGINNING OF CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY

THE YEAR OF OBSCURITY^a

Probably Part of A.D. 26 and 27

In all parts of the Holy Land (the first Perean Ministry, the first Galilean Ministry, the first Judean Ministry, the first Samaritan Ministry). §§ 24-36. This early ministry includes the baptism, the temptation, John's witness to Jesus, the first disciples, the first miracle and work in Galilee, the first work in Judea, the arrest of John, the work in Samaria, and the return to Galilee.

^a The precise duration of this early ministry cannot be determined. Our Lord's baptism must have been at least two months *before* the Passover, and may have been some weeks or months earlier. Then the highly successful ministry in Judea *after* the Passover must have lasted several months ([John 3:22](#); [4:1-3](#)). If the "yet four months" in [John 4:35](#) be understood to be not a common saying as to the usual interval between seedtime and harvest, but a statement that it was *then* just four months before harvest, that would make the Judean ministry extend eight months after the Passover. But this interpretation is upon the whole improbable, and we can only say that the opening ministry lasted several months. The time occupied makes very little difference for our understanding the events and discourses. All of the incidents during this period after the temptation are given in John's Gospel. But for the Fourth Gospel we should not know that Jesus did not plunge at once into the great Galilean Ministry.

§ 24. JESUS BAPTIZED BY JOHN IN THE JORDAN

Bethany beyond Jordan. Probably A.D. 26

Mark 1:9-11
9 And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John ⁴in the Jordan.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens rent asunder, and the Spirit as a dove descending upon him: 11 and a voice came out of the heavens, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased [see *Ps. 2:7; Isa. 42:1*].

Matt. 3:13-17
13 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to the Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.^a
14 But John would have hindered him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? 15 But Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer ¹*it* now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffereth him. 16 And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway from the water: and lo, the heavens were opened ²unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending as a dove, and coming upon him; 17 and lo, a voice out of the heavens, ³This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

Luke 3:21-23

21 Now it came to pass, when all the people were baptized, that, Jesus also having been baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened, 22 and the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily form, as a dove, upon him^b [see [John 1:32-34](#)], and a voice came out of heaven, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased.^c
23 And Jesus himself, when he began *to teach*, was about thirty years of age.

¹ Or, me.

² Some ancient authorities omit *unto him*.

³ Or, *This is my son; my beloved in whom I am well pleased*.

⁴ Gr. *into*.

^a The Gospel of the Hebrews (one of the apocryphal gospels) is quoted by Jerome (*adv. Pelag.* iii, 2) as having the following: "Behold, the Lord's mother and His brethren were saying to Him, John the Baptist baptizes unto the remission of sins; let us go and be baptized by him. But he said unto them, What sin have I done, that I should go and be baptized by him? unless perchance this very thing which I have said is an ignorance."

^b The Gospel of John does not describe the baptism of Jesus, but refers to the event in a way that shows knowledge of the Synoptic Gospels.

^c Codex Bezae (D) reads in Luke: "Thou art my beloved son, to-day have I begotten thee." The Gospel of the Ebionites has: "Thou art my beloved son, in thee I am well pleased, to-day I have begotten thee."

See [§ 85](#) for similar language at the Transfiguration.

§ 25. THE THREE TEMPTATIONS^a OF JESUS

The Wilderness of Judea. Probably A.D. 26

Mark 1:12-13 Matt. 4:1-11 Luke 4:1-13
12 And straightway 1 Then was Jesus led 1 And Jesus, full of

the Spirit driveth him up of the Spirit into
forth into the wilderness to be
wilderness. 13 And he tempted of the devil.
was in the wilderness 2 And when he had
forty days tempted of Satan; and he
was with the wild beasts;

3 And the tempter
came and said unto
him, If thou art the
Son of God,
command that these
stones become ¹bread.
4 But he answered and
said, It is written [*see*
Deut. 8:3], Man shall
not live by bread
alone, but by every
word that proceedeth
out of the mouth
of God. 5 Then the
devil taketh him into
the holy city; and
he set him on the
²pinnacle of the
temple, 6 and saith
unto him, If thou art
the Son of God, cast
thyself down: for it is
written [*see Ps.*
91:11-12],

He shall give his
angels charge
concerning thee:
And on their hands
they shall bear
thee up,
Lest haply thou
dash thy foot
against a stone.

7 Jesus said unto him,
Again it is written
[*see Deut. 6:16*], Thou
shalt not tempt the
Lord thy God. 8 Again,
the devil taketh him
unto an exceeding
high mountain, and
sheweth him all the
kingdoms of the
world, and the glory
of them; 9 and he said
unto him, All these
things will I give
thee, if thou wilt fall
down and worship
me. 10 Then saith Jesus
unto him, Get thee
hence, Satan: for it is
written [*see Deut.*
6:13], Thou shalt
worship the Lord thy
God, and him only
shalt thou serve.

and the
angels ministered
unto him.

11 Then the devil
leaveth him; and behold
angels came and
ministered unto him.

the Holy Spirit,
returned from the
Jordan, and was led
³by the Spirit ²in the
wilderness during forty
days, being tempted
of the devil [*see Heb.*
4:15]. And he did eat
nothing in those days:
and when they were
completed, he
hungered. 3 And the
devil said unto him, If
thou art the Son of
God, command this
stone that it become
⁴bread. 4 And Jesus
answered unto him,
It is written [*see Deut.*
8:3], Man shall not
live by bread alone.
5 And he led him up,
and shewed him all
the kingdoms of ⁵the
world in a moment
of time. 6 And the
devil said unto him,
To thee will I give
all this authority, and
the glory of them:
for it hath been
delivered unto me; and
to whomsoever I will
I give it. 7 If thou
therefore wilt worship
before me, it shall
all be thine. 8 And
Jesus answered and
said unto him, It is
written [*see Deut.*
6:13], Thou shalt wor-
ship the Lord thy God,
and him only shalt
thou serve. 9 And he
led him to Jerusalem,
and set him on the
²pinnacle of the
temple, and said unto
him, If thou art the Son
of God, cast thyself
down from hence:
10 for it is written [*see*
Ps. 91:11-12],
He shall give his
angels charge
concerning thee,
to guard thee:
11 And on their hands
they shall bear
thee up,
Lest haply thou
dash thy foot
against a stone.
12 And Jesus answering
said unto him, It is
said [*Deut. 6:16*],
Thou shalt not tempt
the Lord thy God.
13 And when the devil
had completed every
temptation, he
departed from him ⁶for
a season.

¹ Gr. *loaves*.

² Gr. *wing*.

³ Or, *in*.

⁴ Or, *a loaf*.

⁵ Gr. *the inhabited earth*.

⁶ Or, *until*.

^a Mark gives only a summary account while the Logia (the oldest known record) tells the temptations in detail. This early document reveals the Messianic consciousness of Jesus as distinctly as it appears in the Gospel of John. The record of the baptism in § 24 and of the temptation in § 25 goes back to the two oldest strata of the Gospel sources (Mark or the Memoirs of Peter and the Logia of Matthew) and shows that Jesus enters upon his Messianic work knowing that he had his Father's approval and the power of the Holy Spirit upon him.

§ 26. THE TESTIMONY OF THE BAPTIST TO THE COMMITTEE OF THE SANHEDRIN

At Bethany beyond Jordan

John 1:19-28

19 And this is the witness of John, when the Jews sent unto him from Jerusalem priests and Levites to ask him, Who art thou? 20 And he confessed, and denied not; and he confessed, I am not the Christ. 21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elijah? And he saith, I am not. Art thou the prophet? And he answered, No. 22 They said therefore unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself? 23 He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said Isaiah the prophet [*see Isa. 40:3*]. 24 ¹And they had been sent from the Pharisees.^a 25 And they asked him, and said unto him, Why then baptizest thou, if thou art not the Christ, neither Elijah, neither the prophet? 26 John answered them, saying, I baptize ²with water: in the midst of you standeth one whom ye know not, ²⁷ *even* he that cometh after me, the latchet of whose shoe I am not worthy to unloose. 28 These things were done in ³Bethany beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

¹ Or, *And certain had been sent from among the Pharisees*.

² Or, *in*.

³ Many ancient authorities read *Bethabarah*, some *Betharabah*.

^a In 1:19 the priests and Levites are Sadducees. The idea seems to be that the Pharisees had the Sadducees sent on this embassy (*cf.* § 22). Later Jesus will say that John was Elijah that was to come; some will even take Jesus to be Elijah.

§ 27. JOHN'S IDENTIFICATION OF JESUS AS THE MESSIAH

At Bethany beyond the Jordan

John 1:29-34

29 On the morrow he seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold, the Lamb of God, which ¹ taketh away the sin of the world [*see Isa. 53:7*!] 30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is become before me: for he was ² before me. 31 And I knew him not; but that he should be made manifest to Israel, for this cause came I baptizing ³ with water. 32 And John bare witness, saying, I have beheld the Spirit descending as a dove out of heaven; and it abode upon him. 33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize ³ with water, he said unto me, Upon whomsoever thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and abiding upon him, the same is he that baptizeth ³ with the Holy Spirit. 34 And I have seen, and have borne witness that this is the son of

God.^a

¹ Or, *beareth the sin*.

² Gr. *first in regard of me*.

³ Or, *in*.

^a Put together the Baptist's testimonies to Jesus in sections [21](#), [22](#), [23](#), [24](#), [26](#), [27](#), [28](#), [33](#), [57](#). Add [John 1:6-15](#). Note also the four testimonies of Jesus to John, sections [49](#), [57](#), [86](#), [132](#). Observe the four successive days here in [John 1:19](#), [29](#), [35](#), [43](#), and the third day from the last in [John 2:1](#), making a week that is covered in detail (*cf.* the Passion Week at the close). We have other glimpses of special days in the ministry, as the Busy Day of the blasphemous accusation and the parables ([Matt. 12 and 13](#)). In [John 1:39](#) the very hour is preserved, probably Roman time (ten in the morning), as John writes long after the destruction of Jerusalem and outside of Palestine and uses the Roman reckoning (midnight to midnight) in [John 20:19](#). But see [note 11](#) at end of Harmony for Ramsay's objections to this view.

§ 28. JESUS MAKES HIS FIRST^a DISCIPLES

At Bethany beyond the Jordan

John 1:35-51

35 Again on the morrow John was standing, and two of his disciples; 36 and he looked upon Jesus as he walked, and saith, Behold, the Lamb of God [*see Isa. 53:7*!] 37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus. 38 And Jesus turned, and beheld them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? And they said unto him, Rabbi (which is to say, being interpreted, ¹Master), where abidest thou? 39 He saith unto them, Come, and ye shall see. They came therefore and saw where he abode; and they abode with him that day: it was about the tenth hour. 40 One of the two that heard John *speak*, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. 41 He findeth first his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messiah (which is, being interpreted, ²Christ). 42 He brought him unto Jesus. Jesus looked upon him, and said, thou art Simon the son of ³John: thou shalt be called Cephas (which is by interpretation, ⁴Peter).

43 On the morrow he was minded to go forth into Galilee, and he findeth Philip: and Jesus saith unto him, Follow me. 44 Now Philip was from Bethsaida, of the city of Andrew and Peter. 45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. 46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see. 47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold, an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile! 48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee. 49 Nathanael answered him, Rabbi, thou art the son of God; thou art King of Israel^b [*see 2 Sam. 7:14; Ps. 2:7*]. 50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee underneath the fig tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these. 51 And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye shall see the heaven opened, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man^c [*see Gen. 28:12*].

¹ Or, *Teacher*.

² That is, *Anointed*.

³ Gr. *Joanes*: called in [Matt. 16:17](#), [Jonah](#).

⁴ That is, *Rock* or *Stone*.

^a Notice here a series of First Things; first testimony of John, first disciples, first miracle, first residence at Capernaum, first passover during his ministry, first extended discourse.

^b Notice that these first disciples at once believed that Jesus was the Messiah (ver. 41, 45, 49). Compare the confession of Jesus ([§ 35](#)) to the Woman at Jacob's well and the confessions of Peter in [Matt. 14:33](#); [John 6:69](#); [Matt. 16:16](#) ([§§ 74, 76, 82](#)).

^c *Cf.* the close of the temptation in the wilderness and the experience in the Garden of Gethsemane.

§ 29. JESUS WORKS HIS FIRST MIRACLE

At Cana in Galilee

John 2:1-11

1 And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: 2 and Jesus also was bidden, and his disciples, to the marriage. 3 And when the wine failed, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine. 4 And Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come. 5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it. 6 Now there were six waterpots of stone set there after the Jews' manner of purifying, containing two or three firkins apiece. 7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them up to the brim. 8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the ¹ruler of the feast. And they bare it. 9 And when the ruler of the feast tasted the water ²now become wine, and knew not whence it was (but the servants which had drawn the water knew), the ruler of the feast calleth the bridegroom, 10 and saith unto him, Every man setteth on first the good wine; and when *men* have drunk freely, *then* that which is worse: thou hast kept the good wine until now. 11 This beginning of his signs did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

¹ Or, *steward*.

² Or, *that it had become*.

§ 30. JESUS MAKES A FIRST SOJOURN AT CAPERNAUM, ACCOMPANIED BY HIS KINDRED AND HIS EARLY DISCIPLES

(Later Capernaum will become his home)

John 2:12

12 After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and *his* brethren, and his disciples: and there they abode not many days.

§ 31. THE FIRST^a CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE AT THE PASSOVER

Jerusalem.^b Probably A.D. 27

John 2:13-22

13 And the passover^c of the Jews was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. 14 And he found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting: 15 and he made a scourge of cords, and cast all out of the temple, both the sheep and the oxen; and he poured out the changers' money, and overthrew their tables; 16 and to them that sold the doves he said, Take these things hence; make not my Father's house a house of merchandise. 17 His disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house shall eat me up [*see Ps. 69:9*]. 18 The Jews therefore answered and said unto him, What sign shewest thou unto us, seeing thou doest these things? 19 Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this ¹temple, and in three days I will raise it up. 20 The Jews therefore said, Forty and six years was this ¹temple in building, and wilt thou raise it up in three days? 21 But he spake of the ¹temple of his body. 22 When therefore he was raised from the dead, his disciples remembered that he spake this; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

¹ Or, *sanctuary*.

^a Many scholars consider this the same incident as that in the Synoptic Gospels and placed by them in Passion Week (§ 129) probably on Monday. It is urged that Jesus would not have repeated such an act and hence one must follow either the order of John or of the Synoptics. But there is no inherent difficulty in the repetition of such an act when one reflects on the natural indignation of Jesus at the desecration of the temple on his visit during his ministry and considers that Jesus may have wished to make one last protest at the close of his ministry. Certainty, of course, is not possible in such an argument one way or the other.

^b Observe the successive *scenes* of this early ministry—beside the Jordan, on the eastern side, at Cana of Galilee, at Capernaum, at Jerusalem, in Judea, in Samaria.

^c This is the first of the passovers in John's Gospel (2:13; 6:4; 13:1). There may have been another.

§ 32. THE INTERVIEW OF NICODEMUS WITH JESUS

At Jerusalem during the Passover

John 2:23 to 3:21

23 Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, during the feast, many believed on his name, beholding his signs which he did. 24 But Jesus did not trust himself unto them, 25 for that he knew all men, and because he needed not that any one should bear witness concerning ¹man; for he himself knew what was in man.

1 Now there was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus,^a a ruler of the Jews: 2 the same came unto him by night, and said to him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these signs that thou doest, except God be with him. 3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born ²anew, he cannot see the kingdom of God. 4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter a second time into his mother's womb, and be born? 5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. 7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born ²anew. 8 ³The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the voice thereof, but knowest not whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit. 9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be? 10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou the teacher of Israel, and understandest not these things? 11 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and bear witness of that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness. 12 If I told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you heavenly things? 13 And no man hath ascended into heaven, but he that descended out of heaven, *even* the Son of man, ⁴which is in heaven. 14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness [*see Num. 21:8-9*], even so must the Son of man be lifted up: 15 that whosoever ⁵believeth may in him have eternal life.

16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth on him should not perish, but have eternal life. 17 For God sent not the Son into the world to judge the world; but that the world should be saved through him. 18 He that believeth on him is not judged: he that believeth not has been judged already, because he hath not believed on the name of the only begotten Son of God. 19 And this is the judgment, that the light is come into the world, and men loved the darkness rather than the light; for their works were evil. 20 For every one that ⁶doeth ill hateth the light, and cometh not to the light, lest his works should be ⁷reproved. 21 But he that doeth the truth cometh to the light, that his works may be made manifest, ⁸that they have been wrought in God.

¹ Or, *a man; for ... the man*.

² Or, *from above*.

³ Or, *The Spirit breatheth*.

⁴ Many ancient authorities omit *which is in heaven*.

⁵ Or, *believeth in him may have*.

⁶ Or, *practiseth*.

⁷ Or, *convicted*.

⁸ Or, *because*.

^a Nicodemus appears as an exception to the statement of 2:24, as one whom Jesus did trust, and who amid all difficulties of temperament and station proved not unworthy of the trust.

§ 33. THE PARALLEL MINISTRY OF JESUS AND JOHN WITH JOHN'S LOYALTY TO JESUS^a

John 3:22-36

22 After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judea; and there he tarried with them, and baptized. 23 And John also was baptizing in Ænon near to Salim, because there ¹was much water there: and they came, and were baptized. 24 For John was not yet cast into prison. 25 There arose therefore a questioning on the part of John's disciples with a Jew about purifying. 26 And they came unto John, and said to him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou hast borne witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him. 27 John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it have been given him from heaven. 28 Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but, that I am sent before him. 29 He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled. 30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is of the earth, and of the earth he speaketh: ²he that cometh from heaven is above all. 32 What he hath seen and heard, of that he beareth witness; and no man receiveth his witness. 33 He that hath received his witness hath set his seal to *this*, that God is true. 34 For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for he giveth not the Spirit by measure. 35 The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand. 36 He that believeth on the Son hath eternal life; but he that ³obeyeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

¹ Gr. *were many waters*.

² Some ancient authorities read *he that cometh from heaven beareth witness of what he hath seen and heard*.

³ Or, *believeth not*.

^a Jesus gained his first disciples from John at Bethany beyond Jordan and many in Jerusalem. Now he is surpassing John. On John's loyalty to Jesus see my *John the Loyal*.

§ 34. CHRIST'S REASONS FOR LEAVING JUDEA

John 4:1-4

1 When therefore the Lord knew how that the Pharisees had heard that Jesus was making and baptizing more disciples than John 2 (although Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples), 3 he left Judea, and departed again into Galilee. 4 And he must needs pass through Samaria.

Luke 3:19, 20

19 But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias his brother's wife, and for all the evil things which Herod had done, 20 added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.^a

Mark 1:14	Matt. 4:12	Luke 4:14
14 Now after that John was delivered up, Jesus came into Galilee.	12 Now when he heard that John was delivered up, he withdrew into Galilee.	14 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee.

^a The place of John's imprisonment was Machærus, east of the Dead Sea. See Josephus. *War*, Ch. VII, vi. In *Antiquities*, Ch. XVIII, v, 2 Josephus gives the public and political reason for John's imprisonment because of Herod's fear of a revolution. He "feared lest the great influences John had over the people might put it into his power and inclination to raise a rebellion."

§ 35. JESUS IN SAMARIA.^a

At Jacob's Well and in Sychar

John 4:5-42

5 So he cometh to a city of Samaria, called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph: 6 and Jacob's ¹well was there [*see Josh. 24:32*]. Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat ²thus by the ¹well. It was about the sixth hour. 7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. 8 For his disciples were gone away into the city to buy food. 9 The Samaritan woman therefore saith unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a Samaritan woman? (³For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans.) 10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water. 11 The woman saith unto him, ⁴Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water? 12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his sons, and his cattle? 13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Every one that drinketh of this water shall thirst again: 14 but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall become in him a well of water springing up unto eternal life. 15 The woman saith unto him, ⁴Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come all the way hither to draw. 16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. 17 The woman answered and said unto him, I have no husband. Jesus saith unto her, Thou saidst well, I have no husband: 18 for thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: this hast thou said truly. 19 The woman saith unto him, ⁴Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. 20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. 21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when neither in this mountain, nor in Jerusalem, shall ye worship the Father. 22 Ye worship that which ye know not: we worship that which we know: for salvation is from the Jews. 23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and truth: ⁵for such doth the Father seek to be his worshippers. 24 ⁶God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship in spirit and truth. 25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messiah cometh (which is called Christ): when he is come, he will declare unto us all things. 26 Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am *he*.

27 And upon this came his disciples; and they marvelled that he was speaking with a woman; yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why speakest thou with her? 28 So the woman left her waterpot, and went away into the city, and saith to the men, 29 Come, see a man, which told me all things that *ever* I did: can this be the Christ? 30 They went out of the city, and were coming to him. 31 In the mean while the disciples prayed him, saying, Rabbi, eat. 32 But he said to them, I have meat to eat that ye know not. 33 The disciples therefore said one to another, Hath any man brought him *ught* to eat? 34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to accomplish his work. 35 Say not ye, There are yet four months, and *then* cometh the harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields, that they are ⁷white already unto harvest. 36 He that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal; that he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together. 37 For herein is the saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth. 38 I sent you to reap that whereon ye have not laboured: others have laboured, and ye are entered into their labour.

39 And from that city many of the Samaritans believed on him ^abecause of the word of the woman, who testified, He told me all things that *ever* I did. 40 So when the Samaritans came unto him, they besought him to abide with them: and he abode there two days. 41 And many more believed because of his word; 42 and they said to the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy speaking: for we have heard for ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Saviour of the world.^b

¹ Gr. *spring*: and so in ver. 14; but not in ver. 11, 12.

² Or, *as he was*.

³ Some ancient authorities omit *For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans*.

⁴ Or, *Lord*.

⁵ Or, *for such the Father also seeketh*.

⁶ Or, *God is spirit*.

⁷ Or, *white unto harvest. Already he that reapeth &c*.

^a Notice that John also had recently been preaching to Samaritans (§ 33) and compare hereafter Philip's work in the city of Samaria (Acts 8:5 ff.)

^b In this early ministry Jesus allowed himself to be regarded as the Messiah by his first disciples (§ 28), and personally declared that he was the Messiah to the woman at the well (§ 35) (John 4:26), which many other Samaritans also personally believed (John 4:39, 42). He never declared this to the Jewish rulers at Jerusalem till the very end (§ 155), doubtless because such an avowal would lead them to kill him, and so must not be made till his work in teaching the people and training his disciples should be completed. Compare what he says later to Peter in Matt. 16:17-20 (§ 82). At the baptism and the temptation of Jesus it was clear that Jesus knew that he was the Son of God, the Messiah, and was so regarded by the Baptist. Events in Judea and Galilee change the early policy of Jesus and lead to silence on his part in the use of the word Messiah, though many of the people know that he makes Messianic claims and the rulers in Jerusalem come to suspect him and to fear him. See my volume on *The Pharisees and Jesus*.

§ 36. THE ARRIVAL OF JESUS IN GALILEE

John 4:43-45

43 And after the two days he went forth from thence into Galilee. 44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country [see [Luke 4:24](#); [Mark 6:4](#); [Matt. 13:57](#)]. 45 So when he came into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did in Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.

PART VII THE GREAT GALILEAN MINISTRY

Probably^a Autumn of A.D. 27 to Spring of 29

(Apparently about a year and a half)

§§ 37-71. Great fulness of detail in Mark for this period and condensed report in Luke while Matthew is chiefly topical in this portion. Mark's Gospel plunges at once into the Great Galilean Ministry (cf. Peter's summary of Christ's life in Acts 10:36-43 to the household of Cornelius). The mass of material makes clear grouping difficult, but there is progress^b in the development of events.

1. The Rejection at Nazareth and the New Home in Capernaum, §§ 37-43.
2. The First Tour of Galilee with the Four Fishermen and the Call of Matthew (Levi) on the Return with the Growing Fame of Jesus, §§ 44-48.
3. The Sabbath Controversy in Jerusalem and in Galilee, §§ 49-51.
4. The Choice of the Twelve and the Sermon on the Mount, §§ 52-54.
5. The Spread of Christ's Influence and the Inquiry from John in Prison, §§ 55-59.
6. The Second Tour of Galilee (now with the Twelve) and the Intense Hostility of the Pharisees, §§ 60-63.
7. The First Great Group of Parables with the Visit to Gerasa (Kherasa) and to Nazareth (final one), §§ 64-69.
8. The Third Tour of Galilee (Following the Twelve) and the Effect on Herod Antipas, §§ 70-71.

^a We cannot confidently determine the length of the ministry in Galilee. We are not sure whether it *began* in summer or late autumn (see [footnote 7](#) in Explanatory Notes at end of Harmony). If the feast of [John 5:1](#) was a passover or there is an unknown passover, the Galilean ministry lasted at least sixteen months, for it *ended* when another passover was near ([John 6:4](#)). Otherwise we should not certainly know that it lasted more than some six or eight months. About the two subsequent periods of our Lord's ministry we shall find no room to question that each lasted six months; but *here* we have to admit much uncertainty as to the time. After all, a determination of the time employed would be a matter of very little importance to our study of this period. But the immense amount of material in this period argues for a length of over a year.

^b Throughout this great ministry in Galilee, and the periods that will follow after, the reader ought to trace carefully the *progress* of the history along several lines: (1) the Saviour's progressive self-manifestation; (2) the gradual training of the Twelve who are to carry on his teaching and work after his death; (3) the deepening and spreading hostility of the Jewish influential classes and official rulers. By constantly observing these parallel lines of progress, it will be seen that the history and teachings of our Lord exhibit a vital growth, moving on to an end by him foreseen ([Luke 12:50](#)), when the hostility of the rulers will culminate as he before the Sanhedrin avows himself to be the Messiah, and the Twelve will be almost prepared to succeed him.

§ 37. GENERAL ACCOUNT OF HIS TEACHING IN GALILEE

<p>Mark 1:14-15 14 [Now after that John was delivered up, Jesus came into Galilee], preaching the gospel of God, 15 and saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe in the gospel.</p>	<p>Matt. 4:17 17 From that time began Jesus to preach, and to say, Repent ye; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.</p>	<p>Luke 4:14-15 14 [And Jesus returned in the power of [see John 4:3, 43] the Spirit into Galilee]: and a fame went out concerning him through all the region round about. 15 And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.</p>
--	--	---

In sections 38-43 (the Rejection at Nazareth and the New Home in Capernaum) Jesus revisits Cana and Nazareth, recalls the four fishermen by the Sea of Galilee, and begins his ministry of teaching and healing in Capernaum.

§ 38. THE HEALING AT CANA OF THE SON OF A COURTIER OF CAPERNAUM

John 4:46-54

46 He came therefore again unto Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain ¹nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum. 47 When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought *him* that he would come down, and heal his son; for he was at the point of death. 48 Jesus therefore said unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will in no wise believe. 49 The ¹nobleman saith unto him. ²Sir, come down ere my child die. 50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. The man believed the word that Jesus spake unto him, and he went his way. 51 And as he was now going down, his ³servants met him, saying, that his son lived. 52 So he inquired of them the hour when he began to amend.

They said therefore unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him. 53 So the father knew that *it was* at that hour in which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself believed, and his whole house. 54 This is again the second sign that Jesus did, having come out of Judea into Galilee.

¹ Or, *king's officer*.

² Or, *Lord*.

³ Gr. *bondservants*.

§ 39. THE FIRST REJECTION AT NAZARETH

Luke 4:16-31

16 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and he entered, as his custom was, into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up to read. 17 And there was delivered unto him ¹the book of the prophet Isaiah. And he opened the ²book, and found the place where it was written,

- 18 The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,
³Because he anointed me to preach ⁴good tidings to the poor:
He hath sent me to proclaim release to the captives,
And recovering of sight to the blind,
To set at liberty them that are bruised,
19 To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord [*see Isa. 58:6; 61:1-2*].

20 And he closed the ²book, and gave it back to the attendant, and sat down: and the eyes of all in the synagogue were fastened on him. 21 And he began to say unto them, To-day hath this scripture been fulfilled in your ears. 22 And all bare him witness, and wondered at the words of grace which proceeded out of his mouth: and they said, Is not this Joseph's son? 23 And he said unto them, Doubtless ye will say unto me this parable, Physician, heal thyself [*see John 6:42; 7:15*]: whatsoever we have heard done at Capernaum, do also here in thine own country. 24 And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is acceptable in his own country [*see John 4:44*]. 25 But of a truth I say unto you, There were many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when there came a great famine over all the land [*see 1 Kings 17:1; 18:1-2*]; 26 and unto none of them was Elijah sent, but only to ⁵Zarephath, in the land of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow [*see 1 Kings 17:8-9*]. 27 And there were many lepers in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, but only Naaman the Syrian [*see 2 Kings 5:1-14*]. 28 And they were all filled with wrath in the synagogue, as they heard these things; 29 and they rose up, and cast him forth out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might throw him down headlong. 30 But he passing through the midst of them went his way. 31 And he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee.

¹ Or, *a roll*.

² Or, *roll*.

³ Or, *Wherefore*.

⁴ Or, *the gospel*.

⁵ Gr. *Sarepta*.

§ 40. THE NEW HOME IN CAPERNAUM

13 And leaving Nazareth,^a he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is by the sea, in the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali: 14 that it might be fulfilled which was spoken ¹by Isaiah the prophet [*see Isa. 8:23; 9:1-2*], saying,

- 15 The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali,
²Toward the sea, beyond Jordan,
 Galilee of the ³Gentiles,
 16 The people which sat in darkness
 Saw a great light,
 And to them which sat in the region and shadow of death,
 To them did light spring up.

¹ Or, *through*.

² Gr. *The way of the sea*.

³ Gr. *nations*: and so elsewhere.

^a Nazareth was never the Saviour's residence during his public ministry. After the wedding at Cana he lived a short time at *Capernaum*, and henceforth that city will be his abode, till he leaves Galilee six months before the crucifixion—most of the time, however, being actually spent in several journeys throughout Galilee, together with a trip to Jerusalem, and retirement to districts around Galilee.

§ 41. JESUS FINDS FOUR FISHERS OF MEN IN FOUR FISHERMEN^a

By the Sea of Galilee, near Capernaum

Mark 1:16-20
 16 And passing along by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew the brother of Simon casting a net in the sea: for they were fishers. 17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men. 18 And straightway they left the nets, and followed him. 19 And going on a little further, he saw James the *son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the boat mending the nets. 20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired servants, and went after him.

Matt. 4:18-22
 18 And walking by the sea of Galilee, he saw two brethren, Simon who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea; for they were fishers. 19 And he saith unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you fishers of men. 20 And they straightway left the nets, and followed him. 21 And going on from thence he saw other two brethren, ¹James the *son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them. 22 And they straightway left the boat and their father, and followed him.^a

Luke 5:1-11
 1 Now it came to pass, while the multitude pressed upon him and heard the word of God, that he was standing by the lake of Gennesaret; 2 and he saw two boats standing by the lake: but the fishermen had gone out of them, and were washing their nets. 3 And he entered into one of the boats, which was Simon's and asked him to put out a little from the land. And he sat down and taught the multitudes out of the boat. 4 And when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Put out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. 5 And Simon answered and said, Master, we toiled all night, and took nothing: but at thy word I will let down the nets. 6 And when they had this

done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes; and their nets were breaking; 7 and they beckoned unto their partners in the other boat, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the boats, so that they began to sink. 8 But Simon Peter, when he saw it, fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord. 9 For he was amazed, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken; 10 and so were also James and John, sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not; from henceforth thou shalt ²catch men. 11 And when they had brought their boats to land, they left all, and followed him.

¹ Or, *Jacob*: and so elsewhere.

² Gr. *take alive*.

^a Three of these two pairs of brothers (Andrew and Peter, John and James) had already become disciples of Jesus at Bethany beyond Jordan (James probably soon afterwards), but now they leave their prosperous fish business and follow Jesus continuously as many business men since have given up a lucrative business for the ministry. They, along with Philip and Nathaniel, had been with Jesus in the early ministry (the year of obscurity).

§ 42. THE EXCITEMENT IN THE SYNAGOGUE BECAUSE OF THE TEACHING OF JESUS AND THE HEALING OF A DEMONIAK ON THE SABBATH

Mark 1:21-28

21 And they go into Capernaum; and straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the synagogue and taught. 22 And they were astonished at his teaching: for he taught them as having authority, and not as the scribes. 23 And straightway there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit; 24 and he cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God. 25 And Jesus rebuked ¹him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. 26 And the unclean spirit, ²tearing him and crying with a loud voice, came out of him. 27 And they were

Luke 4:31-37

31 [And he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee.] And he was teaching them on the sabbath day: 32 and they were astonished at his teaching; for his word was with authority. 33 And in the synagogue there was a man, which had a spirit of an unclean ³devil; and he cried out with a loud voice, 34 ⁴Ah! what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art [*see Ps. 16:10*], the Holy One of God. 35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the ³devil had thrown him down in the midst, he came out of him, having done him

all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What is this? a new teaching! with authority he commandeth even the unclean spirits, and they obey him. 28 And the report of him went out straightway everywhere into all the region of Galilee round about.

no hurt. 36 And amazement came upon all, and they spake together, one with another, saying, What is ⁵this word? for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out. 37 And there went forth a rumour concerning him into every place of the region round about.

¹ Or, *it*.

² Or, *convulsing*.

³ Gr. *demon*.

⁴ Or, *Let alone*.

⁵ Or, *this word, that with authority ... come out?*

§ 43. HE HEALS PETER'S MOTHER-IN-LAW AND MANY OTHERS

At Capernaum, in Peter's Home

Mark 1:29-34
29 And straightway
³when they were come
out of the synagogue,
they came into the
house of Simon and
Andrew, with James
and John. 30 Now
Simon's wife's mother
lay sick of a fever;
and straightway they
tell him of her: 31 and
he came and took
her by the hand, and
raised her up; and
the fever left her,
and she ministered
unto them.
32 And at even, when
the sun did set,
they brought unto
him all that were
sick, and them that
were ¹possessed with
devils. 33 And all the
city was gathered
together at the door.
34 And he healed many
that were sick with
divers diseases, and
cast out many ⁴devils;
and he suffered not
the ⁴devils to speak,
because they knew
him.⁵

Matt. 8:14-17
14 And when Jesus
was come into
Peter's house, he saw
his wife's mother
lying sick of a fever.
15 And he touched her
hand, and the fever
left her; and she
arose, and ministered
unto him.
16 And when even was
come, they brought
unto him many
¹possessed with devils:
and he cast out the
spirits with a word,
and healed all that
were sick: 17 that it
might be fulfilled
which was spoken
²by Isaiah the prophet
[see Isa. 53:4], saying,
Himself took our
infirmities, and bare
our diseases.

Luke 4:38-41
38 And he rose up
from the synagogue,
and entered into the
house of Simon. And
Simon's wife's mother
was holden with a
great fever; and they
besought him for
her. 39 And he stood
over her, and rebuked
the fever; and it left
her: and immediately
she rose up and
ministered unto them.
40 And when the sun
was setting, all they
that had any sick
with divers diseases
brought them unto
him; and he laid his
hands on every one
of them, and healed
them. 41 And ⁴devils
also came out from
many, crying out, and
saying, Thou art the
Son of God. And
rebuking them, he
suffered them not to
speak, because they
knew that he was
the Christ.

¹ Or, *demoniacs*.

² Or, *through*.

³ Some ancient authorities read *when he was come out of the synagogue, he came &c.*

⁴ Gr. *demons*.

⁵ Many ancient authorities add *to be Christ*. See [Luke 4:41](#).

In sections 44-52 Jesus makes his first tour of Galilee with the Four Fishermen whom he has now called to follow him continuously. On the return to Capernaum Matthew is called and various miracles arouse the enthusiasm of the multitudes and the hostility of the Pharisees to Christ's teachings.

§ 44. THE FIRST TOUR OF GALILEE WITH THE FOUR FISHERMEN

Mark 1:35-39

35 And in the morning, a great while before day, he rose up and went out, and departed into a desert place, and there prayed. 36 And Simon and they that were with him followed after him; 37 and they found him, and say unto him, All are seeking thee. 38 And he saith unto them, Let us go elsewhere into the next towns, that I may preach there also; for to this end came I forth. 39 And he went into their synagogues throughout all Galilee, preaching and casting out ⁴devils.

Matt. 4:23-25

23 And ¹Jesus went about in all Galilee,^a teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the ²gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of disease and all manner of sickness among the the people. 24 And the report of him went forth into all Syria: and they brought unto him all that were sick, holden with divers diseases and torments, ³possessed with devils, and epileptic, and palsied; and he healed them. 25 And there followed him great multitudes from Galilee and Decapolis and

Luke 4:42-44

42 And when it was day, he came out and went into a desert place: and the multitudes sought after him, and came unto him, and would have stayed him, that he should not go from them. 43 But he said unto them, I must preach the ⁵good tidings of the kingdom of God to the other cities also: for therefore was I sent.

44 And he was preaching in the synagogues of ⁶Galilee.

¹ Some ancient authorities read *he*.

² Or, *good tidings*: and so elsewhere.

³ Or, *demoniacs*.

⁴ Gr. *demons*.

⁵ Or, *gospel*.

⁶ Very many ancient authorities read *Judea*.

^a This journey about all Galilee included a *great mass* of teaching and healing (dwell on Matt. 4:23-25), of which only a few specimens are recorded, and these apparently occurred at Capernaum, his headquarters. The journey given by Luke only (8:1-3) is probably distinct from this, and if so it would be a *second*, while that of [Luke 9:1-6](#) (= [Mark 6:6-13](#) = [Matt. 9:35-11:1](#)), which is quite certainly distinct, would then be a *third* journey about Galilee. The reader ought to expand his imagination and take in these extended labors.

§ 45. A LEPER HEALED, AND MUCH POPULAR EXCITEMENT

Mark 1:40-45	Matt. 8:2-4	Luke 5:12-16
40 And there cometh to him a leper, beseeching him, ¹ and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.	2 And behold, there came to him a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.	12 And it came to pass, while he was in one of the cities, behold, a man full of leprosy: and when he saw Jesus, he fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. 13 And he stretched forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou made clean. And straightway the leprosy departed from him.
41 And being moved with compassion, he stretched forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will; be thou made clean. 42 And straightway the leprosy departed from him, and he was made clean. 43 And he ² strictly charged him, and straightway sent him out, 44 and saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing the things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.	3 And he stretched forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou made clean. And straightway his leprosy was cleansed.	14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go thy way, and shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them [<i>see Lev. 13:49; 14:2-32</i>].
45 But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to spread abroad the ³ matter, insomuch that ⁴ Jesus could no more openly enter into ⁵ a city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him	4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.	15 But so much the more went abroad the report concerning him: and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed of their infirmities. 16 But he withdrew himself in the deserts, and

from every quarter.

prayed.

¹ Some ancient authorities omit *and kneeling down to him*.

² Or, *sternly*.

³ Gr. *word*.

⁴ Gr. *he*.

⁵ Or, *the city*.

§ 46. THRONGED IN CAPERNAUM, HE HEALS A PARALYTIC LOWERED THROUGH THE ROOF OF PETER'S HOUSE

Mark 2:1-12

Matt. 9:1-8

Luke 5:17-26

1 And when he entered again into Capernaum after some days, it was noised that he was ⁴in the house. 2 And many were gathered together, so that there was no longer room *for them*, no, not even about the door: and he spake the word unto them. 3 And they come, bringing unto him a man sick of the palsy, borne of four. 4 And when they could not ⁵come nigh unto him for the crowd, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed whereon the sick of the

palsy lay. 5 And Jesus seeing their faith saith unto the sick of the palsy, ¹Son, thy sins are forgiven. 6 But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, 7 Why doth this man thus speak? he blasphemeth: who can forgive sins but one, *even* God? 8 And straightway Jesus, perceiving in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, saith unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

1 And he entered into a boat, and crossed over, and came into his own city.

2 And behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed:

and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy, ¹Son, be of good cheer; thy sins are forgiven. 3 And behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus ²knowing their thoughts said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?

17 And it came to pass on one of those days, that he was teaching; and there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every village of Galilee and Judea and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was with him ⁶to heal. 18 And behold, men bring on a bed a man that was palsied: and they sought to bring him in, and to lay him before him. 19 And not finding by what *way* they might bring him in because of the multitude, they went up to the housetop, and let him down through the tiles with his couch into the midst before Jesus.

20 And seeing their faith, he said, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee. 21 And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God alone?

22 But Jesus perceiving their reasonings, answered and said unto them, ⁷What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether

9 Whether is easier, to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins are forgiven; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk?
 10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath ³power on earth to forgive sins (he saith to the sick of the palsy),^a 11 I say unto thee, Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thy house.

12 And he arose, and straightway took up the bed, and went forth before them all; insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

5 For whether is easier, to say, Thy sins are forgiven; or to say, Arise, and walk? 6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath ³power on earth to forgive sins (then saith he to the sick of the palsy), Arise, and take up thy bed, and go unto thy

house. 7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitudes saw it, they were afraid, and glorified God, which had given such ³power unto men.

is easier, to say, Thy sins are forgiven thee; or to say, Arise and walk?

24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath ³power on earth to forgive sins (he said unto him that was palsied), I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go unto thy house. 25 And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his house, glorifying God. 26 And amazement took hold on all, and they glorified God; and they were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to-day.

¹ Gr. *Child*.

² Many ancient authorities read *seeing*.

³ Or, *authority*.

⁴ Or, *at home*.

⁵ Many ancient authorities read *bring him unto him*.

⁶ Gr. *that he should heal*. Many ancient authorities read *that he should heal them*.

⁷ Or, *Why*.

^a Note the parenthetic explanation of the writers in the middle of the saying of Jesus. It is proof that each of the Gospels had the same written source here or rather, as we know otherwise, that Matthew and Luke had Mark before them.

§ 47. THE CALL OF MATTHEW (LEVI) AND HIS RECEPTION IN HONOR OF JESUS

Capernaum

Mark 2:13-17
 13 And he went forth again by the sea side; and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

14 And as he passed by, he saw Levi the *son* of Alphæus sitting at the place of toll, and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed

Matt. 9:9-13

9 And as Jesus passed by from thence, he saw a man, called Matthew, sitting at the place of toll: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed

Luke 5:27-32

27 And after these things he went forth, and beheld a publican, named Levi, sitting at the place of toll, and said unto him, Follow me.

28 And he forsook all, and rose up and followed him.

him. 15 And it came to pass, that he was sitting at meat in his house, and many ⁴ publicans and sinners sat down with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.	10 And it came to pass, as he ¹ sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with Jesus and his disciples.	29 And Levi made him a great feast in his house: and there was a great multitude of publicans and of others that were sitting at meat with them.
16 And the scribes ⁵ of the Pharisees, when they saw that he was eating with the sinners and publicans, said unto his disciples, ⁶ He eateth ⁷ and drinketh with publicans and sinners.	11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your ² Master with the publicans and sinners?	30 And ⁸ the Pharisees and their scribes murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with the publicans and sinners?
17 And when Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are ³ whole have no need of a physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.	12 But when he heard it, he said, They that are ³ whole have no need of a physician, but they that are sick. 13 But go ye and learn what <i>this</i> meaneth, ^a I desire mercy, and not sacrifice: for I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.	31 And Jesus answering said unto them, They that are ³ whole have no need of a physician; but they that are sick.
		32 I am not come to call the righteous but sinners to repentance.

¹ Gr. *reclined*: and so always.

² Or, *Teacher*.

³ Gr. *strong*.

⁴ That is, *collectors or renters of Roman taxes*: and so elsewhere.

⁵ Some ancient authorities read *and the Pharisees*.

⁶ Or, How is it *that he eateth ... sinners?*

⁷ Some ancient authorities omit *and drinketh*.

⁸ Or, *the Pharisees and the scribes among them*.

^a Hos. 6:6.

§ 48. JESUS IN THREE PARABLES DEFENDS HIS DISCIPLES FOR FEASTING^a INSTEAD OF FASTING

Mark 2:18-22	Matt. 9:14-17	Luke 5:33-39
18 And John's disciples and the Pharisees were fasting: and they come and say unto him, Why do John's disciples and the disciples of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?	14 Then come to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast ¹ oft, but thy disciples fast not?	33 And they said unto him, The disciples of John fast often, and make supplications; likewise also the <i>disciples</i> of the Pharisees; but thine eat and drink. 34 And Jesus said unto them, Can ye make the sons of the bride-chamber fast while the bridegroom
19 And Jesus said unto them, Can the sons of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom	15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the sons of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom	the bridegroom is

is with them?
as long as they have
the bridegroom with
them, they cannot
fast. 20 But the days
will come, when the
bridegroom shall be
taken away from
them, and then they
will fast in that day.

21 No
man seweth a piece
of undressed cloth on
an old garment: else
that which should
fill it up taketh from
it, the new from the
old, and a worse rent
is made. 22 And no
man putteth new wine
into old ²wine-skins:
else the wine
will burst the skins,
and the wine perisheth,
and the skins:
but *they put* new wine
into fresh wine-skins.

is with them?

but the days will come,
when the bridegroom
shall be taken
away from them, and
then will they fast.

16 And no
man putteth a piece
of undressed cloth
upon an old garment;
for that which should
fill it up taketh from
the garment, and a
worse rent is made.
17 Neither do *men* put
new wine into old
²wine-skins: else the
skins burst, and the
wine is spilled, and
the skins perish: but
they put new wine
into fresh wine-skins,
and both are
preserved.

with them?

35 But the days will
come; and when the
bridegroom shall be
taken away from
them, then will they
fast in those days.
36 And he spake
also a parable^b unto
them; No man rendeth
a piece from a new
garment and putteth
it upon an old
garment; else he will
rend the new, and
also the piece from
the new will not agree
with the old. 37 And
no man putteth new
wine into old ²wine-
skins; else the new
wine will burst the
skins, and itself will
be spilled, and the
skins will perish.
38 But new wine must
be put into fresh
wine-skins. 39 And no
man having drunk
old *wine* desireth new:
for he saith, The old
is ³good.

¹ Some ancient authorities omit *oft*.

² That is, *skins used as bottles*.

³ Many ancient authorities read *better*.

^a It was probably the presence of the disciples of Christ at Matthew's feast on one of the Jewish fast days that occasioned the complaint of John's disciples and the Pharisees. It is sad to see disciples of John aligned with the Pharisees against Jesus.

^b Note the use of the term parable in Luke. There are three parables (the sons of the bride-chamber, the new patch on an old garment, the new wine in old wine-skins) here together. A few isolated ones have already occurred as in [John 2:19](#).

In sections 49 to 51 we see the Pharisees attacking Jesus both in Jerusalem and in Galilee with great hostility and with the purpose of killing him because of violation of the Pharisaic regulations about the Sabbath. Jesus defends himself and his disciples by various arguments and personal claims.

§ 49. AT A FEAST IN JERUSALEM (POSSIBLY THE PASSOVER) JESUS HEALS A LAME MAN ON THE SABBATH AND DEFENDS THIS ACTION TO THE PHARISEES IN A GREAT DISCOURSE

1 After these things there was ¹a feast^a of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.^b

2 Now there is in Jerusalem by the sheep *gate* a pool, which is called in Hebrew ²Bethesda, having five porches. 3 In these lay a multitude of them that were sick, blind, halt, withered³. 5 And a certain man was there, which had been thirty and eight years in his infirmity. 6 When Jesus saw him lying, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wouldst thou be made whole? 7 The sick man answered him, ⁴Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me. 8 Jesus saith unto him, Arise, take up thy bed, and walk. 9 And straightway the man was made whole, and took up his bed and walked.

Now it was the sabbath on that day. 10 So the Jews said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath, and it is not lawful for thee to take up thy bed [*see Ex. 20:10; Deut. 5:14*]. 11 But he answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk. 12 They asked him, Who is the man that said unto thee, Take up *thy bed*, and walk? 13 But he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in the place. 14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing befall thee. 15 The man went away, and told the Jews that it was Jesus which had made him whole. 16 And for this cause did the Jews persecute Jesus, because he did these things on the sabbath. 17 But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh even until now, and I work. 18 For this cause therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only brake the sabbath, but also called God his own Father, making himself equal with God.

19 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them,

Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father doing: for what things soever he doeth, these the Son also doeth in like manner. 20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and greater works than these will he shew him, that ye may marvel. 21 For as the Father raiseth the dead and quickeneth them, even so the Son also quickeneth whom he will. 22 For neither doth the Father judge any man, but he hath given all judgement unto the Son; 23 that all may honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which sent him. 24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth him that sent me, hath eternal life, and cometh not into judgement, but hath passed out of death into life. 25 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour cometh, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and they that hear shall live. 26 For as the Father hath life in himself, even so gave he to the Son also to have life in himself: 27 and he gave him authority to execute judgement, because he is ⁵the Son of man. 28 Marvel not at this: for the hour cometh, in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, 29 and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have ⁶done ill, unto the resurrection of judgement.

30 I can of myself do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is righteous; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. 31 If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. 32 It is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true. 33 Ye have sent unto John, and he hath borne witness unto the truth. 34 But the witness which I receive is not from man: howbeit I say these things, that ye may be saved. 35 He was the lamp that burneth and shineth: and ye were willing to rejoice for a season in his light. 36 But the witness which I have is greater than *that of* John: for the works which the Father hath given me to accomplish, the very works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. 37 And the Father which sent me, he hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his form. 38 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he sent, him ye believe not. 39 ⁷Ye search the scriptures, because ye think that in them ye have eternal life; and these are they which bear witness of me; 40 and ye will not come to me, that ye may have life. 41 I receive not glory from men. 42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in yourselves. 43 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. 44 How can ye believe, which receive glory one of another, and the glory that *cometh* from ⁸the only God ye seek not? 45 Think not that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, *even* Moses, on whom ye have set your hope. 46 For if ye believed Moses, ye would believe me; for he wrote of me. 47 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?^c

¹ Many ancient authorities read *the feast*.

² Some ancient authorities read *Bethsaida*, others *Bethzatha*.

³ Many ancient authorities insert, wholly or in part, *waiting for the moving of the water: 4 for an angel of the Lord went down at certain seasons into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole, with whatsoever disease he was holden*.

⁴ Or, *Lord*.

⁵ Or, *a son of man*.

⁶ Or, *practised*.

⁷ Or, *Search the scriptures*.

⁸ Some ancient authorities read *the only one*.

^a This feast of John 5:1 was *most probably* a Passover (see note at end of volume, [note 7](#)). If so, we should know that our Lord's public ministry lasted three years and a fraction, and that the great ministry in Galilee lasted some 18 to 20 months. Otherwise, we should know of only two years and a fraction for the former, and 6 to 8 months for the latter; as John gives three passovers beyond question ([John 2:13](#); [6:4](#); [12:1](#)), and our Lord's ministry began some time before the first of these. If the feast of 5:1 was not a passover, it is quite impossible to determine what other feast it was. While one would be glad to settle these questions, if it were possible, yet it really does not matter as regards understanding our Lord's *recorded* history and teachings during the great ministry in Galilee, the only point of difference being that if this feast was a Passover (or if there is an unmentioned Passover) we should conceive of the three journeys about Galilee as occupying a longer time, and including more extensive *unrecorded* labors in preaching and healing.

^b It is to be noted that John's Gospel gives the Jerusalem Ministry of Jesus almost entirely except Galilee in [ch. 2](#), Samaria and Galilee in [ch. 4](#), Galilee in [ch. 6](#) and again in [ch. 21](#). It seems clear that John wrote with full knowledge of the Synoptic Gospels and supplements them at certain points. Both Luke and John were thus critics of the Gospel records.

^c Observe that here more than a year before the crucifixion, and probably two years (*i.e.* if the feast of 5:1 was a passover or if an unnamed passover is granted), the hostility of the Jews *at Jerusalem* (comp. [John 4:1](#)) has reached the point of a desire to kill him, as a sabbath breaker and a blasphemer (5:16-18). So we shall find him staying away from Jerusalem at the passover of [John 6:4](#), and until the Tabernacles six months before the crucifixion ([John 7:1-10](#)). Meantime, the hostility will go on increasing in other parts of the country ([Mark 3:6](#), etc.).—Notice also that in this discourse at Jerusalem our Lord repeatedly declares himself in a high sense the Son of God, and the appointed judge of mankind (ver. 27), and says that Moses wrote concerning him (ver. 46). All this indicated that he was the Messiah, but he did not here expressly assert it as he did in Samaria ([John 4:26](#)). That would have precipitated the collision, for to claim to be the Messiah would in the view of the Jewish rulers involve *political* consequences. Comp. [John 11:48](#).

§ 50. ANOTHER SABBATH CONTROVERSY WITH THE PHARISEES WHEN THE DISCIPLES PLUCK EARS OF GRAIN IN THE FIELDS

Probably in Galilee on the Way Back from Jerusalem^a

Mark 2:23-28	Matt. 12:1-8	Luke 6:1-5
23 And it came to pass, that he was going on the sabbath day through the cornfields; and his disciples ³ began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn. 24 And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the sabbath day that which is not lawful?	1 At that season Jesus went on the sabbath day through the cornfields; and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck ears of corn, and to eat. 2 But the Pharisees, when they saw it, said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which it is not lawful to do upon the sabbath.	1 Now it came to pass on a ⁵ sabbath, that he was going through the cornfields [<i>see Deut. 23:25</i>]; and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands. 2 But certain of the Pharisees said, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath day [<i>see John 5:10; Ex. 20:10; Deut. 5:14</i>]? 3 And Jesus answering them said, Have ye not read even this, what David did, when he was an hungred, he, and they that were with him [<i>see Lev. 24:9; 1 Sam. 21:1-6</i>]; 4 how he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shewbread, which is not lawful to eat, save
25 And he said unto them, Did ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him? 26 How he entered into the house of God ⁴ when Abiathar was high priest, and did eat the shewbread, which is not lawful to eat, save	3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when he was an hungred, and they that were with him; 4 how he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shewbread, which it was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them that were with	Jesus answering them said, Have ye not read even this, what David did, when he was an hungred, he, and they that were with him [<i>see Lev. 24:9; 1 Sam. 21:1-6</i>]; 4 how he entered into the house of God, and did take and eat the

for the priests, and gave also to them that were with him?

him, but only for the priests? 5 Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath day the priests in the temple profane the sabbath [see Num. 28:9-10], and are guiltless?

shewbread, and gave also to them that were with him; which it is not lawful to eat save for the priests alone?

6 But I say unto you, that ²one greater than the temple is here.

7 But if ye had known what this meaneth [see Hos. 6:6], I desire mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. 8 For the Son of man is lord of the sabbath.

5 And he said unto them, The Son of man is lord of the sabbath.

27 And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath: 28 so that the Son of man is lord even of the sabbath.^b

¹ Some ancient authorities read *they did eat*.

² Gr. *a greater thing*.

³ Gr. *began to make their way plucking*.

⁴ Some ancient authorities read *in the days of Abiathar the high priest*.

⁵ Many ancient authorities insert *second-first*.

^a Because in [Mark 3:7](#) Jesus withdraws to the Sea of Galilee.

^b Note the five arguments made by Jesus in defence of the conduct of the disciples on the Sabbath (the historical appeal in the conduct of David, the appeal to the law about the temple service, the voice of prophecy, the purpose of God in the Sabbath, and the lordship of the Messiah over the Sabbath). Jesus had already ([John 5:17](#)) argued that he was equal to the Father and hence had the right to do certain things (acts of mercy) on the Sabbath.

§ 51. A THIRD^a SABBATH CONTROVERSY WITH THE PHARISEES OVER THE HEALING OF A MAN WITH A WITHERED HAND IN A SYNAGOGUE

In Galilee

Mark 3:1-6

1 And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there which had his hand withered.

2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day; that they might accuse him.

3 And he saith unto the man that had his hand withered, ¹Stand forth. 4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawful on the sabbath

Matt. 12:9-14

9 And he departed thence, and went into their synagogue: 10 and behold, a man having a withered hand.

And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day? that they might accuse him.

11 And he said unto them, What man shall there be of you, that shall have one sheep, and if this fall into a pit on the sabbath day,

Luke 6:6-11

6 And it came to pass on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught: and there was a man there, and his right hand was withered. 7 And the scribes and the Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath; that they might find how to accuse him. 8 But he knew their thoughts; and he said to the man that had his hand withered, Rise

day to do good, or to do harm? to save a life, or to kill? But they held their peace. 5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved at the hardening of their heart, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched it forth: and his hand was restored.

6 And the Pharisees went out, and straightway with the Herodians took counsel against him, how they might destroy him.^b

will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? 12 How much then is a man of more value than a sheep! Wherefore it is lawful to do good on the sabbath day.

13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole,

as the other. 14 But the Pharisees went out, and took counsel against him, how they might destroy him.

up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth. 9 And Jesus said unto them, I ask you, Is it lawful on the sabbath to do good, or to do harm? to save a life, or to destroy it? 10 And he looked round about on them all, and said unto him, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did *so*: and his hand was restored.

11 But they were filled with ²madness; and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.

¹ Gr. *Arise into the midst*.

² Or, *foolishness*.

^a On three other later occasions controversies arise with the Pharisees concerning Sabbath observance ([John 9:1-34](#); [Luke 13:10-21](#); [14:1-24](#)). In John [7:20-24](#) Jesus refers to the miracle in [John 5](#) and adds another argument (circumcision on the Sabbath) for his conduct on the Sabbath.

^b Here at some point near the sea of Galilee, there is already a plot to kill him, as some had wished to do in Jerusalem (comp. on [§ 49](#)).

In sections 52 to 54 we see Christ choosing the Twelve Apostles and delivering the Sermon on the Mount to them and to the multitudes.

§ 52. JESUS TEACHES AND HEALS GREAT MULTITUDES BY THE SEA OF GALILEE

Mark 3:7-12

7 And Jesus with his disciples withdrew to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed: and from Judea, 8 and from Jerusalem, and from Idumæa, and beyond Jordan, and about Tyre and Sidon,^a a great multitude, hearing ²what great things he did, came unto him. 9 And he spake to his disciples, that a little boat should wait on him because of the crowd, lest they should throng him: 10 for he had healed many; insomuch that as many as had ³plagues ⁴pressed upon him that they might touch him. 11 And the unclean spirits,

Matt. 12:15-21

15 And Jesus perceiving *it* withdrew from thence: and many followed him; and he healed them all,

whensoever they beheld him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God.

12 And he charged them much that they should not make him known.

16 and charged them that they should not make him known: 17 that it might be fulfilled which was spoken¹ by Isaiah^b the prophet, saying,

18 Behold, my servant whom I have chosen;

My beloved in whom my soul is well pleased:

I will put my Spirit upon him, And he shall declare judgement to the Gentiles.

19 He shall not strive, nor cry aloud;

Neither shall any one hear his voice in the streets.

20 A bruised reed shall he not break,

And smoking flax shall he not quench,

Till he send forth judgement unto victory.

21 And in his name shall the Gentiles hope.

¹ Or, *through*.

² Or, *all the things that he did*.

³ Gr. *scourges*.

⁴ Gr. *fell*.

^a Note the wide territory from which the crowds now come, from Idumea in the south to Phoenicia in the north and from Perea in the east.

^b Isaiah 42:1-4.

§ 53. AFTER A NIGHT OF PRAYER, JESUS SELECTS TWELVE APOSTLES

Mark 3:13-19

13 And he goeth up into the mountain, and calleth unto him whom he himself would: and they went unto him. 14 And he appointed twelve¹, that they might be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach, 15 and to have authority to cast out² devils; 16³ and he names apostles;^a Simon he surnamed Peter; 17 and James the *son* of Zebedee, and John the brother of James; and them he surnamed Boanerges, which is, Sons of thunder: 18 and Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the *son* of Alphæus, and Thaddæus, and Simon the⁴ Cananæan, 19 and Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him.

Luke 6:12-16

12 And it came to pass in these days, that he went out into the mountain to pray; and he continued all night in prayer to God. 13 And when it was day, he called his disciples: and he chose from them twelve, whom also he names apostles;^a 14 Simon, whom he also named Peter, and Andrew his brother, and James and John, and Philip and Bartholomew,

15 and Matthew and Thomas, and James *the son* of Alphæus, and Simon which was called the Zealot, 16 and Judas, *the*⁵ *son* of James, and Judas Iscariot, which was the traitor.

¹ Some ancient authorities add *whom also he named apostles*. See Luke 6:13.

² Gr. *demons*.

³ Some ancient authorities insert *and he appointed twelve*.

⁴ Or, *Zealot*. See Luke 6:15; Acts 1:13.

⁵ Or, brother. See Jude 1.

^a Matthew postpones giving the names of the Twelve till they are sent out to preach in Galilee (Matt. 10:1-4. [§ 70](#)). There is a fourth list in Acts 1:13. See the four compared in note at the end of this volume, [note 8](#).

§ 54. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT. PRIVILEGES AND REQUIREMENTS OF THE MESSIANIC REIGN. CHRIST'S STANDARD OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

Matthew, chapters 5-7. Luke 6:17-49.^a

A level place on a mountain, not far from Capernaum

^a There is little doubt that the discourses given by Matthew and Luke are the same, Matthew locating it on "the mountain," and Luke "on a level place," which might easily be a level spot on a mountain. (See note at end of this book, [note 9](#).) Observe that they begin and end alike, and pursue the same general order. Luke omits various matters of special interest to Matthew's Jewish readers (*e.g.* Matt. 5:17-42), and other matters that he himself will give elsewhere (*e.g.* [Luke 11:1-4](#); [12:22-31](#)); while Luke has a few sentences (as ver. 24-26, 38-40), which are not given by Matthew.

The Place and the Audience

Matt. 5:1-2

1 And seeing the multitudes, he went up into the mountain: and when he had sat down, his disciples came unto him: 2 and he opened his mouth and taught them, saying,

Luke 6:17-19

And he came down with them, and stood on a level place, and a great multitude of his disciples, and a great number of the people from all Judea and Jerusalem, and the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases; 18 and they that were troubled with unclean spirits were healed. 19 And all the multitude sought to touch him: for power came forth from him, and healed *them* all.

1. The Introduction: The Beatitudes and the Woes. Privileges of the Messiah's Subjects

Matt. 5:3-12

3 Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. 4 ¹Blessed are they that mourn [*see Isa. 61:3*]: for they shall be comforted. 5 Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth [*see Ps. 37:11*]. 6 Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after

Luke 6:20-26

20 And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed *are* ye poor: for yours is the kingdom of God. 21 Blessed *are* ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed *are* ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh. 22 Blessed are ye, when men shall

righteousness: for they shall be filled [see Ps. 55].	7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy [see Ps. 18:25; Prov. 11:17].	8 Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God [see Ps. 24:3-5].	9 Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called sons of God.	10 Blessed are they that have been persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.	11 Blessed are ye when <i>men</i> shall reproach you, and persecute you, and say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.	12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.	hate you, and when they shall separate you <i>from their company</i> , and reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake.	23 Rejoice in that day, and leap <i>for joy</i> : for behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the same manner did their fathers unto the prophets.	24 But woe unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation.	25 Woe unto you, ye that are full now! for ye shall hunger. Woe <i>unto you</i> , ye that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep.	26 Woe <i>unto you</i> , when all men shall speak well of you! for in the same manner did their fathers to the false prophets.
---	---	---	--	---	---	---	---	---	---	---	--

¹ Some ancient authorities transpose verses 4 and 5.

2. The Theme of the Sermon: Christ's Standard of Righteousness in Contrast with that of the Scribes and Pharisees

Matt. 5:13-20

13 Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and trodden under foot of men [see [Mark 9:50](#): *Jesus often repeated his sayings*]. 14 Ye are the light of the world. A city set on a hill cannot be hid. 15 Neither do *men* light a lamp, and put it under the bushel, but on the stand; and it shineth unto all that are in the house [see [Mark 4:21](#): [Luke 8:16](#)]. 16 Even so let your light shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

17 Think not that I came to destroy the law or the prophets: I came not to destroy, but to fulfil. 18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass away from the law, till all things be accomplished. 19 Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. 20 For I say unto you, that except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.

3. Christ's Ethical Teaching Superior to that of the Scribes (both the Old Testament and the Oral Law) in Six Items or Illustrations (Murder, Adultery, Divorce, Oaths, Retaliation, Love of Enemies)

Matt. 5:21-48

21 Ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgement [see [Ex. 20:13](#); [Deut. 5:17](#)]: 22 but I say unto you, that every one who is angry with his brother¹ shall be in danger of the judgement; and whosoever shall say to his brother, ²Raca, shall be in danger of the council; and whosoever shall say, ³Thou fool, shall be in danger ⁴of the ⁵hell of fire. 23 If therefore thou art offering thy gift at the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee, 24 leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. 25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art with him in the way; lest haply the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge ⁶deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. 26 Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou have paid the last farthing.

27 Ye have heard that it was said, Thou shalt not commit adultery [see [Ex. 20:14](#); [Deut. 5:18](#)]: 28 but I say unto you, that every one that looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. 29 And if thy right eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy whole body be cast into ⁷hell. 30 And if thy right hand causeth thee to stumble, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy whole body go into ⁷hell. 31 It was said also, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement [see [Deut. 24:1](#)]: 32 but I say unto you, that every one that putteth away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, maketh her an adulteress: and whosoever shall marry her when she is put away committeth adultery.^a

33 Again, ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths [see *Lev. 19:12; Num. 30:2; Ex. 20:7; Deut. 5:11; 23:21*]: 34 but I say unto you, Swear not at all [see *Matt. 26:63-64*]; neither by the heaven, for it is the throne of God; 35 nor by the earth, for it is the footstool of his feet; nor ⁸by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King [see *Isa. 66:1*]. 36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, for thou canst not make one hair white or black [see *Ps. 48:2*]. 37 ⁹But let your speech be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: and whatsoever is more than these is of ¹⁰the evil *one*.

38 Ye have heard that it was said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth [see *Ex. 21:24; Lev. 24:20; Deut. 19:21*]: 39 but I say unto you, Resist not ¹¹him that is evil: but whosoever smiteth thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also [see *John 18:23*]. 40 And if any man would go to law with thee, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloke also. 41 And whosoever shall ¹²compel thee to go one mile, go with him twain. 42 Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

43 Ye have heard that it was said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour [see *Lev. 19:18; Deut. 23:6; 25:19*],

<p style="text-align: center;">Matt. 5:21-48</p> <p>and hate thine enemy: 44 but I say unto you [see <i>Luke 23:34</i>], Love your enemies, and pray for them that persecute you; 45 that ye may be sons of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sendeth rain on the just and the unjust.</p> <p>46 For if ye love them that love you, what reward have ye? do not even the ¹³publicans the same? 47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more <i>than others?</i> do not even the Gentiles the same? 48 Ye therefore shall be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">Luke 6:27-30, 32-36</p> <p>27 But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them that hate you, 28 bless them that curse you, pray for them that despitefully use you. 29 To him that smiteth thee on the <i>one</i> cheek offer also the other; and from him that taketh away thy cloke withhold not thy coat also. 30 Give to every one that asketh thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask them not again. 32 And if ye love them that love you, what thank have ye? for even sinners love those that love them. 33 And if ye do good to them that do good to you, what thank have ye? for even sinners do the same. 34 And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? even sinners lend to sinners, to receive again as much. 35 But love your enemies, and do <i>them</i> good, and lend, ¹⁴never despairing; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be sons of the Most High: for he is kind toward the unthankful and evil. 36 Be ye merciful, even as your Father is merciful.</p>
--	---

¹ Many ancient authorities insert *without cause*.

² An expression of contempt.

³ Or, *Moreh*, a Hebrew expression of condemnation.

⁴ Gr. *unto* or *into*.

⁵ Gr. *Gehenna of fire*.

⁶ Some ancient authorities omit *deliver thee*.

⁷ Gr. *Gehenna*.

⁸ Or, *toward*.

⁹ Some ancient authorities read *But your speech shall be*.

¹⁰ Or, *evil*: as in ver. 39; 6:13.

¹¹ Or, *evil*.

¹² Gr. *impress*.

¹³ That is, *collectors or renters of Roman taxes*: and so elsewhere.

¹⁴ Some ancient authorities read *despairing of no man*.

^a See further [Mark 9:43-47](#); [10:11-12](#); [Matt. 18:8-9](#); [19:9](#).

4. *The Practice of Real Righteousness unlike the Ostentatious Hypocrisy of the Pharisees, as in Almsgiving, Prayer, Fasting*

Matt. 6:1-18

1 Take heed that ye do not your righteousness before men, to be seen of them: else ye have no reward with your Father which is in heaven.

2 When therefore thou doest alms, sound not a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. 3 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: 4 that thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret shall recompense thee.

5 And when ye pray, ye shall not be as the hypocrites: for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. 6 But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thine inner chamber, and having shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret shall recompense thee. 7 And in praying use not vain repetitions, as the Gentiles do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. 8 Be not therefore like unto them: for ¹your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. 9 After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed by thy name. 10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth. 11 Give us this day ²our daily bread. 12 And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. 13 And bring us not into temptation, but deliver us from ³the evil *one*.⁴ 14 For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. 15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

16 Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may be seen of men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. 17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thy head, and wash thy face; 18 that thou be not seen of men to fast, but of thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall recompense thee.

¹ Some ancient authorities read *God your Father*.

² Gr. *our bread for the coming day*.

³ Or, *evil*.

⁴ Many authorities, some ancient, but with variations, add *For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen*.

5. *Single-hearted Devotion to God, as Opposed to Worldly Aims and Anxieties*

Matt. 6:19-34

19 Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, where moth and rust doth consume, and where thieves ¹break through and steal: 20 but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth consume, and where thieves do not ¹break through nor steal: 21 for where thy treasure is, there will thy heart be also. 22 The lamp of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. 23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is the darkness! 24 No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. 25 Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than the food, and the body than the raiment? 26 Behold the birds of the heaven, that they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; and your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are not ye of much more value than they? 27 And which of you by being anxious can add one cubit unto his ²stature? 28 And why are ye anxious concerning raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: 29 yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. 30 But if God doth so clothe the grass of the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, *shall he* not much more *clothe* you, O ye of little faith? 31 Be not therefore anxious, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? 32 For

after all these things do the Gentiles seek; for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. 33 But seek ye first his kingdom, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. 34 Be not therefore anxious for the morrow: for the morrow will be anxious for itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

¹ Gr. *dig through*.

² Or, *age*.

6. Captious Criticism, or Judging Others

Matt. 7:1-6

1 Judge not, that ye be not judged.
2 For with what judgement ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured unto you.

3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? 4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me cast out the mote out of thine eye; and lo, the beam is in thine own eye? 5 Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

6 Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast your pearls before the swine, lest haply they trample them under their feet, and turn and rend you.

Luke 6:37-42

37 And judge not, and ye shall not be judged: and condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: release, and ye shall be released: 38 give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, shaken together, running over, shall they give into your bosom. For with what measure ye mete it shall be measured to you again. 39 And he spake also a parable unto them, Can the blind guide the blind? shall they not both fall into a pit? 40 The disciple is not above his ¹master: but every one when he is perfected shall be as his ¹master. 41 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? 42 Or how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me cast out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.

¹ Or, *teacher*.

7. Prayer, and the Golden Rule

Matt. 7:7-12

7 Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: 8 for every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. 9 Or what man is there of you, who, if his son shall ask him for a loaf, will give him a stone; 10 or if he shall ask for a fish, will give him a serpent? 11 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things

Luke 6:31

to them that ask him? 12 All things therefore whatsoever ye would that men should do unto you, even so do ye also unto them: for this is the law and the prophets.

31 And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.

8. *The Conclusion of the Sermon. The Lesson of Personal Righteousness Driven Home by Powerful Parables*

Matt. 7:13 to 8:1

Luke 6:43-49

13 Enter ye in by the narrow gate: for wide ¹is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many be they that enter in thereby. 14 ²For narrow is the gate, and straitened the way, that leadeth unto life, and few be they that find it. 15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravening wolves. 16 By their fruits ye shall know them. Do *men* gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? 17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit: but the corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. 18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. 19 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. 20 Therefore by their fruits ye shall know them. 21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. 22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy by thy name, and by thy name cast out ³devils, and by thy name do many ⁴mighty works? 23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. 24 Every one therefore which heareth these words of mine, and doeth them, shall be likened unto a wise man, which built his house upon the rock: 25 and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon the rock. 26 And every one that heareth these words of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: 27 and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and smote upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall thereof. 28 And it came to pass, when Jesus ended these words, the multitudes were astonished at his teaching: 29 for he taught them as *one* having authority, and not as their scribes.

43 For there is no good tree that bringeth forth corrupt fruit; nor again a corrupt tree that bringeth forth good fruit. 44 For each tree is known by its own fruit. For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes. 45 The good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and the evil *man* out of the evil *treasure* bringeth forth that which is evil: for out of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh. 46 And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

47 Every one that cometh unto me, and heareth my words, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like: 48 he is like a man building a house, who digged and went deep, and laid a foundation upon a rock: and when a flood arose, the stream brake against that house, and could not shake it: ⁵because it had been well builded. 49 But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that built a house upon the earth without a foundation; against which the stream brake, and straightway it fell in; and the ruin of that house was great.

1 And when he was come down
from the mountain, great multitudes
followed him.

¹ Some ancient authorities omit *is the gate*.

² Many ancient authorities read *How narrow is the gate, &c.*

³ Gr. *demons*.

⁴ Gr. *powers*.

⁵ Many ancient authorities read *for it had been founded upon the rock*: as in Matt. 7:25.

In sections 55 to 58 we see the rapid spread of Christ's influence and the inquiry from the Baptist in prison.^a

^a Here we have only Matthew and Luke, a block from the Logia of Matthew.

§ 55. JESUS HEALS A CENTURION'S SERVANT AT CAPERNAUM

Matt. 8:5-13

5 And when he was entered into
Capernaum, there came unto him
a centurion,

beseeching him, 6 and
saying, Lord, my ¹servant lieth
in the house sick of the palsy,
grievously tormented.

7 And he saith
unto him, I will come and heal
him.

8 And the centurion answered
and said, Lord, I am not ²worthy
that thou shouldest come under
my roof: but only say ³the word,
and my ¹servant shall be healed.

9 For I also am a man ⁴under
authority, having under myself
soldiers: and I say to this one, Go,
and he goeth; and to another, Come,
and he cometh; and to my ⁵servant,
Do this, and he doeth it.

10 And when Jesus heard it,
he marvelled, and said to them
that followed, Verily I say unto

Luke 7:1-10

1 After he had ended all his
sayings in the ears of the people,
he entered into Capernaum.

2 And a certain centurion's
⁵servant, who was ⁸dear unto him,
was sick and at the point of
death. 3 And when he heard
concerning Jesus, he sent unto
him elders of the Jews, asking
him that he would come and
save his ⁵servant. 4 And they,
when they came to Jesus,
besought him earnestly, saying,
He is worthy that thou shouldest
do this for him: 5 for he loveth
our nation, and himself built us
our synagogue. 6 And Jesus went
with them. And when he was
now not far from the house, the
centurion sent friends to him,
saying unto him, Lord, trouble
not thyself: for I am not ²worthy
that thou shouldest come under
my roof: 7 wherefore neither
thought I myself worthy to come
unto thee: but say ³the word,
and my ¹servant shall be healed.

8 For I also am a man set under
authority, having under myself
soldiers: and I say to this one,
Go, and he goeth; and to another,
Come, and he cometh; and to my
⁵servant, Do this, and he doeth
it. 9 And when Jesus heard these
things, he marvelled at him, and
turned and said unto the multitude

you, ⁶I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. 11 And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall ⁷sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven [*see Ps. 107:3; Isa. 49:12*]: 12 but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; as thou hast believed *so* be it done unto thee. And the ¹servant was healed in that hour.

that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the ⁵servant whole.

¹ Or, *boy*.

² Gr. *sufficient*.

³ Gr. *with a word*.

⁴ Some ancient authorities insert *set*: as in Luke 7:8.

⁵ Gr. *bondservant*.

⁶ Many ancient authorities read *With no man in Israel have I found so great faith*.

⁷ Gr. *recline*.

⁸ Or, *precious to him*; or, *honourable with him*.

§ 56. HE RAISES A WIDOW'S SON AT NAIN

Luke 7:11-17

11 And it came to pass ¹soon afterwards, that he went to a city called Nain; and his disciples went with him, and a great multitude. 12 Now when he drew near to the gate of the city, behold, there was carried out one that was dead, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her. 13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not. 14 And he came nigh and touched the bier: and the bearers stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. 15 And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he gave him to his mother. 16 And fear took hold on all: and they glorified God, saying, A great prophet is arisen among us: and, God hath visited his people. 17 And this report went forth concerning him in the whole of Judea, and the region round about.

¹ Many ancient authorities read *on the next day*.

§ 57. THE MESSAGE^a FROM THE BAPTIST AND THE EULOGY OF JESUS

Galilee

Matt. 11:2-19

2 Now when John heard in the prison^b the works of the Christ,

Luke 7:18-35

18 And the disciples of John told him of all these things. 19 And

he sent by his disciples, 3 and said unto him, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another?

4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Go your way and tell John the things which ye do hear and see: 5 the blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, and the dead are raised up, and the poor have ¹good tidings preached to them. 6 And blessed is he, whosoever shall find none occasion of stumbling in me. 7 And as these went their way, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to behold? a reed shaken with the wind? 8 But what went ye out for to see? a man clothed in soft *raiment*? Behold, they that wear soft *raiment* are in kings' houses. 9 ²But wherefore went ye out? to see a prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet. 10 This is he, of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, Who shall prepare thy way before thee. 11 Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not arisen a greater than John the Baptist: yet he that is ³but little in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he. 12 And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and men of violence take it by force [*see Luke 16:17*]. 13 For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. 14 And if ye are willing to receive ⁴it, this is Elijah, which is to come [*see Mal. 4:5*]. 15 He that hath ears ⁵to hear, let him hear.

16 But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like^c unto children sitting in the marketplaces, which call unto their fellows, and say, 17 We piped unto you, and ye did not dance; we wailed, and ye did not ⁶mourn.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a ⁷devil. 19 The

John calling unto him ¹⁰two of his disciples sent them to the Lord, saying, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another? 20 And when the men were come unto him, they said, John the Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another? 21 In that hour he cured many of diseases and ¹¹plagues and evil spirits; and on many that were blind he bestowed sight. 22 And he answered and said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard [*see Isa. 29:18-19; 35:5-6; 61:1*]; the blind receive their sight, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, the poor have ¹good tidings preached to them. 23 And blessed is he, whosoever shall find none occasion of stumbling in me. 24 And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to behold? a reed shaken with the wind? 25 But what went ye out to see? a man clothed in soft *raiment*? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings' courts. 26 But what went ye out to see? a prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet. 27 This is he of whom it is written,

Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, Who shall prepare thy way before thee [*see Mal. 3:1*].

28 I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there is none greater than John: yet he that is ³but little in the kingdom of God is greater than he.

29 And all the people when they heard, and the publicans, justified God, ¹²being baptized with the baptism of John. 30 But the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected for themselves the counsel of God, ¹³being not baptized of him. 31 Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation, and to what are they like? 32 They are like unto children that sit in the marketplace, and call one to another; which say, We piped unto you, and ye did not dance; we wailed, and ye did not weep. 33 For John the Baptist is come eating no bread nor drinking wine; and ye

Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners!

And wisdom ⁸is justified by her ⁹works.

say, He hath a ⁷devil. 34 The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners!

35 And wisdom ⁸is justified of all her children.

¹ Or, *the gospel*.

² Many ancient authorities read *But what went ye out to see? a prophet?*

³ Gr. *lesser*.

⁴ Or, him.

⁵ Some ancient authorities omit *to hear*.

⁶ Gr. *beat the breast*.

⁷ Gr. *demon*.

⁸ Or, *was*.

⁹ Many ancient authorities read *children*: as in Luke 7:35.

¹⁰ Gr. *certain two*.

¹¹ Gr. *scourges*.

¹² Or, *having been*.

¹³ Or, *not having been*.

^a Observe that his fame as having raised the dead, and as being "a great prophet," spread widely, and reaching John, led to his message of inquiry (connect [Luke 7:17](#) and 18).

^b John's prison was at Machærus, east of the Dead Sea. Jesus was somewhere in Galilee, probably near Nain, which was in the southern part of Galilee.

^c Parable of the Children Playing in the Market Place.

§ 58. WOES UPON THE CITIES OF OPPORTUNITY. THE CLAIMS OF CHRIST AS THE TEACHER ABOUT THE FATHER.

Galilee

Matt. 11:20-30

20 Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his ¹mighty works were done, because they repented not. 21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the ¹mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon which were done in you, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. 22 Howbeit I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgement, than for you [*see Isa. 14:13-15*]. 23 And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted unto heaven? thou shalt ²go down unto Hades: for if the ¹mighty works had been done in Sodom which were done in thee, it would have remained until this day. 24 Howbeit I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgement, than for thee [*see Gen. 19:24*].

25 At that season Jesus answered and said, I ³thank thee, O Father [*see John 3:35; 17:2*], Lord of heaven and earth, that thou didst hide these things from the wise and understanding, and didst reveal them unto babes: 26 yea, Father, ⁴for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight. 27 All things have been delivered unto me of my Father: and no one knoweth the Son, save the Father; neither doth any know the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal *him*. 28 Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. 29 Take my yoke^a upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. 30 For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light [*see Jer. 6:16; Sirach 51:23*].

¹ Gr. *powers*.

² Many ancient authorities read *be brought down*.

³ Or, *praise*.

⁴ Or, *that*.

^a Rabbinical figure for going to school. Jesus thus definitely pictures himself as the expert on God in a Johannan passage (cf. [Luke 10:21-24](#)). He conceives himself as the Teacher who alone is able to interpret the Father.

§ 59. THE ANOINTING^a OF CHRIST'S FEET BY A SINFUL WOMAN IN THE HOUSE OF SIMON A PHARISEE. THE PARABLE OF THE TWO DEBTORS

Galilee

Luke 7:36-50

36 And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he entered into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat. 37 And behold, a woman which was in the city, a sinner; and when she knew that he was sitting at meat in the Pharisee's house, she brought ¹an alabaster cruse of ointment, 38 and standing behind at his feet, weeping, she began to wet his feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head, and ²kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment. 39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were ³a prophet, would have perceived who and what manner of woman this is which toucheth him, that she is a sinner. 40 And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, ⁴Master, say on. 41 A certain lender had two debtors: the one owed five hundred ⁵pence, and the other fifty. 42 When they had not *wherewith* to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them therefore will love him most? 43 Simon answered and said, He, I suppose, to whom he forgave the most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. 44 And turning to the woman, he said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath wetted my feet with her tears, and wiped them with her hair. 45 Thou gavest me no kiss: but she, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to ⁶kiss my feet. 46 My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but she hath anointed my feet with ointment. 47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, *the same* loveth little. 48 And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven. 49 And they that sat at meat with him began to say ⁷within themselves, Who is this that even forgiveth sins? 50 And he said unto the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

¹ Or, *a flask*.

² Gr. *kissed much*.

³ Some ancient authorities read *the prophet*. See [John 1:21, 25](#).

⁴ Or, *Teacher*.

⁵ The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about seventeen cents.

⁶ Gr. *kiss much*.

⁷ Or, *among*.

^a This anointing in Galilee must be distinct from the anointing at Bethany, near Jerusalem, more than a year later. This sinful and penitent woman is represented by a very late tradition as being Mary Magdalene, and hence all the popular uses of the term Magdalen. But that notion has no historical support whatever, and it becomes violently improbable when we find that in the very next paragraph Luke introduces Mary Magdalene as a new figure in the history. Some men even identify Mary of Bethany with this woman that was a sinner and also with Mary Magdalene, a medley of medieval mysticism.

In sections 60 to 63 Jesus makes a second (three in all) tour of Galilee, this time with all the Twelve. Intense hostility of the Pharisees is aroused by the work. They make the blasphemous accusation that Jesus is in league with Satan. Even the kindred of Jesus fear that he is beside himself because of the excitement and the charges.

§ 60. THE SECOND TOUR OF GALILEE

Luke 8:1-3

¹ And it came to pass soon afterwards, that he went about through cities and villages, preaching and bringing the ¹good tidings of the kingdom of God, and with him the twelve, ² and certain women which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary that was called Magdalene, from whom seven ²devils had gone out, ³ and Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto ³them of their substance.

¹ Or, *gospel*.

² Gr. *demons*.

³ Many ancient authorities read *him*.

Notice that the events of §§ 61-66 all occurred on the same day, called the Busy Day.^a

^a This "Busy Day" is just one of many such days in the Master's Ministry. See, for instance, the last day of his public ministry in the temple in Jerusalem. Observe Jesus in the *forenoon* teaching a crowded audience ([Mark 3:19](#)), some of whom insult and blaspheme him, and others demand a sign, and at length his mother and brethren try to carry him off as insane (comp. [Mark 3:21](#)); in the *afternoon* giving a group of most remarkable parables, several of which he interprets; towards night crossing the Lake in a boat, so tired and worn that he sleeps soundly amid the alarming storm; then healing the Gadarene demoniacs, and returning by boat, apparently the same evening. What a day of toil and trial.

§ 61. BLASPHEMOUS ACCUSATION OF LEAGUE WITH BEELZEBUB

Galilee

Mark 3:19-30

¹⁹ And he cometh into a house.
²⁰ And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. ²¹ And when his friends heard it, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.

²² And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem said, He hath Beelzebub, and, ³By the

Matt. 12:22-37

²² Then was brought unto him ¹one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the dumb man spake and saw. ²³ And all the

prince of the ²devils casteth he out the ²devils. 23 And he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan? 24 And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. 25 And if a house be divided against itself, that house will not be able to stand. 26 And if Satan hath risen up against himself, and is divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 But no one can enter into the house of the strong *man*, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong *man*; and then he will spoil his house.

28 Verily I say unto you, All their sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and their blasphemies wherewithsoever they shall blaspheme: 29 but whosoever shall blaspheme against the Holy Spirit hath never forgiveness, but is guilty of an eternal sin: 30 because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

multitudes were amazed, and said, Is this the son of David? 24 But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This man doth not cast out ²devils, but ³by Beelzebub the prince of the ²devils [see [John 7:20](#); [8:48](#), [52](#); [10:20](#)].^a 25 And knowing their thoughts he said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: 26 and if Satan casteth out Satan, he is divided against himself; how then shall his kingdom stand? 27 And if I ³by Beelzebub cast out ²devils, ³by whom do your sons cast them out?

therefore shall they be your judges.

28 But if I ³by the Spirit of God cast out ²devils, then is the kingdom of God come upon you. 29 Or how can one enter into the house of the strong *man*, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong *man*? and then he will spoil his house. 30 He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth. 31 Therefore I say unto you, Every sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven ⁴unto men; but the blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven.

32 And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever shall speak against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this ⁵world, nor in that which is to come. 33 Either make the tree good, and its fruit good; or make the tree corrupt, and its fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by its fruit. 34 Ye offspring of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. 35 The good man out of his good treasure bringeth forth good things: and the evil man out of his evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. 36 And I say unto you, that every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgement. 37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

¹ Or, *a demoniac*.

² Gr. *demons*.

³ Or, *in*.

⁴ Some ancient authorities read *unto you men*.

⁵ Or, *age*.

^a Luke ([11:14-36](#)) gives another blasphemous accusation later in Judea. Matthew ([9:27-34](#)) also has another blasphemous accusation. Note Christ's use of parables in replying to the accusations.

§ 62. SCRIBES AND PHARISEES DEMAND A SIGN

Same day. Galilee

Matt. 12:38-45

38 Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees answered him, saying, ¹Master, we would see a sign from thee. 39 But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet: 40 for as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the ²whale; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth [see *Jonah 1:17; 2:1-2; 3:5; 4:3; 1 Kings 10:1-10*]. 41 The men of Nineveh shall stand up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, ³a greater than Jonah is here. 42 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, ³a greater than Solomon is here. 43 But the unclean spirit, when ⁴he is gone out of the man, passeth through waterless places, seeking rest, and findeth it not. 44 Then ⁴he saith, I will return into my house whence I came out; and when ⁴he is come, ⁴he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished. 45 Then goeth ⁴he, and taketh with ⁵himself seven other spirits more evil than ⁵himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man becometh worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this evil generation.

¹ Or, *Teacher*.

² Gr. *sea-monster*.

³ Gr. *more than*.

⁴ Or, *it*.

⁵ Or, *itself*.

§ 63. CHRIST'S MOTHER AND BRETHREN SEEK TO TAKE HIM HOME

Same day. Galilee

Mark 3:31-35	Matt. 12:46-50	Luke 8:19-21
31 And there come his mother and his brethren; and, standing without, they sent unto him, calling him.	46 While he was yet speaking to the multitudes, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, seeking to speak to him.	19 And there came to him his mother and brethren, and they could not come at him for the crowd.
32 And a multitude was sitting about him; and they say unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.	47 ¹ And one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, seeking to speak to thee.	20 And it was told him, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.
33 And he answereth them, and saith, Who is my mother and my brethren?	48 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?	21 But he answered and said unto them,
34 And looking round on them which sat round about him, he saith, Behold, my mother and my brethren!	49 And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold, my mother and my brethren!	50 For

35 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.	whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, he is my brother, and sister, and mother.	My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it [<i>see John 15:14</i>].
--	--	--

¹ Some ancient authorities omit ver. 47.

In §§ 64 to 69 we have the first great group of Parables with the visit to Gerasa and the return to Nazareth.

§ 64. THE FIRST GREAT GROUP OF PARABLES^a

Same day. Beside the Sea of Galilee. Introduction to the Group

<p style="text-align: center;">Mark 4:1, 2</p> <p>1 And again he began to teach by the sea side. And there is gathered unto him a very great multitude, so that he entered a boat, and sat in the sea; and all the multitude were by the sea on the land.</p> <p>2 And he taught them many things in parables, and said unto them in his teaching, Harken:</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">Matt. 13:1-3</p> <p>1 On that day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side. 2 And there were gathered unto him great multitudes, so that he entered into a boat, and sat; and all the multitude stood on the beach.</p> <p>3 And he spake to them many things in parables, saying,</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">Luke 8:4</p> <p>4 And when a great multitude came together, and they of every city resorted unto him,</p> <p style="text-align: right;">he spake by a parable:</p>
--	---	---

^a We have met various *separate* parables heretofore, but here is a *group* of at least ten. Two other great groups will occur hereafter, one group given in Luke only, and the last group during the last week of our Lord's public ministry.

1. To the Crowds by the Sea

(a) Parable of the Sower

<p style="text-align: center;">Mark 4:3-25</p> <p>3 Behold, the sower went forth to sow: 4 and it came to pass, as he sowed, some <i>seed</i> fell by the way side, and the birds came and devoured it. 5 And other fell on the rocky <i>ground</i>, where it had not much earth; and</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">Matt. 13:3-23</p> <p>3 Behold, the sower went forth to sow; 4 and as he sowed, some <i>seeds</i> fell by the way side, and the birds came and devoured them: 5 and others fell upon the rocky places, where they had not much earth: and straightway</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">Luke 8:5-18</p> <p>5 The sower went forth to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden under foot, and the birds of the heaven devoured it. 6 And other fell on the rock; and as soon as it grew, it withered</p>
---	---	---

straightway it sprang up, because it had no deepness of earth: 6 and when the sun was risen, it was scorched; and because it had no root, it withered away. 7 And other fell among the thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. 8 And others fell into the good ground, and yielded fruit, growing up and increasing; and brought forth, thirtyfold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold. 9 And he said, Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve asked of him the parables.

11 And he said unto them, Unto you is given the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all things are done in parables: 12 that

seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest haply they should turn again, and it should be forgiven^a them. 13 And he saith unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how shall ye know all the parables? 14 The sower soweth the word. 15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; and when they have heard, straightway cometh Satan, and taketh away the word which hath been sown in them. 16 And these in like manner are they that are

they sprang up, because they had no deepness of earth: 6 and when the sun was risen, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. 7 And others fell upon the thorns; and the thorns grew up, and choked them: 8 and others fell upon the good ground, and yielded fruit, some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.

9 He that hath ears¹, let him hear.

10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?

11 And he answered and said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. 12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath.

13 Therefore speak I to them in parables;

because seeing they see not, and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand. 14 And unto them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall in no wise understand; And seeing ye shall see, and shall in no wise perceive:

15 For this people's heart is waxed gross, And their ears are dull of hearing, And their eyes they have closed; Lest haply they should perceive with their eyes, And hear with their ears, And understand with their heart, And should turn again,

away, because it had no moisture.

7 And other fell amidst the thorns; and the thorns grew with it, and choked it. 8 And other fell into the good ground, and grew, and brought forth fruit a hundredfold. As he said these things, he cried,

He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

9 And his disciples asked him what this parable might be.

10 And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God: but to the rest

in parables; that seeing they may not see, and hearing they may not understand. 11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God. 12 And those by the way side are they that have heard; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word from their heart, that they may not believe and be saved.

And I should heal them

[see Isa. 6:9-10].

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see; and your ears, for they hear. 17 For verily I say unto you, that many prophets and righteous men desired to see the things which ye see, and saw them not; and to hear the things which ye hear, and heard them not. 18 Hear then ye the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, *then* cometh the evil *one*, and snatcheth away that which hath been sown in his heart. This is he that was sown by the way side. 20 And he that was sown upon the rocky places, this is he that heareth the word, and straightway with joy receiveth it; but it hath no root in himself, and when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, straightway he

stumbleth. 22 And he that was sown among the thorns, this is he that heareth the word; and the care of the ²world, and the deceitfulness of riches,

choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful. 23 And he that was sown upon the good ground, this is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; who verily beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some a hundredfold, some a sixty, some thirty.

sown upon the rocky *places*, who, when they have heard the word, straightway receive it with joy; 17 and it; 21 yet hath he they have no root in themselves, but endure for a while; then, when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, straightway they stumble. 18 And others are they that are sown among the thorns; these are they that have heard the word, 19 and the cares of the ²world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. 20 And those are they that were sown upon the good ground; such as hear the word, and accept it, and bear fruit, thirtyfold, and sixtyfold, and a hundredfold.

21 And he said unto them, Is the lamp^b brought to be put under the bushel, or under the bed, *and* not to be put on the stand? 22 For there is nothing hid, save that it should be manifested; neither was *anything* made secret, but that it should come to light. 23 If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear. 24 And he said unto

13 And those on the rock *are* they which, when they have heard, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among the thorns, these are they that have heard, and as they go on their way they are choked with cares and riches and pleasures of *this* life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 And that in the good ground, these are such as in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, hold it fast, and bring forth fruit with patience.

16 And no man, when he hath lighted a lamp, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed; but putteth it on a stand, that they which enter in may see the light. 17 For nothing is hid, that shall not be made manifest; nor *anything* secret, that shall not be known and come to light. 18 Take

them, Take heed what ye hear: with what measure ye mete it shall be measured unto you: and more shall be given unto you. 25 For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath.

heed therefore how ye hear: for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he ³thinketh he hath.

¹ Some ancient authorities add here, and in ver. 43, *to hear*: as in Mark 4:9; Luke 8:8.

² Or, *age*.

³ Or, *seemeth to have*.

^a Observe that Jesus spoke these words just after the blasphemous accusation and on the same day ([Matt. 13:1](#)).

^b Note here another brief parable of the lamp to enforce the lesson of the parable of the Sower. Preachers to-day sometimes tell one story to illustrate another.

(b) Parable of the Seed Growing of Itself

Mark 4:26-29

26 And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed upon the earth; 27 and should sleep and rise night and day, and the seed should spring up and grow, he knoweth not how. 28 The earth ¹beareth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, then the full corn in the ear. 29 But when the fruit ²is ripe, straightway he ³putteth forth the sickle, because the harvest is come [*see Joel 3:13*].

¹ Or, *yieldeth*.

² Or, *alloweth*.

³ Or, *sendeth forth*.

(c) Parable of the Tares

Matt. 13:24-30

24 Another parable set he before them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man that sowed good seed in his field: 25 but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed ¹tares also among the wheat, and went away. 26 But when the blade sprang up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. 27 And the ²servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? whence then hath it tares? 28 And he said unto them, ³An enemy hath done this. And the ²servants say unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? 29 But he saith, Nay; lest haply while ye gather up the tares, ye root up the wheat with them. 30 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather up first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

¹ Or, *darnel*.

² Gr. *bondservants*.

³ Gr. *A man that is an enemy*.

(d) Parable of the Mustard Seed

Mark 4:30-32

Matt. 13:31-32

30 And he said, How shall we liken ³¹ Another parable set he before the kingdom of God? or in what parable shall we set it forth? ³¹ ¹It heaven is like unto a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown upon the earth, though it be less than all

them, saying, The kingdom of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: ³² which indeed is less than all seeds; but

the seeds that are upon the earth, when it is grown, it is greater
 32 yet when it is sown, groweth than the herbs, and becometh a
 up, and becometh greater than all tree [see Dan. 4:12, 21], so that
 the herbs, and putteth out great the birds of the heaven come and
 branches; so that the birds of lodge in the branches thereof.
 the heaven can lodge under the
 shadow thereof.

¹ Gr. *As unto*.

(e) Parable of the Leaven and many such Parables

Mark 4:33-34

Matt. 13:33-35

33 And with many^a such parables 34 All these things spake Jesus
 spake he the word unto them, as in parables unto the multitudes;
 they were able to hear it: 34 and and without^a a parable spake he
 without a parable spake he not nothing unto them: 35 that it might
 unto them: but privately to his be fulfilled which was spoken ²by
 disciples he expounded all things. the prophet, saying,
 I will open my mouth in parables;
 I will utter things hidden from
 the foundation ³of the world
 [see Ps. 78:2].

¹ The word in the Greek denotes the Hebrew seah, a measure containing nearly a peck and a half.

² Or, *through*.

³ Many ancient authorities omit *of the world*.

^a Note the expression. Matthew gives nine in Chapter 13 and Mark another. There may have been still others on this day.

2. To the Disciples in the House

(a) Explanation of the Parable of the Tares

Matt. 13:36-43

36 Then he left the multitudes, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him,
 saying, Explain unto us the parable of the tares of the field. 37 And he answered and said, He that
 soweth the good seed is the Son of man; 38 and the field is the world; and the good seed, these
 are the sons of the kingdom; and the tares are the sons of the evil *one*; 39 and the enemy that
 sowed them is the devil: and the harvest is ¹the end of the world; and the reapers are angels. 40
 As therefore the tares are gathered up and burned with fire; so shall it be in ¹the end of the
 world. 41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all
 things that cause stumbling, and them that do iniquity, 42 and shall cast them into the furnace of
 fire: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. 43 Then shall the righteous shine forth as
 the sun in the kingdom of their Father [see Dan. 12:3]. He that hath ears, let him hear.

¹ Or, *the consummation of the age*.

(b) The Parable of the Hid Treasure

Matt. 13:44

44 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a treasure hidden in the field; which a man found, and
 hid; and ¹in his joy he goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

¹ Or, *for joy thereof*.

(c) The Parable of the Pearl of Great Price

Matt. 13:45-46

45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a merchant seeking goodly pearls: 46 and having found one pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

(d) The Parable of the Net

Matt. 13:47-50

47 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a ¹net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: 48 which, when it was filled, they drew up on the beach; and they sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but the bad they cast away. 49 So shall it be in ²the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the righteous, 50 and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

¹ Gr. *dragnet*.

² Or, *consummation of the age*.

(e) The Parable of the Householder

Matt. 13:51-53

51 Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea. 52 And he said unto them, Therefore every scribe who hath been made a disciple to the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

53 And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these parables,^a he departed thence.

^a Eight of these ten parables go in pairs (the sower and the seed growing of itself, the tares and the net, the mustard seed and the leaven, the hid treasure and the pearl of great price). But nothing can be made out of the number of the parables spoken on this day. We do not even know what the number was. Jesus had spoken various shorter and more or less isolated parables before this occasion. An immediate occasion for the use of so many and such extended parables at this point was the hostility of the Pharisees and the need of special instruction for the disciples who were taught by Jesus how to interpret parables, though they had much difficulty later in applying the instruction about the parabolic teaching.

§ 65. IN CROSSING THE LAKE, JESUS STILLS THE TEMPEST

Same day. Sea of Galilee

Mark 4:35-41
35 And on that day, when even was come, he saith unto them, Let us go over unto the other side.

36 And leaving the multitude, they take him with them, even as he was, in the boat. And other boats were with him.

37 And there ariseth a

Matt. 8:18, 23-27
18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.
23 And when he was entered into a boat, his disciples followed him.

24 And behold,

24 And behold,

Luke 8:22-25
22 Now it came to pass on one of those days, that he entered into a boat, himself and his disciples; and he said unto them, Let us go over to the other side of the lake: and they launched forth. 23 But as they sailed he fell asleep: and there came down

<p>great storm of wind, and the waves beat into the boat, insomuch that the boat was now filling. 38 And he himself was in the stern, asleep on the cushion: and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish? 39 And he awoke, and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm. 40 And he said unto them, Why are ye fearful? have ye not yet faith?</p> <p>41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, Who then is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him?</p>	<p>there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the boat was covered with the waves: but he was asleep. 25 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Save, Lord; we perish.</p> <p>26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm.</p> <p>27 And the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?</p>	<p>a storm of wind on the lake; and they were filling <i>with water</i>, and were in jeopardy.</p> <p>24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. And he awoke, and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.</p> <p>25 And he said unto them, Where is your faith?</p> <p>And being afraid they marvelled, saying one to another, Who then is this, that he commandeth even the winds and the water, and they obey him?</p>
--	--	--

§ 66. BEYOND THE LAKE JESUS HEALS THE GERASENE^a DEMONIAC^b

Gerasa (Khersa). Same day

<p>Mark 5:1-20</p> <p>1 And they came to the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gerasenes.</p> <p>2 And when he was come out of the boat, straightway there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, 3 who had his dwelling in the tombs: and no man could any more bind him, no, not with a chain; 4 because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been rent asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: and no man had strength to tame him. 5 And always, night and day, in the tombs and in the</p>	<p>Matt. 8:28-34</p> <p>28 And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gadarenes, there met him two ¹possessed with devils, coming forth out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man could pass by that way.</p>	<p>Luke 8:26-39</p> <p>26 And they arrived at the country of the ⁴Gerasenes, which is over against Galilee.</p> <p>27 And when he was come forth upon the land, there met him a certain man out of the city, who had ²devils; and for a long time he had worn no clothes, and abode not in <i>any</i> house, but in the tombs.</p>
--	---	--

mountains, he was crying out, and cutting himself with stones. 6 And when he saw Jesus from afar, he ran and worshipped him; 7 and crying out with a loud voice, he saith, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God? I adjure thee by God, torment me not. 8 For he said unto him, Come forth, thou unclean spirit, out of the man.

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he saith unto him, My name is Legion; for we are many. 10 And he besought him much that he would not send them away out of the country. 11 Now there was there on the mountain side a great herd of swine feeding. 12 And they besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. 13 And he gave them leave. And the unclean spirits came out, and entered into the swine: and the herd rushed down the steep into the sea, *in number* about two thousand; and they were choked in the sea. 14 And they that fed them fled, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they came to see what it was that had come to pass. 15 And they come to Jesus, and behold ³him that was possessed with devils sitting, clothed and in his right mind, *even* him that had the legion: and they were afraid. 16 And they that saw it declared unto them how it befell ³him that was possessed with devils, and concerning the swine. 17 And they

29 And behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

30 Now there was afar off from them a herd of many swine feeding. 31 And the ²devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, send us away into the herd of swine. 32 And he said unto them, Go. And they came out, and went into the swine: and behold, the whole herd rushed down the steep into the sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And they that fed them fled, and went away into the city, and told everything, and what was befallen to them that were ¹possessed with devils. 34 And behold, all the city came out to meet Jesus:

and when they saw him,

28 And when he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the Most High God? I beseech thee, torment me not. 29 For he commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For ⁵oftentimes it had seized him: and he was kept under guard, and bound with chains and fetters; and breaking the bands asunder, he was driven of the ⁶devil into the deserts. 30 And Jesus asked him, What is thy name? And he said, Legion; for many ²devils were entered into him. 31 And they intreated him that he would not command them to depart into the abyss. 32 Now there was there a herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they intreated him that he would give them leave to enter into them. And he gave them leave. 33 And the ²devils came out from the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd rushed down the steep into the lake, and were choked. 34 And when they that fed them saw what had come to pass, they fled, and told it in the city and in the country. 35 And they went out to see what had come to pass; and they came to Jesus, and found the man, from whom the ²devils were gone out, sitting, clothed and in his right mind, at the feet of Jesus: and they were afraid.

36 And they that saw it told them how he that was possessed with ²devils was ⁷made whole. 37 And all the people of the country of the

began to beseech him to depart from their borders. 18 And as he was entering into the boat, he that had been possessed with ²devils besought him that he might be with him. 19 And he suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go to thy house unto thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and *how* he had mercy on thee. 20 And he went his way, and began to publish in Decapolis how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvel.^c

they besought *him* that he would depart from their borders.

⁴Gerasenes round about asked him to depart from them; for they were holden with great fear: and he entered into a boat, and returned. 38 But the man from whom the ²devils were gone out prayed him that he might be with him: but he sent him away, saying, 39 Return to thy house, and declare how great things God hath done for thee. And he went his way, publishing throughout the whole city how great things Jesus had done for him.

¹ Or, *demoniacs*.

² Gr. *demons*.

³ Or, *the demoniac*.

⁴ Many ancient authorities read *Gergesenes*; others *Gadarenes*.

⁵ Or, *of a long time*.

⁶ Gr. *demon*.

⁷ Or, *saved*.

^a The long famous instance of "discrepancy" as to the *place* in this narrative has been cleared up in recent years by the decision of textual critics that the correct text in Luke is Gerasenes, as well as in Mark, and by Dr. Thomson's discovery of a ruin on the lake shore, named Khersa (Gerasa). If this village was included (a very natural supposition) in the district belonging to the city of Gadara, some miles south-eastward, then the locality could be described as either in the country of the Gadarenes, or in the country of the Gerasenes.

^b Matthew mentions two demoniacs, Mark and Luke describe one, who was probably the prominent and leading one.

^c Note in Mark the numerous vivid details and fulness of narrative.

§ 67. THE RETURN AND THE HEALING OF JAIRUS' DAUGHTER AND OF THE WOMAN WHO ONLY TOUCHED CHRIST'S GARMENT

Probably Capernaum

Mark 5:21-43

21 And when Jesus had crossed over again in the boat unto the other side, a great multitude was gathered unto him: and he was by the sea.
22 And there cometh

Matt. 9:18-26

Luke 8:40-56

40 And as Jesus returned, the multitude welcomed him; for they were all waiting for him.

one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and seeing him, he falleth at his feet, 23 and beseecheth him much, saying, My little daughter is at the point of death: *I pray thee*, that thou come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be ²made whole, and live. 24 And he went with him; and a great multitude followed him, and they thronged him.

25 And a woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years, 26 and had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse, 27 having heard the things concerning Jesus, came in the crowd behind, and touched his garment.

28 For she said, If I touch but his garments, I shall be ²made whole. 29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of her ⁵plague.

30 And straightway Jesus, perceiving in himself that the power *proceeding* from him had gone forth, turned him about in the crowd, and said, Who touched my garments? 31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me? 32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing. 33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what had been done to her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth. 34 And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath ³made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy ⁵plague.

35 While he yet spake, they come from the ruler of the synagogue's *house*, saying, Thy daughter is dead:

18 While he spake these things unto them,^a behold, there came ¹a ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live. 19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and *so did* his disciples.

20 And behold, a woman, who had an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched the border of his garment: 21 for she said within herself, If I do but touch his garment, I shall be ²made whole.

22 But Jesus turning and seeing her said, Daughter, be of good cheer; thy faith hath ³made thee whole. And the woman was ²made whole from that hour.

41 And behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus' feet, and besought him to come into his house; 42 for he had an only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a dying. But as he went the multitudes thronged him.

43 And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which ⁸had spent all her living upon physicians, and could not be healed of any, came behind him, 44 and touched the border of his garment: and immediately the issue of her blood stanchd.

45 And Jesus said, Who is it that touched me? And when all denied, Peter said, ⁹and they that were with him, Master, the multitudes press thee and crush *thee*. 46 But Jesus said, Some one did touch me: for I perceived that power had gone forth from me. 47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him declared in the presence of all the people for what cause she touched him, and how she was healed immediately. 48 And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath ³made thee whole; go in peace.

why troublest thou
the ⁶Master any further?

36 But Jesus,
⁷not heeding the word
spoken, saith unto
the ruler of the
synagogue, Fear not,
only believe. 37 And he
suffered no man to
follow with him, save
Peter, and James, and
John the brother of
James. 38 And they
come to the house
of the ruler of the
synagogue; and he
beholdeth a tumult,
and *many* weeping
and wailing greatly.
39 And when he was
entered in, he saith
unto them, Why
make ye a tumult,
and weep? the child
is not dead, but sleepeth.
40 And they laughed
him to scorn. But
he, having put them
all forth, taketh the
father of the child
and her mother and
them that were with
him, and goeth in
where the child was.
41 And taking the child
by the hand, he saith
unto her, Talitha cumi;
which is, being
interpreted, Damsel,
I say unto thee, Arise.
42 And straightway the
damsel rose up, and
walked; for she was
twelve years old.
And they were amazed
straightway with
a great amazement.
43 And he charged them
much that no man
should know this: and
he commanded that
something should be
given her to eat.

23 And when Jesus came
into the ruler's house,
and saw the flute-
players, and the
crowd making a
tumult, 24 he said, Give
place: for the damsel
is not dead, but sleepeth.
And they laughed
him to scorn. 25 But
when the crowd was
put forth, he entered

in, and took her by
the hand; and the
damsel arose. 26 And
⁴the fame hereof went
forth into all that
land.

49 While he yet spake,
there cometh one
from the ruler of the
synagogue's *house*,
saying, Thy daughter
is dead; trouble not
the ⁶Master. 50 But
Jesus hearing it,
answered him, Fear not:
only believe, and she
shall be ²made whole.
51 And when he came
to the house, he
suffered not any man to
enter in with him,
save Peter, and John,
and James, and the
father of the maiden
and her mother.
52 And all were weeping,
and bewailing her:
but he said, Weep
not; for she is not
dead, but sleepeth.
53 And they laughed
him to scorn, knowing
that she was dead.
54 But he, taking her by
the hand, called, saying,
Maiden, arise.
55 And her spirit
returned, and she rose
up immediately: and
he commanded that
something be given
her to eat. 56 And her
parents were amazed:
but he charged them
to tell no man what
had been done.

¹ Gr. *one ruler*.

² Or, *saved*.

³ Or *saved thee*.

⁴ Gr. *this fame*.

⁵ Gr. *scourge*.

⁶ Or, *Teacher*.

⁷ Or, *overhearing*.

⁸ Some ancient authorities omit *had spent all her living upon physicians, and*.

⁹ Some ancient authorities omit *and they that were with him*.

^a Broadus felt that the language in Matt. 9:18 compelled him to place 9:18 after 9:17. I do not think so, for "while he spake" may be merely an introductory phrase for a new paragraph. It is best to follow Mark's order, as Luke does, for Matthew is not chronological in this part of his Gospel.

§ 68. HE HEALS TWO BLIND MEN, AND A DUMB DEMONIAIC. A BLASPHEMOUS ACCUSATION

Matt. 9:27-34

27 And as Jesus passed by from thence, two blind men followed him, crying out, and saying, Have mercy on us, thou son of David. 28 And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They say unto him, Yea, Lord. 29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it done unto you. 30 And their eyes were opened. And Jesus ¹strictly charged them, saying, See that no man know it. 31 But they went forth, and spread abroad his fame in all that land.

32 And as they went forth, behold, there was brought to him a dumb man possessed with a ²devil. 33 And when the ²devil was cast out, the dumb man spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel. 34 But the Pharisees said, ³By the prince of the ⁴devils casteth he out ⁴devils.

¹ Or, *sternly*.

² Gr. *demon*.

³ Or, *In*.

⁴ Gr. *demons*.

§ 69. THE LAST^a VISIT TO NAZARETH

Mark 6:1-6

1 And he went out from thence; and he cometh into his own country; and his disciples follow him. 2 And when the sabbath was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and ³many hearing him were astonished, saying, Whence hath this man these things? and, What is the wisdom that is given unto this man, and *what mean* such ¹mighty works wrought by his hands? 3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, and brother of James, and Joses, and Judas, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were ²offended in him. 4 And Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house. 5 And he could there do no ⁴mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them. 6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief.

Matt. 13:54-58

54 And coming into his own country he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these ¹mighty works?

55 Is not this the carpenter's son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judas? 56 And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this man all these things? 57 And they were ²offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house. 58 And he did not many ¹mighty works there because of their unbelief.

¹ Gr. *powers*.

² Gr. *caused to stumble*.

³ Some ancient authorities insert *the*.

⁴ Gr. *power*.

^a There is no sufficient occasion to identify this visit to Nazareth with that described by Luke. That was at the very beginning of the great ministry in Galilee, and this is near its close. The details are quite different. It is perfectly natural that after a long interval he should give the Nazarenes another opportunity to hear his teaching, and to witness miracles, which he would not work for them when demanded, but now voluntarily works in a few cases, so far as their now *wonderful* unbelief left it appropriate.

In Sections 70 to 71 we have the Third Tour of Galilee (Jesus following the Twelve) and the effect on Herod Antipas.

§ 70. THE THIRD TOUR OF GALILEE AFTER INSTRUCTING THE TWELVE AND SENDING THEM FORTH BY TWOS

Mark 6:6-13
6 And he went round about the villages teaching.

7 And he called unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two; and he gave them authority over the unclean spirits;
8 and he charged them

Matt. 9:35 to 11:1
35 And Jesus went about all the cities and the villages,^a teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of disease and all manner of sickness. 36 But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion for them, because they were distressed and scattered, as sheep not having a shepherd [*see Num. 27:17; Ezek. 34:5*].
37 Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few.
38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest.

1 And he called unto him his twelve disciples, and gave them authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of disease and all manner of sickness.
2 Now the names of

Luke 9:1-6

1 And he called the twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all ³devils, and to cure diseases. 2 And he sent them forth to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal ¹⁹the sick. 3 And he

that they should take nothing for *their* journey, save a staff only; no bread, no wallet, no ¹⁷money in their ¹⁸purse; 9 but *to go* shod with sandals: and, *said he*, put not on two coats.

10 And he said unto them, Wheresoever ye enter into a house, there abide till ye depart thence. 11 And whatsoever place

shall not receive you, and they hear you not, as ye go forth thence, shake off the dust that is under your feet for a testimony unto them.

16 Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and ⁵harmless as doves. 17 But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to councils, and in their synagogues they will scourge you; 18 yea and before governors and kings shall ye be brought for my sake, for a testimony to them and to the Gentiles. 19 But when they

the twelve apostles are these: The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the *son* of Zebedee, and John his brother; 3 Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James the *son* of Alphæus, and Thaddæus; 4 Simon the ¹Cananæan, and Judas Iscariot, who also ²betrayed him. 5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and charged them, saying, Go not into *any* way of the Gentiles, and enter not into any city of the Samaritans: 6 but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. 7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. 8 Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, cast out ³devils: freely ye received, freely give. 9 Get you no gold, nor silver, nor brass in your ⁴purses; 10 no wallet for *your* journey, neither two coats, nor shoes, nor staff: for the labourer is worthy of his food.

11 And into whatsoever city or village ye shall enter, search out who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go forth. 12 And as ye enter into the house, salute it. 13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you. 14 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, as ye go forth out of that house or that city, shake off the dust of your feet. 15 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgement, than for that city.

said unto them,

Take nothing for your journey, neither staff, nor wallet, nor bread, nor money; neither have two coats.

4 And into whatsoever house ye enter, there abide, and thence depart. 5 And as many

as receive you not, when ye depart from that city,

shake off the dust from your feet for a testimony against them.

deliver you up, be not anxious how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that hour what ye shall speak. 20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaketh in you. 21 And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the father his child: and children shall rise up against parents, and ⁶cause them to be put to death. 22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved. 23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee into the next: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone through the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

24 A disciple is not above his ⁷master, nor a ⁸servant above his lord. 25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his ⁷master, and the ⁸servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house ⁹Beelzebub, how much more *shall they call* them of his household! 26 Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. 27 What I tell you in the darkness, speak ye in the light: and what ye hear in the ear, proclaim upon the housetops. 28 And be not afraid of them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in ¹⁰hell. 29 Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and not one of them shall fall on the ground without your Father: 30 but the very hairs of your head are all numbered. 31 Fear not therefore; ye are of more value than many sparrows. 32 Every one therefore who shall confess ¹¹me before men, ¹²him will I also confess before my Father which is in heaven. 33 But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

34 Think not that I came to ¹³send peace on the earth: I came not to ¹³send peace, but a sword. 35 For I came to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law: 36 and a man's foes *shall be* they of his own household [*see Micah 7:6*]. 37 He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. 38 And he that doth not take his cross and follow after me, is not worthy of me. 39 He that ¹⁴findeth his ¹⁵life shall lose it; and he that ¹⁶loseth his ¹⁵life for my sake shall find it [*see John 12:25*].

40 He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me [*see John 13:20*]. 41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward. 42 And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

Mark 6:6-13

Matt. 9:35 to 11:1

Luke 9:1-6

12 And they went out, and preached that *men* should repent. 13 And they cast out many ³devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.

1 And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and preach in their cities.

6 And they departed, and went throughout the villages, preaching the gospel, and healing everywhere.

¹ Or, *Zealot*. See [Luke 6:15](#); Acts 1:13.

² Or, *delivered him up*: and so always.

³ Gr. *demons*.

⁴ Gr. *girdles*.

⁵ Or, *simple*.

⁶ Or, *put them to death*.

⁷ Or, *teacher*.

⁸ Gr. *bondservant*.

⁹ Gr. *Beelzebub*: and so elsewhere.

¹⁰ Gr. *Gehenna*.

¹¹ Gr. *in me*.

¹² Gr. *in him*.

¹³ Gr. *cast*.

¹⁴ Or, *found*.

¹⁵ Or, *soul*.

¹⁶ Or, *lost*.

¹⁷ Gr. *brass*.

¹⁸ Gr. *girdle*.

¹⁹ Some ancient authorities omit *the sick*.

^a This is certainly a *second*, and probably a *third* journey about Galilee. Dwell on Matt. 9:35 and 11:1 (end of this section), and try to realize the extent of the Saviour's work in teaching and healing. He "crowded into three short years actions and labours of love that might have adorned a century." (Ro. Hall.)

§ 71. THE GUILTY FEARS OF HEROD ANTIPAS IN TIBERIAS ABOUT JESUS BECAUSE HE HAD BEHEADED THE BAPTIST IN MACHÆRUS

Mark 6:14-29

14 And king Herod heard^a *thereof*; for his name had become known: and ¹he said, John ²the Baptist is risen from the dead, and therefore do these powers work in him. 15 But others said, It is Elijah. And others said, *It is* a prophet, *even* as one of the prophets. 16 But Herod, when he heard *thereof*, said, John, whom I beheaded, he is risen. 17 For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for the sake of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife: for he had married her. 18 For John said unto Herod,^b It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife [*see Lev. 18:16; 20:21*]. 19 And Herodias set herself against him, and desired to kill him; and she could not; 20 for Herod feared John, knowing that he was a righteous man and a holy, and kept him safe. And when he heard him, he ³was much perplexed; and he heard him gladly.

Matt. 14:1-12

1 At that season Herod the tetrarch heard the report concerning Jesus, 2 and said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore do these powers work in him. 3 For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for the sake of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife. 4 For John said unto him, It is not lawful for thee to have her. 5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet.

Luke 9:7-9

7 Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done: and he was much perplexed, because that it was said by some, that John was risen from the dead; 8 and by some, that Elijah had appeared; and by others, that one of the old prophets was risen again. 9 And Herod said, John I beheaded: but who is this, about whom I hear such things? And he sought to see him.

21 And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, and the ⁴high captains, and the chief men of Galilee; 22 and when ⁵the daughter of Herodias herself came in and danced, ⁶she pleased Herod and them that sat at meat with him; and the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee. 23 And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom. 24 And she went out, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John ²the Baptist. 25 And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou forthwith give me in a charger the head of John ²the Baptist. 26 And the king was exceeding sorry; but for the sake of his oaths, and of them that sat at meat, he would not reject her. 27 And straightway the king sent forth a soldier of his guard, and commanded to bring his head: and he went and beheaded him in the prison, 28 and brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel; and the damsel gave it to her mother. 29 And when his disciples heard *thereof*, they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.

6 But when Herod's birthday came, the daughter of Herodias danced in the midst, and pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon he promised with an oath to give her whatsoever she should ask. 8 And she, being put forward by her mother,

saith, Give me here in a charger the head of John the Baptist. 9 And the king was grieved; but for the sake of his oaths, and of them which sat at meat with him, he commanded it to be given; 10 and he sent, and beheaded John in the prison. 11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought it to

her mother. 12 And his disciples came, and took up the corpse, and buried him; and they went and told Jesus.

¹ Some ancient authorities read *they*.

² Gr. *the Baptizer*.

³ Many ancient authorities read *did many things*.

⁴ Or, *military tribunes*. Gr. *chiliarchs*.

⁵ Some ancient authorities read *his daughter Herodias*.

⁶ Or, *it*.

^a Mark's connection shows that Herod Antipas was impressed by the account of miracles which the disciples had wrought, as well as by those of Jesus himself.

^b Josephus (*Antiquities*, Book XVIII, v., 2) says of John that Herod "thought it best, by putting him to death, to prevent any mischief he might cause, and not bring himself into difficulties, by sparing a man who might make him repent of it when it should be too late." Josephus in no wise controverts the picture in Mark where Herodias appears as the one who prods Antipas to put John out of the way to satisfy her resentment against him for his rebuke of her adulterous marriage. Josephus merely presents the public and political aspects of the imprisonment and death of John.

PART VIII THE SPECIAL TRAINING OF THE TWELVE IN DISTRICTS AROUND GALILEE

Probably Passover in A.D. 29^a to near Tabernacles in A.D. 29 or a year earlier (six months from spring to autumn). Just a year from the beginning of this Period till the Crucifixion. Emphasis now on the King of the Kingdom (the Person of the Messiah).

§§ 72-95. *Four separate withdrawals^b from Galilee are given, in §§ [72](#), [78](#), [79](#), [81](#). Notice that in every case he keeps out of Herod's territory, and in every case he goes to the mountains.*

^a If the ministry of Jesus was three and a half years in length. If there were only three passovers in the ministry, then the year would be A.D. 28. This period begins just before a passover ([John 6:4](#)).

^b There are five reasons for the withdrawals from Galilee. He withdraws from the jealousy of Herod Antipas ([§ 71](#)), from the fanaticism of would-be followers in Galilee ([John 6:15](#)), and the hostility of the Jewish rulers; and leaving the hot shores of the Lake of Galilee, he spent the summer in mountain districts around, resting, and *instructing the Twelve*.

§ 72. THE FIRST RETIREMENT. THE TWELVE RETURN, AND JESUS RETIRES WITH THEM BEYOND THE LAKE TO REST. FEEDING OF THE FIVE THOUSAND

Mark 6:30-44	Matt. 14:13-21	Luke 9:10-17	John 6:1-13
30 And the apostles gather themselves together unto Jesus; and they told him all things, whatsoever they had done, and whatsoever they had taught. 31 And he saith unto them, Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while. For there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat. 32 And they went away in the boat to a desert place apart. 33 And <i>the people</i>	13 Now when Jesus heard <i>it</i> , he withdrew from thence in a boat, to a desert place apart: and when the	10 And the apostles, when they were returned, declared unto him what things they had done. And he took them, and withdrew apart to a city called Bethsaida. ^a 11 But the	1 After these things Jesus went away to the other side of the sea of Galilee, which is <i>the sea</i> of Tiberias. 2 And a great multitude

saw them going, and many knew *them*, and they ran there together ¹on foot from all the cities, and outwent them. 34 And he came forth and saw a great multitude, and he had compassion on them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things. 35 And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, The place is desert, and the day is now far spent: 36 send them away, that they may go into the country and villages round about, and buy themselves somewhat to eat. 37 But he answered and said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred ³pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat? 38 And he saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go *and* see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them that all should ²sit down by companies upon the green grass. 40 And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and by fifties. 41 And he took the five loaves and the two fishes,

multitudes heard *thereof*, they followed him ¹on foot from the cities. 14 And he came forth, and saw a great multitude, and he had compassion on them, and healed their sick.

15 And when even was come, the disciples came to him, saying, The place is desert, and the time is already past; send the multitudes away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves food.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They have no need to go away; give ye them to eat.

17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes. 18 And he said, Bring them hither to me. 19 And he commanded the multitudes to ²sit down on the grass;

and he took the five loaves, and the two fishes,

multitudes perceiving it followed him: and he welcomed them, and spake to them of the kingdom of God, and them that had need of healing he healed.

12 And the day began to wear away; and the twelve came, and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages and country round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert

place. 13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat.

And they said, We have no more than five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy food for all this people. 14 For they were about five thousand men. And he said unto his disciples, Make them ²sit down in companies, about fifty each. 15 And they did so, and made them all ²sit down. 16 And he took the five loaves and the two fishes,

followed him, because they beheld the signs which he did on them that were sick. 3 And Jesus went up into the mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

4 Now the pass-over, the feast of the Jews was at hand. 5 Jesus therefore lifting up his eyes, and seeing that a great multitude cometh unto him, saith unto Philip, Whence are we to buy ⁴bread, that these may eat?

6 And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do. 7 Philip answered him, Two hundred ³pennyworth of ⁴bread is not sufficient for them, that every one may take a little. 8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him, 9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two fishes: but what are these among so many? 10 Jesus said, Make the people sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake the loaves; and he gave to the disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all. 42 And they did all eat, and were filled. 43 And they took up broken pieces, twelve basketfuls, and also of the fishes. 44 And they that ate the loaves were five thousand men.

and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake and gave the loaves to the disciples, and the multitudes. 20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up that which remained over of the broken pieces, twelve baskets full. 21 And they that did eat were about five thousand men, beside women and children.

and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake; and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude. 17 And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up that which remained over to them of broken pieces, twelve baskets.

11 Jesus therefore took the loaves; and having given thanks, distributed to them that were set down; likewise also of the fishes as much as they would. 12 And when they were filled, he saith unto his disciples, Gather up the broken pieces which remain over, that nothing be lost. 13 So they gathered them up, and filled twelve baskets with broken pieces from the five barley loaves, which remained over unto them that had eaten.^b

¹ Or, *by land*.

² Gr. *recline*.

³ The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about seventeen cents.

⁴ Gr. *loaves*.

^a The Bethsaida of Luke 9:10 was evidently the eastern Bethsaida, which the Tetrarch Philip had named Bethsaida Julias, while that of [Mark 6:45](#) was the western Bethsaida, near Capernaum. The territory belonging to Bethsaida Julias would naturally extend some distance down the lake.

^b Note that here for the first time John runs parallel with all the synoptic gospels. All four report this incident. See Passion Week.

§ 73. THE PREVENTION OF THE REVOLUTIONARY PURPOSE TO PROCLAIM JESUS KING (A POLITICAL MESSIAH)

Mark 6:45-46
45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to enter into the boat, and to go before *him* unto the other side to Bethsaida, while he himself sendeth the multitude away.
46 And after he had taken leave of them, he departed into the mountain to pray.

Matt. 14:22-23
22 And straightway he constrained the disciples to enter into the boat, and to go before him unto the other side, till he should send the multitudes away.
23 And after he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into the mountain apart to pray:

John 6:14-15
14 When therefore the people saw the ¹sign which he did, they said, This is of a truth the prophet that cometh into the world [*see Deut. 18:15*].
15 Jesus therefore perceiving that they were about to come and take him by force, to make him

and king, withdrew again
when even was come, into the mountain
he was there alone. himself alone.

¹ Some ancient authorities read *signs*.

§ 74. THE PERIL TO THE TWELVE IN THE STORM AT SEA AND CHRIST'S COMING TO THEM ON THE WATER IN THE DARKNESS

Mark 6:47-52	Matt. 14:24-33	John 6:16-21
47 And when even was come, the boat was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land. 48 And seeing them distressed in rowing, for the wind was contrary unto them, about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking on the sea; and he would have passed by them: 49 but they, when they saw him walking on the sea, supposed that it was an apparition, and cried out: 50 for they all saw him, and were troubled. But he straightway spake with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid.	24 But the boat ¹ was now in the midst of the sea, distressed by the waves; for the wind was contrary. 25 And in the fourth watch of the night he came unto them, walking upon the sea. 26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, and they were troubled, saying, It is an apparition; and they cried out for fear. 27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid. 28 And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee upon the waters. 29 And he said, Come. And Peter went down from the boat, and walked upon the waters, ² to come to Jesus. 30 But when he saw the ³ wind, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried out, saying, Lord, save me. 31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and took hold of him, and saith unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?	16 And when evening came, his disciples went down unto the sea; 17 and they entered into a boat, and were going over the sea unto Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus had not yet come to them. 18 And the sea was rising by reason of a great wind that blew. 19 When therefore they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they behold Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the boat: and they were afraid. 20 But he saith unto them, It is I; be not afraid.
51 And he went up unto them into the boat; and the wind ceased: and they were sore	32 And when they were gone up into the boat, the wind ceased. 33 And they that were	21 They were willing therefore to receive him into the boat:

amazed in themselves; in the boat worshipped and straightway
 52 for they understood him, saying, Of the boat was at the
 not concerning the a truth thou art the land whither they
 loaves, but their heart Son of God. were going.
 was hardened.

¹ Some ancient authorities read *was many furlongs distant from the land*.

² Some ancient authorities read *and came*.

³ Many ancient authorities add *strong*.

§ 75. THE RECEPTION AT GENNESARET

Mark 6:53-56

53 And when they had ¹crossed over, they came to the land unto Gennesaret, and moored to the shore. 54 And when they were come out of the boat, straightway *the people* knew him, 55 and ran about that whole region, and began to carry about on their beds those that were sick, where they heard he was. 56 And wheresoever^a he entered, into villages, or into cities, or into the country, they laid the sick in the marketplaces, and besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched ²him were made whole.

Matt. 14:34-36

34 And when they had crossed over, they came to the land, unto Gennesaret.

35 And when the men of that place knew him, they sent unto all that region round about, and brought unto him all that were sick; 36 and they besought him that they might only touch the border of his garment: and as many as touched were made whole.

¹ Or, *crossed over to the land, they came unto Gennesaret*.

² Or, *it*.

^a This general characterization applies to the Galilean work as a whole in Part VII rather than to the precise time at this juncture. But one must allow his imagination to enlarge upon the scope of Christ's work.

§ 76. THE COLLAPSE OF THE GALILEAN CAMPAIGN BECAUSE JESUS WILL NOT CONFORM TO POPULAR MESSIANIC EXPECTATIONS

The next day in the Synagogue in Capernaum. The same crowd that had eaten the Loaves and the Fishes leave Christ in disgust on learning that He is the Bread of Life and not a Political Messiah.

John 6:22-71

22 On the morrow the multitude which stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was none other ¹boat there, save one, and that Jesus entered not with his disciples into the boat, but *that* his disciples went away alone 23 (howbeit there came ²boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they ate the bread after the Lord had given thanks): 24 when the multitude therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they themselves got into the ²boats, and came to Capernaum, seeking Jesus. 25 And when they found him on the other side of the sea, they said

unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither? 26 Jesus answered them and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw signs, but because ye ate of the loaves, and were filled. 27 Work not for the meat which perisheth, but for the meat which abideth unto eternal life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him the Father, *even* God, hath sealed. 28 They said therefore unto him, What must we do, that we may work the works of God? 29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom ³he hath sent. 30 They said therefore unto him, What then doest thou for a sign, that we may see, and believe thee? what workest thou? 31 Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness; as it is written, He gave them bread out of heaven to eat [*see Ex. 16:4, 15; Ps. 78:24; Neh. 9:15*]. 32 Jesus therefore said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, It was not Moses that gave you the bread out of heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread out of heaven. 33 For the bread of God is that which cometh down out of heaven, and giveth life unto the world. 34 They said therefore unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. 35 Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall not hunger, and he that believeth on me shall never thirst. 36 But I said unto you, that ye have seen me, and yet believe not. 37 All that which the Father giveth me shall come unto me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. 38 For I am come down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. 39 And this is the will of him that sent me, that of all that which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. 40 For this is the will of my Father, that every one that beholdeth the Son, and believeth on him, should have eternal life; and ⁴I will raise him up at the last day.

41 The Jews therefore murmured concerning him, because he said, I am the bread which came down out of heaven. 42 And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how doth he now say, I am come down out of heaven? 43 Jesus answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. 44 No man can come to me, except the Father which sent me draw him: and I will raise him up in the last day. 45 It is written in the prophets [*see Isa. 54:13*], And they shall all be taught of God. Every one that hath heard from the Father, and hath learned, cometh unto me. 46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is from God, he hath seen the Father. 47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth hath eternal life. 48 I am the bread of life. 49 Your fathers did eat the manna in the wilderness, and they died. 50 This is the bread which cometh down out of heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. 51 I am the living bread which came down out of heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: yea and the bread which I will give is my flesh, for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore strove one with another, saying, How can this man give us his flesh to eat? 53 Jesus therefore said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man and drink his blood, ye have not life in yourselves. 54 He that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. 55 For my flesh is ⁵meat indeed, and my blood is ⁶drink indeed. 56 He that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood abideth in me, and I in him. 57 As the living Father sent me, and I live because of the Father; so he that eateth me, he also shall live because of me. 58 This is the bread which came down out of heaven: not as the fathers did eat, and died: he that eateth this bread shall live for ever. 59 These things said he in ⁷the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they heard *this*, said, This is a hard saying; who can hear ⁸it? 61 But Jesus knowing in himself that his disciples murmured at this, said unto them, Doth this cause you to stumble? 62 *What* then if ye should behold the Son of man ascending where he was before? 63 It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I have spoken unto you are spirit, and are life. 64 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who it was that should betray him. 65 And he said, For this cause have I said unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it be given unto him of the Father.

66 Upon this many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him. 67 Jesus said therefore unto the twelve, Would ye also go away? 68 Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou ⁹hast the words of eternal life. 69 And we have believed and know that thou art the Holy One of God. 70 Jesus answered them, Did not I choose you the twelve, and one of you is a devil? 71 Now he spake of Judas *the son* of Simon Iscariot, for he it was that should betray him, *being* one of the twelve.

¹ Gr. *little boat*.

² Gr. *little boats*.

³ Or, *he sent*.

⁴ Or, *that I should raise him up*.

⁵ Gr. *true meat*.

⁶ Gr. *true drink*.

⁷ Or, *a synagogue*.

⁸ Or, *him*.

⁹ Or, *hast words*.

him can defile him: but the things which proceed out of the man are those that defile the man.¹¹
17 And when he was entered into the house from the multitude, his disciples asked of him the parable.

18 And
he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Perceive ye not, that whatsoever from without goeth into the man, *it* cannot defile him; 19 because it goeth not into his heart, but into his belly, and goeth out into the draught? *This he said*, making all meats clean. 20 And he said, That which proceedeth out of the man, that defileth the man. 21 For from within, out of the heart of men, ¹²evil thoughts proceed, fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries, 22 covetings, wickednesses, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, railing, pride, foolishness: 23 all these evil things proceed from within, and defile the man.

but that which proceedeth out of the mouth, this defileth the man.

12 Then came the disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were ⁴offended, when they heard this saying? 13 But he answered and said, Every ⁵plant which my heavenly Father planted not, shall be rooted up. 14 Let them alone: they are blind guides. And if the blind guide the blind, both shall fall into a pit. 15 And Peter answered and said unto him, Declare unto us the parable. 16 And he said, Are ye also even yet without understanding? 17 Perceive ye not, that whatsoever goeth into the mouth passeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught? 18 But the things which proceed out of the mouth come forth out of the heart; and they defile the man. 19 For out of the heart come forth evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, railings:

20 these are the things
which defile the man:
but to eat
with unwashen hands defileth
not the man.

¹ Or, *surely die*.

² Some ancient authorities add *or his mother*.

³ Some ancient authorities read *law*.

⁴ Gr. *caused to stumble*.

⁵ Gr. *planting*.

⁶ Or, *common*.

⁷ Or, *up to the elbow*. Gr. *with the fist*.

⁸ Gr. *baptize*. Some ancient authorities read *sprinkle themselves*.

⁹ Gr. *baptizings*.

¹⁰ Many ancient authorities add *and couches*.

¹¹ Many ancient authorities insert ver. 16 *If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear*.

¹² Gr. *thoughts that are evil*.

Mark 7:24-30

24 And from thence he arose, and went away into the borders of Tyre ³and Sidon. And he entered into a house, and would have no man know it: and he could not be hid. 25 But straightway a woman, whose little daughter had an unclean spirit, having heard of him, came and fell down at his feet. 26 Now the woman was a ⁴Greek, a Syrophenician by race. And she besought him that he would cast forth the ¹devil out of her daughter.

27 And he said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children's ²bread and cast it to the dogs. 28 But she answered and saith unto him, Yea, Lord: even the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs. 29 And he said unto her, For this saying go thy way; the ¹devil is gone out of thy daughter. 30 And she went away unto her house, and found the child laid upon the bed, and the ¹devil gone out.

Matt. 15:21-28

21 And Jesus went out thence, and withdrew into the parts of Tyre and Sidon.^a

22 And behold, a Canaanitish woman came out from those borders, and cried, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a ¹devil. 23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth after us. 24 But he answered and said, I was not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel. 25 But she came and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me. 26 And he answered and said, It is not meet to take the children's ²bread and cast it to the dogs. 27 But she said, Yea, Lord: for even the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters' table. 28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it done unto thee even as thou wilt.

And her daughter was healed from that hour.

¹ Gr. *demon*.

² Or, *loaf*.

³ Some ancient authorities omit *and Sidon*.

⁴ Or, *Gentile*.

^a It used to be questioned whether he actually left the land of Israel. Matthew's expression ought to have settled the question, and the corrected text of [Mark 7:31](#) leaves no doubt.

§ 79. THE THIRD WITHDRAWAL NORTH THROUGH PHOENICIA AND EAST TOWARDS HERMON AND SOUTH INTO DECAPOLIS (KEEPING OUT OF THE TERRITORY OF HEROD ANTIPAS) WITH THE HEALING OF THE DEAF AND DUMB MAN AND THE FEEDING OF THE FOUR THOUSAND

Mark 7:31-8:9

31 And again he went out from the borders of Tyre, and came through Sidon unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the borders of Decapolis.^a 32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to lay his hand upon him. 33 And he took him aside from the multitude privately, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spat, and touched his tongue; 34 and looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto

Matt. 15:29-38

29 And Jesus departed thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee; and he went up into the mountain, and sat there.

him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.
 35 And his ears were opened,
 and the bond of his tongue was
 loosed, and he spake plain. 36 And
 he charged them that they should
 tell no man: but the more he
 charged them, so much the more a
 great deal they published it. 37 And
 they were beyond measure
 astonished, saying, He hath done
 all things well: he maketh even
 the deaf to hear, and the dumb
 to speak.

1 In those days, when there was
 again^b a great multitude, and
 they had nothing to eat, he called
 unto him his disciples, and saith
 unto them, 2 I have compassion
 on the multitude, because they
 continue with me now three days,
 and have nothing to eat: 3 and
 if I send them away fasting to
 their home, they will faint in
 the way; and some of them are
 come from far. 4 And his disciples
 answered him, Whence shall
 one be able to fill these men
 with ¹bread here in a desert place?
 5 And he asked them, How many
 loaves have ye? And they said,
 Seven. 6 And he commandeth the
 multitude to sit down on the
 ground: and he took the seven
 loaves, and having given thanks,
 he brake, and gave to his disciples,
 to set before them; and they set
 them before the multitude. 7 And
 they had a few small fishes: and
 having blessed them, he
 commanded to set these also before
 them. 8 And they did eat, and
 were filled: and they took up, of
 broken pieces that remained over,
 seven baskets. 9 And they were
 about four thousand: and he sent
 them away.

30 And there came unto him
 great multitudes, having with them
 the lame, blind, dumb, maimed,
 and many others, and they cast
 them down at his feet; and he
 healed them: 31 insomuch that the
 multitude wondered, when they
 saw the dumb speaking, the
 maimed whole, and the lame
 walking, and the blind seeing: and
 they glorified the God of Israel.
 32 And Jesus called unto him his
 disciples, and said, I have
 compassion on the multitude,
 because they continue with me now
 three days and have nothing to eat:
 and I would not send them away
 fasting, lest haply they faint in
 the way.
 33 And the disciples say
 unto him, Whence should we
 have so many loaves in a desert
 place, as to fill so great a multitude?
 34 And Jesus saith unto them,
 How many loaves have ye? And
 they said, Seven, and a few small
 fishes. 35 And he commanded the
 multitude to sit down on the
 ground; 36 and he took the seven
 loaves and the fishes; and he
 gave thanks and brake, and gave
 to the disciples, and the disciples
 to the multitudes.

And
 they did all eat, and were filled:
 and they took up that which
 remained over of the broken pieces,
 seven baskets full. 38 And they
 that did eat were four thousand
 men, beside women and children.

¹ Gr. *loaves*.

^a Observe how carefully he keeps away from the territory ruled by Herod Antipas. The tetrarch Philip, who governed the districts east of the Lake of Galilee and of the upper Jordan, was a better man than Antipas, and moreover had no cause to feel uneasy about Jesus.

^b It is to be noted that Mark and Matthew give the feeding of the five thousand and of the four thousand. Mark and Matthew likewise report Jesus as referring to both incidents ([Mark 8:19-20 = Matt. 16:9-10](#)). Hence, it is hard to think of a mere confusion in the use of the data. There is no real reason why both incidents could not be true.

§ 80. THE BRIEF VISIT TO MAGADAN (DALMANUTHA) IN GALILEE AND THE SHARP ATTACK BY THE PHARISEES AND THE SADDUCEES (NOTE THEIR APPEARANCE NOW AGAINST JESUS)

Mark 8:10-12

10 And straightway he entered into
 the boat with his disciples, and
 came into the parts of

Matt. 15:39-16:4

39 And he sent away the multitudes,
 and entered into the boat, and
 came into the borders of

Dalmanutha.

11 And the Pharisees came forth, began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek a sign? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation.

Magadan.^a

1 And the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and tempting him^b asked him to shew them a sign from heaven. 2 But he answered and said unto them, ¹When it is evening, ye say, *It will be fair weather: for the heaven is red.* 3 And in the morning, *It will be foul weather to-day: for the heaven is red and lowring.* Ye know how to discern the face of the heaven; but ye cannot *discern* the signs of the times. 4 An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of Jonah [*see Jonah 3:4*]. And he left them, and departed.

¹ The following words, to the end of ver. 3, are omitted by some of the most ancient and other important authorities.

^a The situation of Magadan was unknown to some early students or copyists, as it is to us, and so they changed it to the familiar Magdala, found in our common texts.

^b The moment he returns to Galilee the Jewish leaders begin to attack him.

§ 81. THE FOURTH RETIREMENT TO BETHSAIDA JULIAS IN THE TETRARCHY OF HEROD PHILIP WITH SHARP REBUKE OF THE DULNESS OF THE DISCIPLES ON THE WAY ACROSS AND THE HEALING OF A BLIND MAN IN BETHSAIDA

Mark 8:13-26

13 And he left them, and again entering into *the boat* departed to the other side.
14 And they forgot to take bread; and they had not in the boat with them more than one loaf.
15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod. 16 And they reasoned one with another, ⁴saying. ⁵We have no bread. 17 And Jesus perceiving it saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? do ye not yet perceive, neither understand? have ye your heart hardened? 18 Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember [*see Jer. 5:21; Ezek. 12:2*]? 19 When I brake the five loaves among the five thousand, how many ⁶baskets full of broken pieces took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve. 20 And when the seven among the four thousand, how many ⁶basketfuls of broken pieces took ye up? And they say unto him, Seven. 21 And he said unto them, Do ye not yet understand?
22 And they come unto Bethsaida.^a

Matt. 16:5-12

5 And the disciples came to the other side and forgot to take ¹bread. 6 And Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. 7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, ²We took no ¹bread. 8 And Jesus perceiving it said, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have no ¹bread? 9 Do ye not yet perceive, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many ³baskets ye took up? 10 Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many ³baskets ye took up? 11 How is it that ye do not perceive that I spake not to you concerning ¹bread? But beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. 12 Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of ¹bread, but of the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

And they bring to him a blind man, and beseech him to touch him. 23 And he took hold of the blind man by the hand, and brought him out of the village; and when he had spit on his eyes, and laid his hands upon him, he asked him, Seest thou aught? 24 And he looked up, and said, I see men; for I behold *them* as trees, walking. 25 Then again he laid his hands upon his eyes; and he looked stedfastly, and was restored, and saw all things clearly. 26 And he sent him away to his home, saying, Do not even enter into the village.

¹ Gr. *loaves*.

² Or, It is *because we took no bread*.

³ *Basket* in ver. 9 and 10 represents different Greek words.

⁴ Some ancient authorities read *because they had no bread*.

⁵ Or, It is *because we have no bread*.

⁶ *Basket* in ver. 19 and 20 represents different Greek words.

^a Jesus goes on to the region of Cæsarea Philippi on Mount Hermon, where no hostility had been aroused, and he could quietly instruct the Twelve. He probably remained in that vicinity several months, as this whole period of retirement lasted six months. He was near Bethsaida Julias in the First Retirement and now he stops here again on his way to Cæsarea Philippi. Each of the four retirements is into heathen territory (Ituræa twice, Phœnicia, Decapolis), where Greek influence prevails, and where the Greek language is dominant.

§ 82. NEAR CÆSAREA PHILIPPI JESUS TESTS THE FAITH OF THE TWELVE IN HIS MESSIAHSHIP

Mark 8:27-30
27 And Jesus went forth, and his disciples, into the villages of Cæsarea Philippi: and in the way he asked his disciples, saying unto them, Who do men say that I am? 28 And they told him, saying, John the Baptist: and others, Elijah: but others, One of the prophets. 29 And he asked them, But who say ye that I am? Peter answereth and saith unto him, Thou art the Christ.

Matt. 16:13-20
13 Now when Jesus came into the parts of Cæsarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Who do men say ¹that the Son of man is? 14 And they said, Some *say* John the Baptist; some, Elijah: and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets. 15 He saith unto them, But who say ye that I am? 16 And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ,^a the Son of the living God. 17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-Jonah: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee,

Luke 9:18-21
18 And it came to pass, as he was praying alone, the disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Who do the multitudes say that I am? 19 And they answering said, John the Baptist; but others *say*, Elijah; and others, that one of the old prophets is risen again. 20 And he said unto them, But who say ye that I am? And Peter answering said, The Christ of God.

but my Father which is in heaven. 18 And I also say unto thee, that thou art ²Peter, and upon this ³rock I will build^b my church [*see Ps. 89:4, 26, 38, 48*]; and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it. 19 I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

20 Then charged he the disciples that they should tell no man that he was the Christ. 21 But he charged them, and commanded *them* to tell this to no man;

¹ Many ancient authorities read *that I the Son of man am*. See Mark 8:27; Luke 9:18.

² Gr. *Petros*.

³ Gr. *petra*.

^a Some understand ver. 16f. as showing that they had never before believed him to be the Messiah, and so hold that the other Gospels here utterly conflict with John, who represents the first disciples (§§ 28, 35) as believing Jesus to be the Messiah. But it is easy to suppose that their early faith in his Messiahship was shaken by his continued failure to gather armies and set up the expected temporal kingdom, and while still believing him to have a divine mission they had questioned whether he was the Messiah, as John the Baptist did in prison (§ 57). Observe that in Matthew and Luke he long before this time distinctively *implied* that he was the Messiah, in response to the Forerunner's inquiries (§ 57). Besides, at the Baptism and the Temptation, the Synoptic Gospels represent Jesus as the Son of God.

^b It is interesting to note that the imagery employed by Jesus here all appears in Ps. 89, a Messianic Psalm built on 2 Sam. 7. Thus note "build" in Ps. 89:4, "rock" in 89:26, "anointed" in 89:38, "the power of Sheol" in 89:48, and the Psalm discusses the perpetuity of the Davidic throne (Kingdom). Jesus applies this imagery to the spiritual Kingdom that He is building.

§ 83. JESUS DISTINCTLY FORETELLS THAT HE, THE MESSIAH, WILL BE REJECTED AND KILLED, AND WILL RISE THE THIRD DAY

Mark 8:31-37	Matt. 16:21-26	Luke 9:22-25
<p>31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders, and the chief priests, and the scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again. 32 And he spake the saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him. 33 But he turning about, and seeing his disciples, rebuked Peter, and</p>	<p>21 From that time began ¹Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised up. 22 And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, ²Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall never be unto thee. 23 But he turned,</p>	<p>22 saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised up.</p>

<p>saith, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou mindest not the things of God, but the things of men. 34 And he called unto him the multitude with his disciples, and said unto them, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 35 For whosoever would save his ³life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his ³life for my sake and the gospel's shall save it. 36 For what doth it profit a man, to gain the whole world, and forfeit his ³life? 37 For what should a man give in exchange for his ³life?</p>	<p>and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art a stumbling-block unto me: for thou mindest not the things of God, but the things of men. 24 Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. 25 For whosoever would save his ³life shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his ³life for my sake shall find it. 26 For what shall a man be profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and forfeit his ³life? or what shall a man give in exchange for his ³life?</p>	<p>23 And he said unto all, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. 24 For whosoever would save his ³life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his ³life for my sake, the same shall save it. 25 For what is a man profited, if he gain the whole world, and lose or forfeit his own self?</p>
--	---	---

¹ Some ancient authorities read *Jesus Christ*.

² Or, God *have mercy on thee*.

³ Or, *soul*.

§ 84. THE COMING OF THE SON OF MAN IN THAT GENERATION

<p>Mark 8:38-9:1 38 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of man also shall be ashamed of him, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels. 1 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There be some here of them that stand <i>by</i>, which shall in no wise taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God come with power.</p>	<p>Matt. 16:27-28 27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then shall he render unto every man according to his ¹deeds [<i>see Ps. 62:12; Prov. 24:12</i>]. 28 Verily I say unto you, There be some of them that stand here, which shall in no wise taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.</p>	<p>Luke 9:26-27 26 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in his own glory, and <i>the glory</i> of the Father, and of the holy angels. 27 But I tell you of a truth, There be some of them that stand here, which shall in no wise taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God.</p>
---	--	---

¹ Gr. *doing*.

**§ 85. THE TRANSFIGURATION OF JESUS ON A MOUNTAIN (PROBABLY HERMON^a)
NEAR CÆSAREA PHILIPPI**

Mark 9:2-8
2 And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and bringeth them up into a high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them: 3 and his garments became glistening, exceeding white; so as no fuller on earth can whiten them. 4 And there appeared unto them Elijah with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And Peter answereth and saith to Jesus, Rabbi, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three ¹tabernacles,^b one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah. 6 For he wist not what to answer; for they became sore afraid. 7 And there came a cloud overshadowing them: and there came a voice out of the cloud, This is my beloved Son: hear ye him [*see Deut. 18:15; Isa. 42:1; Ps. 2:7*].^c

8 And suddenly looking round about, they saw no one any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

Matt. 17:1-8
1 And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into a high mountain apart: 2 and he was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the sun, and his garments became white as the light. 3 And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elijah talking with him.

4 And Peter answered, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, I will make here three ¹tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah. 5 While he was yet speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him. 6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid. 7 And Jesus came and touched them and said, Arise, and be not afraid. 8 And lifting up their eyes, they saw no one, save Jesus only.

Luke 9:28-36
28 And it came to pass about eight days after these sayings, he took with him Peter and John and James, and went up into the mountain to pray. 29 And as he was praying, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment *became* white *and* dazzling. 30 And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elijah; 31 who appeared in glory, and spake of his ²decease which he was about to accomplish at Jerusalem. 32 Now Peter and they that were with him, were heavy with sleep: but ³when they were fully awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him. 33 And it came to pass, as they were parting from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three ¹tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah: not knowing what he said. 34 And while he said these things, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared as they entered into the cloud. 35 And a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is ⁴my Son, my chosen: hear ye him. 36 And when the voice ⁵came, Jesus was found alone.

¹ Or, *booths*.

² Or, *departure*.

³ Or, *having remained awake*.

⁴ Many ancient authorities read *my beloved Son*. See Matt. 17:5; Mark 9:7.

⁵ Or, *was past*.

^a The tradition which places the Transfiguration on Mount Tabor is beyond question false.

^b Probably not long before the feast of tabernacles (near end of September) and Peter may have meant that they celebrate the feast on the mountains instead of going to Jerusalem.

^c See [§ 24](#) for similar language at the Baptism of Jesus.

§ 86. THE PUZZLE OF THE THREE DISCIPLES ABOUT THE RESURRECTION AND ABOUT ELIJAH ON THEIR WAY DOWN THE MOUNTAIN

Mark 9:9-13	Matt. 17:9-13	Luke 9:36
9 And as they were coming down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, save when the Son of man should have risen again from the dead.	9 And as they were coming down from the mountain, Jesus commanded them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen from the dead.	36 And they held their peace, and told no man in those days any of the things which they had seen.
10 And they kept the saying, questioning among themselves what the rising again from the dead should mean. 11 And they asked him, saying, ¹ The scribes say that Elijah must first come.	10 And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes that Elijah must first come [<i>see Mal. 4:5-6</i>]? 11 And he answered and said, Elijah indeed cometh, and shall restore all things: 12 but I say unto you, that Elijah is come already, ^a and they knew him not, but did unto him whatsoever they listed [<i>see 1 Kings 19:2, 10</i>]. Even so shall the Son of man also suffer of them. 13 Then understood the disciples that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.	
12 And he said unto them, Elijah indeed cometh first, and restoreth all things: and how is it written of the Son of man, that he should suffer many things and be set at nought? 13 But I say unto you, that Elijah is come, and they have also done unto him whatsoever they listed, even as it is written of him.		

¹ Or, How is it *that the scribes say ... come?*

^a The Baptist's disclaimer about being Elijah ([John 1:21](#)) means only that he was not Elijah in person come back to earth according to popular expectation.

§ 87. THE DEMONIAK BOY, WHOM THE DISCIPLES COULD NOT HEAL

In the region of Cæsarea Philippi

14 And when they came to the disciples, they saw a great multitude about them, and scribes questioning with them. 15 And straightway all the multitude, when they saw him, were greatly amazed, and running to him saluted him. 16 And he asked them, What question ye with them? 17 And one of the multitude answered him, ³Master, I brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit; 18 and wheresoever it taketh him, it ⁴dasheth him down: and he foameth, and grindeth his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast it out; and they were not able. 19 And he answereth them and saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I bear with you? bring him unto me. 20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit ⁵tare him grievously; and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming. 21 And he asked his father, How long time is it since this hath come unto him? And he said, From a child. 22 And oft-times it hath cast him both into the fire and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do anything, have compassion on us, and help us. 23 And Jesus said unto him, If thou canst! All things are possible to him that believeth. 24 Straightway the father of the child cried out, and said⁶, I believe; help thou mine unbelief. 25 And when Jesus saw that a multitude came running together, he rebuked the unclean spirit,

14 And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a man, kneeling to him, and saying, 15 Lord, have mercy on my son: for he is epileptic, and suffereth grievously: for oft-times he falleth into the fire, and oft-times into the water. 16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 And Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I bear with you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked him; and the ¹devil

37 And it came to pass, on the next day, when they were come down from the mountain, a great multitude met him.

38 And behold, a man from the multitude cried, saying, ³Master, I beseech thee to look upon my son; for he is mine only child: 39 and behold, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out; and it ⁹teareth him that he foameth, and it hardly departeth from him, bruising him sorely. 40 And I besought thy disciples to cast it out; and they could not. 41 And Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and bear with you? bring hither thy son. 42 And as he was yet a coming, the ¹devil ¹⁰dashed him down, and ⁵tare *him* grievously.

But Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit,

saying unto him,
Thou dumb and deaf
spirit, I command
thee, come out of
him, and enter no
more into him. 26 And
having cried out, and
⁵torn him much, he
came out: and *the
child* became as one
dead; insomuch that
the more part said,
He is dead. 27 But
Jesus took him by the
hand, and raised him
up; and he arose.
28 And when he was
come into the house,
his disciples asked
him privately, ⁷saying,
We could not cast
it out. 29 And he said
unto them, This kind
can come out by
nothing, save by
prayer.⁸

went out from him:
and the boy was
cured from that hour.

and healed the boy,
and gave him back
to his father. 43 And
they were all
astonished at the
majesty of God.

19 Then came the
disciples to Jesus apart,
and said, Why could
not we cast it out?
20 And he saith unto
them, Because of
your little faith: for
verily I say unto you,
If ye have faith as a
grain of mustard seed,
ye shall say unto
this mountain, Remove
hence to yonder
place; and it shall
remove; and nothing
shall be impossible
unto you.²

¹ Gr. *demon*.

² Many authorities, some ancient, insert ver. 21 *But this kind goeth not out save by prayer and fasting*. See Mark 9:29.

³ Or, *Teacher*.

⁴ Or, *rendeth him*.

⁵ Or, *convulsed*.

⁶ Many ancient authorities add *with tears*.

⁷ Or, How is it *that we could not cast it out?*

⁸ Many ancient authorities add *and fasting*.

⁹ Or, *convulseth*.

¹⁰ Or, *rent him*.

§ 88. RETURNING PRIVATELY THROUGH GALILEE, HE AGAIN FORETELLS HIS DEATH AND RESURRECTION

Mark 9:30-32
30 And they went
forth from thence,
and passed through
Galilee; and he would
not that any man
should know it. 31 For

Matt. 17:22-23
22 And while they

Luke 9:43-45
43 But while all
were marvelling at
all the things which he
did, he said unto his
disciples, 44 Let these

<p>he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered up into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and when he is killed, after three days he shall rise again. ³² But they understood not the saying,</p>	<p>¹abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men; ²³ and they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised up. And they were exceeding sorry.</p>	<p>words sink into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men.</p>
---	---	---

and
were afraid to ask
him.

⁴⁵ But
they understood not
this saying, and it
was concealed from
them, that they
should not perceive
it: and they were
afraid to ask him
about this saying.

¹ Some ancient authorities read *were gathering themselves together*.

The season of retirement from Galilee is now ended (§§ 72-88). The remaining events at this time (§§ 89-95) probably occupied only a few days.

§ 89. JESUS, THE MESSIAH, PAYS THE HALF-SHEKEL FOR THE TEMPLE

Capernaum

Matt. 17:24-27

²⁴ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received the ¹half-shekel came to Peter, and said, Doth not your ²master pay the ¹half-shekel [*see Ex. 30:11-15*]? ²⁵ He saith, Yea. And when he came into the house, Jesus spake first to him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? the kings of the earth, from whom do they receive toll or tribute? from their sons, or from strangers? ²⁶ And when he said, From strangers, Jesus said unto him, Therefore the sons are free. ²⁷ But, lest we cause them to stumble, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a ³shekel: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

¹ Gr. *didrachma*.

² Or, *teacher*.

³ Gr. *stater*.

§ 90. THE TWELVE CONTEND AS TO WHO SHALL BE THE GREATEST UNDER THE MESSIAH'S REIGN. HIS SUBJECTS MUST BE CHILDLIKE

Capernaum

Mark 9:33-37

33 And they came to Capernaum: and when he was in the house he asked them, What were ye reasoning in the way?

34 But they held their peace: for they had disputed one with another in the way, who *was* the ¹greatest.

35 And he sat down, and called the twelve; and he saith unto them, If any man would be first, he shall be last of all, and minister of all. 36 And he took a little child, and set him in the midst of them: and taking him in his arms, he said unto them,

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such little children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever receiveth me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

Matt. 18:1-5

1 In that hour came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who then is ¹greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

2 And he called to him a little child, and set him in the midst of them, ³ and said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye turn, and become as little children, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is the ¹greatest in the kingdom of heaven. 5 And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me:

Luke 9:46-48

46 And there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be ¹greatest.

47 But when Jesus saw the reasoning of their heart, he took a little child, and set him by his side, ⁴⁸ and said unto them,

Whosoever shall receive this little child in my name receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me receiveth him that sent me: for he that is ²least among you all, the same is great.

¹ Gr. *greater*.

² Gr. *lesser*.

§ 91. THE MISTAKEN ZEAL OF THE APOSTLE JOHN REBUKED BY JESUS IN PERTINENT PARABLES

Capernaum

Mark 9:38-50

38 John said unto him, ⁷Master, we saw one casting out ⁸devils in thy name: and we forbade him, because he followed not us.

39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a ⁹mighty work in my name, and be able quickly to speak evil

Matt. 18:6-14

49 And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out ⁸devils in thy name; and we forbade him, because he followeth not with us. 50 But Jesus said unto him, Forbid *him* not: for he that is not against you is for you.

of me. 40 For he that is not against us is for us. 41 For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink, ¹⁰because ye are Christ's, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

42 And whosoever shall cause one of these little ones that believe ¹¹on me to stumble, it were better for him if ^{2a}a great millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

43 And if thy hand cause thee to stumble, cut it off: it is good for thee to enter into life maimed, rather than having thy two hands to go into ¹²hell, into the unquenchable fire.¹³ 45 And if thy foot cause thee to stumble, cut it off: it is good for thee to enter into life halt, rather than having thy two feet to be cast into ¹²hell. 47 And if thine eye cause thee to stumble, cast it out: it is good for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into ¹²hell; 48 where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched [see *Isa. 66:24*]. 49 For every one shall be salted with fire¹⁴ [see *Lev. 2:13*]. 50 Salt is good: but if the salt have lost its saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace one with another.

6 but whoso shall cause one of these little ones which believe on me to stumble, it is profitable for him that ^{2a}a great millstone should be hanged about his neck, and *that* he should be sunk in the depth of the sea. 7 Woe unto the world because of occasions of stumbling! for it must needs be that the occasions come; but woe to that man through whom the occasion cometh! 8 And if thy hand or thy foot causeth thee to stumble, cut it off, and cast it from thee: it is good for thee to enter into life maimed or halt, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into the eternal fire.

9 And if thine eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is good for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into the ³hell of fire.

10 See that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.⁴ 12 How think ye? if any man have a hundred sheep,^a and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and go unto the mountains, and seek that which goeth astray? 13 And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth over it more than over the

ninety and nine which
have not gone astray.
14 Even so it is not
5the will of 6your Father
which is in heaven, that
one of these little ones
should perish.

¹ Gr. *greater*.

² Gr. *a millstone turned by an ass*.

³ Gr. *Gehenna of fire*.

⁴ Many authorities, some ancient, insert ver. 11 *For the Son of man came to save that which was lost*. See [Luke 19:10](#).

⁵ Gr. *a thing willed before your father*.

⁶ Some ancient authorities read *my*.

⁷ Or, *Teacher*.

⁸ Gr. *demons*.

⁹ Gr. *power*.

¹⁰ Gr. *in name that ye are*.

¹¹ Many ancient authorities omit *on me*.

¹² Gr. *Gehenna*.

¹³ Ver. 44 and 46 (which are identical with ver. 48) are omitted by the best ancient authorities.

¹⁴ Many ancient authorities add *and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt*. See Lev. 2:13.

¹⁵ Gr. *lesser*.

^a Parable of the Lost Sheep.

§ 92. RIGHT TREATMENT OF A BROTHER WHO HAS SINNED AGAINST ONE, AND DUTY OF PATIENTLY FORGIVING A BROTHER (PARABLE OF THE UNMERCIFUL SERVANT)

Matt. 18:15-35

15 And if thy brother sin ¹against thee, go, shew him his fault between thee and him alone: if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. 16 But if he hear *thee* not, take with thee one or two more, that at the mouth of two witnesses or three every word may be established [*see Deut. 19:15*]. 17 And if he refuse to hear them, tell it unto the ²church: and if he refuse to hear the ²church also, let him be unto thee as the Gentile and the publican. 18 Verily I say unto you, What things soever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and what things soever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. 19 Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. 20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 Then came Peter, and said to him, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? until seven times? 22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times; but, Until ³seventy times seven. 23 Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened^a unto a certain king, which would make a reckoning with his ⁴servants. 24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand ⁵talents. 25 But forasmuch as he had not *wherewith* to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. 26 The ⁶servant therefore fell down and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. 27 And the lord of that ⁶servant, being moved with compassion, released him, and forgave him the ⁷debt. 28 But that ⁶servant went out, and

found one of his fellow-servants, which owed him a hundred ^apence: and he laid hold on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay what thou owest. 29 So his fellow-servant fell down and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee. 30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay that which was due. 31 So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were exceeding sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. 32 Then his lord called him unto him, and saith unto him, Thou wicked ^eservant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou besoughtest me: 33 shouldst not thou also have had mercy on thy fellow-servant, even as I had mercy on thee?^b 34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due. 35 So shall also my heavenly Father do unto you, if ye forgive not every one his brother from your hearts.

¹ Some ancient authorities omit *against thee*.

² Or, *congregation*.

³ Or, *seventy times and seven*.

⁴ Gr. *bondservants*.

⁵ This talent was probably worth about \$1200.

⁶ Gr. *bondservant*.

⁷ Or, *loan*.

⁸ The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about seventeen cents.

^a Parable of the Unforgiving Servant.

^b The king forgave the servant \$1,200,000; the servant refused to forgive \$17. We might say in round numbers, a million, and ten dollars.

§ 93. THE MESSIAH'S FOLLOWERS MUST GIVE UP EVERYTHING FOR HIS SERVICE

Matt. 8:19-22

19 And there came ¹a scribe, and said unto him, ²Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. 20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the heaven *have* ³nest; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head. 21 And another of the disciples saith unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. 22 But Jesus saith unto him, Follow me; and leave the dead to bury their own dead.

Luke 9:57-62

57 And as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. 58 And Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the heaven *have* ³nest; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head. 59 And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. 60 But he said unto him, Leave the dead to bury their own dead; but go thou and publish abroad the kingdom of God. 61 And another also said, I will follow thee, Lord; but first suffer me to bid farewell to them that are at my house. 62 But Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

¹ Gr. *one scribe*.

² Or, *Teacher*.

³ Gr. *lodging-places*.

**§ 94. THE UNBELIEVING BROTHERS OF JESUS COUNSEL HIM TO EXHIBIT HIMSELF
IN JUDEA, AND HE REJECTS THE ADVICE**

John 7:2-9

2 Now the feast of the Jews, the feast of tabernacles, was at hand. 3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may behold thy works which thou doest. 4 For no man doeth anything in secret, ¹and himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou doest these things, manifest thyself to the world. 5 For even his brethren did not believe on him. 6 Jesus therefore saith unto them, My time is not yet come; but your time is alway ready. 7 The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that its works are evil. 8 Go ye up unto the feast: I go not up ²yet unto this feast; because my time is not yet fulfilled. 9 And having said these things unto them, he abode *still* in Galilee.

¹ Some ancient authorities read *and seeketh it to be known openly*.

² Many ancient authorities omit *yet*.

§ 95. HE GOES PRIVATELY TO JERUSALEM THROUGH SAMARIA

Luke 9:51-56

51 And it came to pass, when the days ¹were well-nigh come that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem,^a 52 and sent messengers before his face: and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. 53 And they did not receive him, because his face was *as though he were* going to Jerusalem. 54 And when his disciples James and John saw *this*, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we bid fire to come down from heaven, and consume them² [*see 2 Kings 1:10-12*]? 55 But he turned, and rebuked them³. 56 And they went to another village.

John 7:10

10 But when his brethren were gone up unto the feast, then went he also up, not publicly, but as it were in secret.

¹ Gr. *were being fulfilled*.

² Many ancient authorities add, *even as Elijah did*.

³ Some ancient authorities add, *and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of*. Some, but fewer, add also *For the Son of man came not to destroy men's lives, but to save them*.

^a See [note 10](#) at end of Harmony for the combination of Luke and John and the three journeyings in Luke toward Jerusalem.

(Probably Tabernacles to Dedication, about three months, in A.D. 29 or 28 if Ministry only two and a half years in length)

This ministry is given only by John and Luke. John gives the Jerusalem ministry and Luke that in the country of Judea. §§ 96-111.

§ 96. THE COMING OF JESUS TO THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES CREATES INTENSE EXCITEMENT CONCERNING THE MESSIAHSHIP

The attempt of the rulers (the Jews, the chief priests, and Pharisees) to arrest him. Division of sentiment in the Galilean multitude at the feast. Impressions of the Jerusalem populace and the Roman officers and of Nicodemus.

John 7:11-52

11 The Jews therefore sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he? 12 And there was much murmuring among the multitudes concerning him: some said, He is a good man; others said, Not so, but he leadeth the multitude astray. 13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him for fear of the Jews.

14 But when it was now the midst of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. 15 The Jews therefore marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned? 16 Jesus therefore answered them, and said, My teaching is not mine, but his that sent me. 17 If any man willeth to do his will, he shall know of the teaching, whether it be of God, or *whether* I speak from myself. 18 He that speaketh from himself seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh the glory of him that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him. 19 Did not Moses give you the law, and *yet* none of you doeth the law? Why seek ye to kill me? 20 The multitude answered, Thou hast a ¹devil: who seeketh to kill thee? 21 Jesus answered and said unto them, I did one work, and ye all ²marvel. 22 For this cause hath Moses given you circumcision (not that it is of Moses, but of the fathers); and on the sabbath ye circumcise a man [*see Gen. 17:9-14; Lev. 12:1-3*]. 23 If a man receiveth circumcision on the sabbath, that the law of Moses may not be broken; are ye wroth with me, because I made a man every whit whole on the sabbath? 24 Judge not according to appearance, but judge righteous judgement.

25 Some therefore of them of Jerusalem said, Is not this he whom they seek to kill? 26 And lo, he speaketh openly, and they say nothing unto him. Can it be that the rulers indeed know that this is the Christ? 27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when the Christ cometh, no one knoweth whence he is. 28 Jesus therefore cried in the temple, teaching and saying, Ye both know me, and know whence I am; and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. 29 I know him; because I am from him, and he sent me. 30 They sought therefore to take him: and no man laid his hand on him, because his hour was not yet come. 31 But of the multitude many believed on him; and they said, When the Christ shall come, will he do more signs than those which this man hath done? 32 The Pharisees heard the multitude murmuring these things concerning him; and the chief priests and the Pharisees sent officers to take him. 33 Jesus therefore said, Yet a little while am I with you, and I go unto him that sent me. 34 Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, ye cannot come. 35 The Jews therefore said among themselves, Whither will this man go that we shall not find him? will he go unto the Dispersion ³among the Greeks, and teach the Greeks? 36 What is this word that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, ye cannot come?

37 Now on the last day, the great *day* of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. 38 He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. 39 But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believed on him were to receive: ⁴for the Spirit was not yet *given*; because Jesus was not yet glorified. 40 *Some* of the multitude therefore, when they heard these words, said, This is of a truth the prophet. 41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, What, doth the Christ come out of Galilee? 42 Hath not the scripture said that the Christ cometh of the seed of David, and from Bethlehem [*see 2 Sam. 7:12, 17; Mic. 5:2*], the village where David was? 43 So there arose a division in the multitude because of him. 44 And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.

45 The officers therefore came to the chief priests^a and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why did ye not bring him? 46 The officers answered, Never man so spake. 47 The Pharisees therefore answered them, Are ye also led astray? 48 Hath any of the rulers believed on him, or of the Pharisees? 49 But this multitude which knoweth not the law are accursed. 50 Nicodemus saith unto them (he that came to him before, being one of them), 51 Doth our law judge a man, except

it first hear from himself and know what he doeth? 52 They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and ⁵see that out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

¹ Gr. *demon*.

² Or, *marvel because of this. Moses hath given you circumcision*.

³ Gr. *of*.

⁴ Some ancient authorities read *for the Holy Spirit was not yet given*.

⁵ Or, *see: for out of Galilee etc*.

^a The Sanhedrin included both Sadducees (chief priests) and Pharisees. Nicodemus was a member of the Sanhedrin and a Pharisee. Now both parties in the Sanhedrin were united against Jesus and the purpose was to bring Jesus before the Sanhedrin for trial.

§ 97. STORY OF AN ADULTERESS BROUGHT TO JESUS FOR JUDGMENT

John 7:53 to 8:11^a

53 ¹[And they went every man unto his own house: 1 but Jesus went unto the mount of Olives. 2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them. 3 And the scribes and the Pharisees bring a woman taken in adultery; and having set her in the midst, 4 they say unto him, ²Master, this woman hath been taken in adultery, in the very act. 5 Now in the law Moses commanded us to stone such [*see Lev. 20:10; Deut. 22:22-24*]: what then sayest thou of her? 6 And this they said, ³tempting him, that they might have *whereof* to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground. 7 But when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her. 8 And again he stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground. 9 And they, when they heard it, went out one by one, beginning from the eldest, *even* unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman, where she was, in the midst. 10 And Jesus lifted up himself, and said unto her, Woman, where are they? did no man condemn thee? 11 And she said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said, Neither do I condemn thee: go thy way; from henceforth sin no more.]

¹ Most of the ancient authorities omit John 7:53-8:11. Those which contain it vary much from each other.

² Or, *Teacher*.

³ Or, *trying*.

^a This paragraph can no longer be considered a part of the Gospel of John, but it is in all probability a true story of Jesus, very likely drawn by early students from the collection of Papias, published about A.D. 140. See Hovey on John (American Comm. on N. T.). Observe that without it [§ 98](#) goes right on after [§ 96](#).

§ 98. AFTER THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES IN THE TEMPLE JESUS ANGERS THE PHARISEES BY CLAIMING TO BE THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD

John 8:12-20

12 Again therefore Jesus spake unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in the darkness, but shall have the light of life. 13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest witness of thyself; thy witness is not true. 14 Jesus answered and said unto them, Even if I bear witness of myself, my witness is true; for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye know not whence I come, or whither I go. 15 Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man. 16 Yea and if I judge, my judgement is true; for I am not alone, but I and the Father that

sent me. 17 Yea and in your law it is written, that the witness of two men is true [see *Deut. 17:6; 19:15*]. 18 I am he that beareth witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me. 19 They said therefore unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye know neither me, nor my Father: if ye knew me, ye would know my Father also. 20 These words spake he in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man took him; because his hour was not yet come.

§ 99. THE PHARISEES ATTEMPT TO STONE JESUS WHEN HE EXPOSES THEIR SINFULNESS

Jerusalem, probably in the Temple

John 8:21-59

21 He said therefore again unto them, I go away, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sin: whither I go, ye cannot come. 22 The Jews therefore said, Will he kill himself, that he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come? 23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. 24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for except ye believe that ¹I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins. 25 They said therefore unto him, Who art thou? Jesus said unto them, ²Even that which I have also spoken unto you from the beginning. 26 I have many things to speak and to judge concerning you: howbeit he that sent me is true; and the things which I heard from him, these speak I ³unto the world. 27 They perceived not that he spake to them of the Father. 28 Jesus therefore said, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that ⁴I am *he*, and *that* I do nothing of myself, but as the Father taught me, I speak these things. 29 And he that sent me is with me; he hath not left me alone; for I do always the things that are pleasing to him. 30 As he spake these things, many believed on him.

31 Jesus therefore said to those Jews which had believed him, If ye abide in my word, *then* are ye truly my disciples; 32 and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. 33 They answered unto him, We be Abraham's seed, and have never yet been in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free? 34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Every one that committeth sin is the bondservant of sin. 35 And the bondservant abideth not in the house for ever: the son abideth for ever. 36 If therefore the Son shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. 37 I know that ye are Abraham's seed; yet ye seek to kill me, because my word ⁵hath not free course in you. 38 I speak the things which I have seen with ⁶my Father: and ye also do the things which ye heard from *your* father. 39 They answered and said unto him, Our Father is Abraham. Jesus saith unto them, If ye ⁷were Abraham's children, ⁸ye would do the works of Abraham. 40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I heard from God: this did not Abraham. 41 Ye do the works of your father. They said unto him, We were not born of fornication; we have one Father, *even* God. 42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I came forth and am come from God; for neither have I come of myself, but he sent me. 43 Why do ye not ⁹understand my speech? *Even* because ye cannot hear my word. 44 Ye are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts of your father it is your will to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and ¹⁰stood not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. ¹¹When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father thereof. 45 But because I say the truth, ye believe me not. 46 Which of you convicteth me of sin? If I say truth, why do ye not believe me? 47 He that is of God heareth the words of God: for this cause ye hear *them* not, because ye are not of God. 48 The Jews answered and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a ¹²devil? 49 Jesus answered, I have not a ¹²devil; but I honour my Father, and ye dishonour me. 50 But I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth. 51 Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my word, he shall never see death. 52 The Jews said unto him, Now we know that thou hast a ¹²devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my word, he shall never taste of death. 53 Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself? 54 Jesus answered, If I glorify myself, my glory is nothing: it is my Father that glorifieth me; of whom ye say, that he is your God; 55 and ye have not known him: but I know him; and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be like unto you, a liar: but I know him, and keep his word. 56 Your father Abraham rejoiced ¹³to see my day; and he saw it, and was glad. 57 The Jews therefore said unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? 58 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham ¹⁴was, I am. 59 They took up stones therefore to cast at him: but Jesus ¹⁵hid himself, and went out of the temple¹⁶.

¹ Or, *I am*.

² Or, How is it *that I even speak to you at all?*

³ Gr. *into*.

⁴ Or, *I am*. Or *I am* he: *and I do*.

⁵ Or, *hath no place in you*.

⁶ Or, *the Father: do ye also therefore the things which ye heard from the Father*.

⁷ Gr. *are*.

⁸ Some ancient authorities read *ye do the works of Abraham*.

⁹ Or, *know*.

¹⁰ Some ancient authorities read *standeth*.

¹¹ Or, *When one speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for his father also is a liar*.

¹² Gr. *demon*.

¹³ Or, *that he should see*.

¹⁴ Gr. *was born*.

¹⁵ Or, *was hidden, and went etc*.

¹⁶ Many ancient authorities add *and going through the midst of them went his way, and so passed by*.

§ 100. JESUS HEALS A MAN BORN BLIND WHO OUTWITS THE PHARISEES. THE RULERS FORBID THE RECOGNITION OF JESUS AS THE MESSIAH. THE CONVERSION OF THE HEALED MAN

Jerusalem

John 9:1-41

1 And as he passed by, he saw a man blind from his birth. 2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Rabbi, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he should be born blind? 3 Jesus answered, Neither did this man sin, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. 4 We must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. 5 When I am in the world, I am the light of the world. 6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and anointed his eyes with the clay, 7 and said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent). He went away therefore, and washed, and came seeing. 8 The neighbours therefore, and they which saw him aforetime, that he was a beggar, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? 9 Others said, It is he: others said, No, but he is like him. He said, I am *he*. 10 They said therefore unto him, How then were thine eyes opened? 11 He answered, The man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to Siloam, and wash: so I went away and washed, and I received sight. 12 And they said unto him, Where is he? He saith, I know not.

13 They bring to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind. 14 Now it was the sabbath on the day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. 15 Again therefore the Pharisees also asked him how he received his sight. And he said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see. 16 Some therefore of the Pharisees said, This man is not from God, because he keepeth not the sabbath. But others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such signs? And there was a division among them. 17 They say therefore unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, in that he opened thine eyes? And he said, He is a prophet. 18 The Jews therefore did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and had received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight, 19 and asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see? 20 His parents answered and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: 21 but how he now seeth, we know not; or who opened his eyes, we know not: ask him; he is of age; he shall speak for himself. 22 These things said his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man should confess him *to be* Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. 23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him. 24 So they called the second time the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give glory to God: we know that this man is a sinner. 25 He therefore answered, Whether he be a sinner, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. 26 They said therefore unto him, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? 27 He answered them, I told you even now, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? would ye also become his disciples? 28 And they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are disciples of Moses. 29 We

know that God hath spoken unto Moses: but as for this man, we know not whence he is. 30 The man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is the marvel, that ye know not whence he is, and *yet* he opened mine eyes. 31 We know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and do his will, him he heareth. 32 Since the world began it was never heard that any one opened the eyes of a man born blind. 33 If this man were not from God, he could do nothing. 34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and finding him, he said, Dost thou believe on ²the Son of God? 36 He answered and said, And who is he, Lord, that I may believe on him? 37 Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and he it is that speaketh with thee. 38 And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. 39 And Jesus said, For judgement came I into this world, that they which see not may see; and that they which see may become blind. 40 Those of the Pharisees which were with him heard these things, and said unto him, Are we also blind? 41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye would have no sin: but now ye say, We see: your sin remaineth.

¹ Or, *and with the clay thereof anointed his eyes.*

² Many ancient authorities read *the Son of man.*

§ 101. IN THE PARABLE (ALLEGORY) OF THE GOOD SHEPHERD JESUS DRAWS THE PICTURE OF THE HOSTILE PHARISEES AND INTIMATES THAT HE IS GOING TO DIE FOR HIS FLOCK AND COME TO LIFE AGAIN

Jerusalem

John 10:1-21

1 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the fold of the sheep, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. 2 But he that entereth in by the door is ¹the shepherd of the sheep. 3 To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. 4 When he hath put forth all his own, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. 5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers. 6 This ²parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

7 Jesus therefore said unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. 8 All that came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them. 9 I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and go out, and shall find pasture. 10 The thief cometh not, but that he may steal, and kill, and destroy: I came that they may have life, and may ³have *it* abundantly. 11 I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd layeth down his life for the sheep. 12 He that is a hireling, and not a shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, beholdeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth, and the wolf snatcheth them, and scattereth *them*: 13 *he fleeth* because he is a hireling, and careth not for the sheep. 14 I am the good shepherd; and I know mine own, and mine own know me, 15 even as the Father knoweth me, and I know the Father; and I lay down my life for the sheep. 16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold [*see Ezek. 34:23; 37:24*]: them also I must ⁴bring, and they shall hear my voice; and ⁵they shall become one flock, one shepherd. 17 Therefore doth the Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I may take it again. 18 No one ⁶taketh it away from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have ⁷power to lay it down, and I have ⁷power to take it again. This commandment received I from my Father.

19 There arose a division again among the Jews because of these words. 20 And many of them said, He hath a ⁸devil, and is mad; why hear ye him? 21 Others said, These are not the sayings of one possessed with a ⁸devil. Can a ⁸devil open the eyes of the blind?

¹ Or, *a shepherd.*

² Or, *proverb.*

³ Or, *have abundance.*

⁴ Or, *lead.*

⁵ Or, *there shall be one flock.*

⁶ Some ancient authorities read *took it away*.

⁷ Or, *right*.

⁸ Gr. *demon*.

In §§ 102-110 we have matters given by Luke only, which probably occurred in Judea. Several of them are similar to events and discourses of the ministry in Galilee, given by Matthew and Mark.^a

^a Observe that here, as in previous portions of the history, we possess only a few specimens from what must have been the great mass of our Lord's doings and sayings.

§ 102. MISSION OF THE SEVENTY. CHRIST'S JOY IN THEIR WORK ON THEIR RETURN

(Compare Mission of the Twelve in [§ 70](#).)

Probably in Judea

Luke 10:1-24

1 Now after these things the Lord appointed seventy¹ others, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself was about to come. 2 And he said unto them, The harvest is plenteous, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest. 3 Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs in the midst of wolves. 4 Carry no purse, no wallet, no shoes: and salute no man on the way. 5 And into whatsoever house ye shall ²enter, first say, Peace *be* to this house. 6 And if a son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon ³him: but if not, it shall turn to you again. 7 And in that same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. 8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you: 9 and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. 10 But into whatsoever city ye shall enter, and they receive you not, go out into the streets thereof and say, 11 Even the dust from your city, that cleaveth to our feet, we do wipe off against you: howbeit know this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh. 12 I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city [*see Gen. 19:24*]. 13 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the ⁴mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which were done in you, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. 14 Howbeit it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the judgement, than for you. 15 And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted unto heaven? thou shalt be brought down unto Hades [*see Isa. 14:13-15*]. 16 He that heareth you heareth me; and he that rejecteth you rejecteth me; and he that rejecteth me rejecteth him that sent me.

17 And the seventy returned with joy, saying, Lord, even the ⁵devils are subject unto us in thy name. 18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan fallen as lightning from heaven. 19 Behold, I have given you authority to tread upon serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall in any wise hurt you. 20 Howbeit in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.

21 In that same hour he rejoiced ⁶in the Holy Spirit, and said, I ⁷thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou didst hide these things from the wise and understanding, and didst reveal them unto babes: yea, Father; ⁸for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight. 22 All things have been delivered unto me of my Father: and no one knoweth who the Son is, save the Father; and who the Father is, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal *him*. 23 And turning to the disciples, he said privately, Blessed *are* the eyes which see the things that ye see: 24 for I say unto you, that many prophets and kings desired to see the things which ye see, and saw them not; and to hear the things which ye hear, and heard them not.

¹ Many ancient authorities add *and two*: and so in verse 17.

² Or, *enter first, say*.

³ Or, *it*.

⁴ Gr. *powers*.

⁵ Gr. *demons*.

⁶ Or, *by*.

⁷ Or, *praise*.

⁸ Or, *that*.

§ 103. JESUS ANSWERS A LAWYER'S QUESTION AS TO ETERNAL LIFE, GIVING THE PARABLE OF THE GOOD SAMARITAN

Probably in Judea

Luke 10:25-37

25 And behold, a certain lawyer stood up and tempted him, saying, ¹Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? 26 And he said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? 27 And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God ²with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself [*see Deut. 6:5; Lev. 19:18*]. 28 And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live [*see Lev. 18:5*]. 29 But he, desiring to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour? 30 Jesus made answer and said, A certain man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho; and he fell among robbers, which both stripped him and beat him, and departed, leaving him half dead. 31 And by chance a certain priest was going down that way: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. 32 And in like manner a Levite also, when he came to the place, and saw him, passed by on the other side. 33 But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he was moved with compassion, 34 and came to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring on *them* oil and wine; and he set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. 35 And on the morrow he took out two ³pence, and gave them to the host, and said, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, I, when I come back again, will repay thee. 36 Which of these three, thinkest thou, proved neighbour unto him that fell among the robbers? 37 And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. And Jesus said unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

¹ Or, *Teacher*.

² Gr. *from*.

³ The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about seventeen cents.

§ 104. JESUS THE GUEST OF MARTHA AND MARY

Bethany, near Jerusalem^a

Luke 10:38-42

38 Now as they went on their way, he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house. 39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at the Lord's feet, and heard his word. 40 But Martha was ¹cumbered about much serving; and she came up to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister did leave me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me. 41 But the Lord answered and said unto her, ²Martha, Martha, thou art anxious and troubled about many things: 42 ³but one thing is needful: for Mary hath chosen the good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

¹ Gr. *distracted*.

² A few ancient authorities read, *Martha, Martha, thou art troubled: Mary hath chosen etc.*

³ Many ancient authorities read *but few things are needful, or one.*

^a There was another Bethany beyond Jordan (John 1:28, § 26). We shall see Jesus in Bethany near Jerusalem again (John 12:1-8). It was his Jerusalem home in the early days of Passion Week.

§ 105. JESUS AGAIN GIVES A MODEL OF PRAYER (COMP. § 54), AND ENCOURAGES HIS DISCIPLES TO PRAY. PARABLE OF THE IMPORTUNATE FRIEND

Probably in Judea

Luke 11:1-13

1 And it came to pass, as he was praying in a certain place, that when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, even as John also taught his disciples. 2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, ¹Father, Hallowed be thy Name. Thy kingdom come.² 3 Give us day by day ³our daily bread. 4 And forgive us our sins; for we ourselves also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And bring us not into temptation^{4, a}

5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say to him, Friend, lend me three loaves; 6 for a friend of mine is come to me from a journey, and I have nothing to set before him; 7 and he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee? 8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will arise and give him ⁵as many as he needeth. 9 And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. 10 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. 11 And of which of you that is a father shall his son ask ⁶a loaf, and he give him a stone? or a fish, and he for a fish give him a serpent? 12 Or *if* he shall ask an egg, will he give him a scorpion? 13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

¹ Many ancient authorities read *Our Father, which art in heaven.* See [Matt. 6:9](#).

² Many ancient authorities add *Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth.* See [Matt. 6:10](#).

³ Gr. *our bread for the coming day.*

⁴ Many ancient authorities add *but deliver us from the evil one (or, from evil).* See [Matt. 6:13](#).

⁵ Or, *whatsoever things.*

⁶ Some ancient authorities omit *a loaf, and he give him a stone? or.*

^a The language here is different from that in Matt. 6 (§ 54), but the ideas are the same. Evidently the disciples were slow to learn Christ's teaching about prayer.

§ 106. BLASPHEMOUS ACCUSATION OF LEAGUE WITH BEELZEBUB

(Compare [§ 61](#))^a

Probably in Judea

Luke 11:14-36

14 And he was casting out a ¹devil *which was* dumb. And it came to pass, when the ¹devil was gone out, the dumb man spake; and the multitudes marvelled. 15 But some of them said, ²By Beelzebub the prince of the ³devils casteth he out ³devils. 16 And others, tempting *him*, sought of

him a sign from heaven. 17 But he, knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; ⁴and a house *divided* against a house falleth. 18 And if Satan also is divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say that I cast out ³devils ²by Beelzebub. 19 And if I ²by Beelzebub cast out ³devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges. 20 But if I by the finger of God cast out ³devils, then is the kingdom of God come upon you. 21 When the strong *man* fully armed guardeth his own court, his goods are in peace: 22 but when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him his whole armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils. 23 He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth. 24 The unclean spirit when ⁵he is gone out of the man, passeth through waterless places, seeking rest; and finding none, ⁵he saith, I will turn back unto my house whence I came out. 25 And when ⁵he is come, ⁵he findeth it swept and garnished. 26 Then goeth ⁵he, and taketh *to him* seven other spirits more evil than ⁶himself; and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man becometh worse than the first.

27 And it came to pass, as he said these things, a certain woman out of the multitude lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the breasts which thou didst suck. 28 But he said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

29 And when the multitudes were gathering together unto him, he began to say, This generation is an evil generation: it seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah [*see Jonah 3:1-4*]. 30 For even as Jonah became a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation. 31 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with the men of this generation, and shall condemn them: for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon [*see 1 Kings 10:1-3*]; and behold, ⁷a greater than Solomon is here. 32 The men of Nineveh shall stand up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonah [*see Jonah 3:5-10*]; and behold, ⁷a greater than Jonah is here.

33 No man, when he hath lighted a lamp, putteth it in a cellar, neither under the bushel, but on the stand, that they which enter in may see the light. 34 The lamp of thy body is thine eye: when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when it is evil, thy body also is full of darkness. 35 Look therefore whether the light that is in thee be not darkness. 36 If therefore thy whole body be full of light, having no part dark, it shall be wholly full of light, as when the lamp with its bright shining doth give thee light.

¹ Gr. *demon*.

² Or, *in*.

³ Gr. *demons*.

⁴ Or, *and house falleth upon house*.

⁵ Or, *it*.

⁶ Or, *itself*.

⁷ Gr. *more than*.

^a It is perfectly natural that the blasphemous accusation made in Galilee (§ 61), and probably more than once (§ 68, Matt. 9:34), should be repeated a year or so afterward in Judea or Perea, and that Jesus should make substantially the same argument in reply. This sort of thing occurs to every travelling religious teacher. Our Lord does not here give the solemn warning that such an accusation is really blaspheming against the Holy Spirit, and is unpardonable. (See [Luke 12:10](#).) And the subsequent occurrences are quite different in the two cases. In § 64 he afterwards goes out by the lake-side and gives the great group of parables, presently explaining some of them to the disciples in a house, and then crosses the lake to Gerasa, etc. Here in § 107 he breakfasts with a Pharisee, and utters such solemn woes against the Pharisees as are found only in the closing months of his ministry, and then gives to vast multitudes a series of instructions wholly unlike the great group of parables. So it is quite unsuitable to identify this occurrence with that of § 61.

§ 107. WHILE BREAKFASTING WITH A PHARISEE, JESUS SEVERELY DENOUNCES THE PHARISEES AND LAWYERS, AND EXCITES THEIR ENMITY

Probably in Judea

37 Now as he spake, a Pharisee asketh him to ¹dine with him: and he went in, and sat down to meat. 38 And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not washed before ¹dinner. 39 And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter; but your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness. 40 Ye foolish ones, did not he that made the outside make the inside also? 41 Howbeit give for alms those things which ²are within; and behold, all things are clean unto you.

42 But woe unto you Pharisees! for ye tithe mint and rue and every herb, and pass over judgement and the love of God [*see Lev. 27:30; Mic. 6:8*]: but these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. 43 Woe unto you Pharisees! for ye love the chief seats in the synagogues, and the salutations in the marketplaces. 44 Woe unto you! for ye are as the tombs which appear not, and the men that walk over *them* know it not.

45 And one of the lawyers answering saith unto him, ³Master, in saying this thou reproachest us also. 46 And he said, Woe unto you lawyers also! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. 47 Woe unto you! for ye build the tombs of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. 48 So ye are witnesses and consent unto the works of your fathers: for they killed them, and ye build *their tombs*. 49 Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send unto them prophets and apostles; and *some* of them they shall kill and persecute; 50 that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; 51 from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zachariah [*see Gen. 4:8; 2 Chron. 24:20-21*], who perished between the altar and the ⁴sanctuary: yea, I say unto you, it shall be required of this generation. 52 Woe unto you lawyers! for ye took away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.

53 And when he was come out from thence, the scribes and the Pharisees began to ⁵press upon *him* vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of ⁶many things; 54 laying wait for him, to catch something out of his mouth.

¹ Gr. *breakfast*.

² Or, *ye can*.

³ Or, *Teacher*.

⁴ Gr. *house*.

⁵ Or, *set themselves vehemently against him*.

⁶ Or, *more*.

§ 108. HE SPEAKS TO HIS DISCIPLES AND A VAST THROG, ABOUT HYPOCRISY, COVETOUSNESS (PARABLE OF THE RICH FOOL), WORLDLY ANXIETIES, WATCHFULNESS (PARABLE OF THE WAITING SERVANTS, AND OF THE WISE STEWARD), AND HIS OWN APPROACHING PASSION^a

Probably in Judea

Luke 12

1 In the mean time, when ¹the many thousands of the multitude were gathered together, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to ²say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. 2 But there is nothing covered up, that shall not be revealed: and hid, that shall not be known. 3 Wherefore whatsoever ye have said in the darkness shall be heard in the light; and what ye have spoken in the ear in the inner chambers shall be proclaimed upon the housetops. 4 And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them which kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. 5 But I will warn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed hath ³power to cast into ⁴hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him. 6 Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings? and not one of them is forgotten in the sight of God. 7 But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not: ye are of more value than many sparrows. 8 And I say unto you, Every one who shall confess ⁵me before men, ⁶him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: 9 but he that denieth me in the presence of men shall be denied in the presence of the angels of God. 10 And every one who shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Spirit it shall not be forgiven. 11 And when they bring you before the synagogues, and the rulers, and the authorities, be not anxious how or what ye shall answer,

or what ye shall say: 12 for the Holy Spirit shall teach you in that very hour what ye ought to say.

13 And one out of the multitude said unto him, ⁷Master, bid my brother divide the inheritance with me. 14 But he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you? 15 And he said unto them, Take heed, and keep yourselves from all covetousness: ⁸for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth. 16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: 17 and he reasoned within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have not where to bestow my fruits? 18 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my corn and my goods. 19 And I will say to my ⁹soul, ⁹Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, be merry. 20 But God said unto him, Thou foolish one, this night ¹⁰is thy ⁹soul required of thee; and the things which thou hast prepared, whose shall they be? 21 So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

22 And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for *your* ¹¹life, what ye shall eat; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. 23 For the ¹¹life is more than the food, and the body than the raiment. 24 Consider the ravens, that they sow not, neither reap; which have no store-chamber nor barn; and God feedeth them: of how much more value are ye than the birds! 25 And which of you by being anxious can add a cubit unto his ¹²stature? 26 If then ye are not able to do even that which is least, why are ye anxious concerning the rest? 27 Consider the lilies, how they grow: they toil not, neither do they spin; yet I say unto you, Even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. 28 But if God doth so clothe the grass in the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven; how much more *shall he clothe* you, O ye of little faith? 29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, and what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. 30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: but your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. 31 Howbeit seek ye ¹³his kingdom, and these things shall be added unto you. 32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. 33 Sell that ye have, and give alms; make for yourselves purses which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief draweth near, neither moth destroyeth. 34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 Let your loins be girded about, and your lamps burning; 36 and be ye yourselves like unto men looking for their lord, when he shall return from the marriage feast; that, when he cometh and knocketh, they may straightway open unto him. 37 Blessed are those ¹⁴servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them sit down to meat, and shall come and serve them. 38 And if he shall come in the second watch, and if in the third, and find *them* so, blessed are those *servants*. 39 ¹⁵But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what hour the thief was coming, he would have watched, and not have left his house to be ¹⁶broken through. 40 Be ye also ready: for in an hour that ye think not the Son of man cometh.

41 And Peter said, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even unto all? 42 And the Lord said, Who then is ¹⁷the faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall set over his household, to give them their portion of food in due season? 43 Blessed is that ¹⁸servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. 44 Of a truth I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he hath. 45 But if that ¹⁸servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and the maidservants, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; 46 the lord of that ¹⁸servant shall come in a day when he expecteth not, and in an hour when he knoweth not, and shall ¹⁹cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the unfaithful. 47 And that ¹⁸servant, which knew his lord's will, and made not ready, nor did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*; 48 but he that knew not, and did things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*. And to whomsoever much is given, of him shall much be required: and to whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more.

49 I came to cast fire upon the earth; and what will I, if it is already kindled? 50 But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished! 51 Think ye that I am come to give peace in the earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division: 52 for there shall be from henceforth five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three [*see Mic. 7:6*]. 53 They shall be divided, father against son, and son against father; mother against daughter, and daughter against her mother; mother in law against her daughter in law, and daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 And he said to the multitudes also, When ye see a cloud rising in the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it cometh to pass. 55 And when ye *see* a south wind blowing, ye say, There will be a ²⁰scorching heat; and it cometh to pass. 56 Ye hypocrites, ye know how to ²¹interpret the face of the earth and the heaven; but how is it that ye know not how to ²¹interpret this time? 57 And why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right? 58 For as thou art going with thine adversary before the magistrate, on the way give diligence to be quit of him; lest haply he hale thee unto the judge, and the judge shall deliver thee to the ²²officer, and the ²²officer shall cast thee into prison. 59 I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou have paid the very last mite.

¹ Gr. *the myriads of*.

² Or, *say unto his disciples, First of all beware ye*.

³ Or, *authority*.

⁴ Gr. *Gehenna*.

⁵ Gr. *in me*.

⁶ Gr. *in him*.

⁷ Or, *Teacher*.

⁸ Gr. *for not in a man's abundance consisteth his life, from the things which he possesseth*.

⁹ Or, *life*.

¹⁰ Gr. *they require thy soul*.

¹¹ Or, *soul*.

¹² Or, *age*.

¹³ Many ancient authorities read *the kingdom of God*.

¹⁴ Gr. *bondservants*.

¹⁵ Or, *But this ye know*.

¹⁶ Or, *digged through*.

¹⁷ Or, *the faithful steward, the wise man whom etc*.

¹⁸ Gr. *bondservant*.

¹⁹ Or, *severely scourge him*.

²⁰ Or, *hot wind*.

²¹ Gr. *prove*.

²² Gr. *exactor*.

^a Here we have a series of discourses to the disciples (1-12), to one of the crowd (13-21), to the disciples (22-40), to Peter (41-53), to the multitudes (54-59). The constant interruption is typical of the teaching of Jesus. This address, as often, repeats some of Christ's favorite sayings.

Besides the Parable of the Rich Fool (12:16-21) note those of the Waiting Servants (37-40) and of the Wise Steward (42-48).

§ 109. ALL MUST REPENT OR PERISH (TWO CURRENT TRAGEDIES); PARABLE OF THE BARREN FIG TREE

Probably in Judea

Luke 13:1-9

1 Now there were some present at that very season which told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. 2 And he answered and said unto them, Think ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they have suffered these things? 3 I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all in like manner perish. 4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and killed them, think ye that they were ¹offenders above all the men that dwell in Jerusalem? 5 I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6 And he spake this parable; A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came seeking fruit thereon, and found none. 7 And he said unto the vinedresser, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down; why doth it also cumber the ground? 8 And he answering saith unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: 9 and if it bear fruit thenceforth, *well*; but if not, thou shalt cut it down.

¹ Gr. *debtors*.

**§ 110. JESUS HEALS A CRIPPLED WOMAN ON THE SABBATH AND DEFENDS HIMSELF AGAINST THE RULER OF THE SYNAGOGUE (COMP. §§ [49](#) TO [51](#) AND [114](#)).
REPETITION OF THE PARABLES OF THE MUSTARD SEED AND OF THE LEAVEN**

Luke 13:10-21

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath day. 11 And behold, a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years; and she was bowed together, and could in no wise lift herself up. 12 And when Jesus saw her, he called her, and said to her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. 13 And he laid his hands upon her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. 14 And the ruler of the synagogue, being moved with indignation because Jesus had healed on the sabbath [*see Ex. 20:8-11; Deut. 5:12-15*], answered and said to the multitude, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the day of the sabbath. 15 But the Lord answered him, and said, Ye hypocrites, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the ¹stall, and lead him away to watering? 16 And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan had bound, lo, *these* eighteen years, to have been loosed from this bond on the day of the sabbath? 17 And as he said these things, all his adversaries were put to shame: and all the multitude rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 He said therefore, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto shall I liken it? 19 It is like unto a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his own garden; and it grew, and became a tree; and the birds of the heaven lodged in the branches thereof [*see Dan. 4:10-12; 20-22*]. 20 And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God? 21 It is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three ²measures of meal, till it was all leavened.

¹ Gr. *manger*.

² The word in the Gr. denotes the Hebrew seah, a measure containing nearly a peck and a half (cf. in [Matt. 13:33](#)).

Here again the Gospel of John takes us up, and carries us to Jerusalem, and then to Perea.

§ 111. AT THE FEAST OF DEDICATION, JESUS WILL NOT YET OPENLY SAY THAT HE IS THE MESSIAH. THE JEWS TRY TO STONE HIM

Jerusalem

John 10:22-39

22 ¹And it was the feast of the dedication at Jerusalem:^a 23 it was winter; and Jesus was walking in the temple in Solomon's porch. 24 The Jews therefore came round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou hold us in suspense? If thou art the Christ, tell us plainly. 25 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believe not: the works that I do in my Father's name, these bear witness of me. 26 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep. 27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: 28 and I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, and no one shall snatch them out of my hand. 29 ²My Father, which hath given *them* unto me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch ³*them* out of the Father's hand. 30 I and the Father are one. 31 The Jews took up stones again to stone him. 32 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from the Father; for which of those works do ye stone me? 33 The

Jews answered him, For a good work we stone thee not, but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God. 34 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods [*see Ps. 82:6*]? 35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came (and the scripture cannot be broken), 36 say ye of him, whom the Father ⁴sanctified and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am *the* Son of God? 37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. 38 But if I do them, though you believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know and understand that the Father is in me, and I in the Father. 39 They sought again to take him: and he went forth out of their hand.

¹ Some ancient authorities read *At that time was the feast*.

² Some ancient authorities read *That which my Father hath given unto me*.

³ Or, *ought*.

⁴ Or, *consecrated*.

^a Some scholars think that the events in [John 9](#) and [10:1-21](#) belong to the time of the feast of dedication rather than soon after tabernacles. But the language of John 10:24 seems to call for an interval.

PART X THE LATER PEREAN MINISTRY

Probably Dedication in A.D. 29 to Last Journey in A.D. 30 (about three and a half months), §§ 112-127.

§ 112. THE WITHDRAWAL FROM JERUSALEM TO BETHANY BEYOND JORDAN

Perea

John 10:40-42

40 And he went away again beyond Jordan into the place where John was at the first baptizing; and there he abode. 41 And many came unto him; and they said, John indeed did no sign: but all things whatsoever John spake of this man were true. 42 And many believed on him there.

§ 113. TEACHING IN PEREA, ON A JOURNEY^a TOWARD JERUSALEM. WARNED AGAINST HEROD ANTIPAS

Luke 13:22-35

22 And he went on his way through cities and villages, teaching, and journeying on unto Jerusalem.^b 23 And one said unto him, Lord, are they few that be saved? And he said unto them, 24 Strive to enter in by the narrow door: for many, I say unto you, shall seek to enter in, and shall not be ¹able. 25 When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, open to us; and he shall answer and say to you, I know you not whence ye are; 26 then shall ye begin to say, We did eat and drink in thy presence, and thou didst teach in our streets; 27 and he shall say, I tell you, I know not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity [*see Ps. 6:8*]. 28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in

the kingdom of God, and yourselves cast forth without. 29 And they shall come from the east and west, and from the north and south, and shall ²sit down in the kingdom of God [*see Ps. 107:3; Isa. 49:12*]. 30 And behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

31 In that very hour there came certain Pharisees, saying to him, Get thee out, and go hence: for Herod would fain kill thee. 32 And he said unto them, Go and say to that fox, Behold, I cast out ³devils and perform cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third *day* I am perfected. 33 Howbeit I must go on my way to-day and to-morrow and the *day* following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem. 34 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killeth the prophets, and stoneth them that are sent unto her! how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen *gathereth* her own brood under her wings, and ye would not! 35 Behold, your house is left unto you *desolate*: and I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord [*see Ps. 118:26; Jer. 12:7; 22:5*].

¹ Or, *able, when once*.

² Gr. *recline*.

³ Gr. *demons*.

^a See [note 10](#) at end of Harmony for the combination of Luke and John. After the Feast of the Dedication Jesus retired beyond Jordan ([John 10:40](#)), whence he goes to the raising of Lazarus ([John 11:17](#)). Luke seems to give incidents that belong to this journey.

^b The period of three to four months from the Dedication to the final Passover is divided by another visit to Jerusalem. We cannot tell how many weeks preceded this event. All along here we have only a few specimens of the Saviour's teaching and works.

§ 114. WHILE DINING (BREAKFASTING) WITH A CHIEF PHARISEE, HE AGAIN HEALS ON THE SABBATH, AND DEFENDS HIMSELF (COMP. §§ 49 TO 51 AND 110). THREE PARABLES SUGGESTED BY THE OCCASION

Probably in Perea

Luke 14:1-24

1 And it came to pass, when he went into the house of one of the rulers of the Pharisees on a sabbath to eat bread, that they were watching him. 2 And behold, there was before him a certain man which had the dropsy. 3 And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath, or not? 4 But they held their peace. And he took him, and healed him, and let him go. 5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have ¹an ass or an ox fallen into a well, and will not straightway draw him up on a sabbath day? 6 And they could not answer again unto these things.

7 And he spake a parable unto those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief seats; saying unto them, 8 When thou art bidden of any man to a marriage feast, ²sit not down in the chief seat; lest haply a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him, 9 and he that bade thee and him shall come and say to thee, Give this man place; and then thou shalt begin with shame to take the lowest place. 10 But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest place; that when he that hath bidden thee cometh, he may say to thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have glory in the presence of all that sit at meat with thee. 11 For every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

12 And he said to him also that had bidden him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper,^a call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, nor thy kinsmen, nor rich neighbours; lest haply they also bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee. 13 But when thou makest a feast, bid the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind: 14 and thou shalt be blessed; because they have not *wherewith* to recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed in the resurrection of the just.

15 And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. 16 But he said unto him, A certain man made a great supper; and he bade many: 17 and he sent forth his ³servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come; for *all* things are now ready. 18 And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a field, and I must needs go out and see it: I pray thee have me excused. 19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. 20 And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. 21 And the ³servant came, and told his lord these things. Then the

master of the house being angry said to his ³servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor and maimed and blind and lame. 22 And the ³servant said, Lord, what thou didst command is done, and yet there is room. 23 And the lord said unto the ³servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and constrain *them* to come in, that my house may be filled. 24 For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.

¹ Many ancient authorities read *a son*. See [ch. 13:15](#).

² Gr. *recline not*.

³ Gr. *bondservant*.

^a More exactly, "a breakfast or a dinner." The two principal meals of the Jews answered to the present English breakfast (in the forenoon and often near noon), and dinner (at or after dark); and so in our cities. In the time of King James, as in many of our country homes now, the meal towards noon answered to dinner, and the night meal to supper. Hence a certain confusion in the older and more recent English versions. In verses 16, 17 the right word would be dinner, according to city usage, and so elsewhere.

§ 115. GREAT CROWDS FOLLOW HIM, AND HE WARNS THEM TO COUNT THE COST OF DISCIPLESHIP TO HIM (COMP. §§ [70](#) and [83](#))

Probably in Perea

Luke 14:25-35

25 Now there went with him great multitudes: and he turned, and said unto them, 26 If any man cometh unto me, and hateth not his own father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. 27 Whosoever doth not bear his own cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. 28 For which of you, desiring to build a tower, doth not first sit down and count the cost, whether he have *wherewith* to complete it? 29 Lest haply, when he hath laid a foundation, and is not able to finish, all that behold begin to mock him, 30 saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. 31 Or what king, as he goeth to encounter another king in war, will not sit down first and take counsel whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? 32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and asketh conditions of peace. 33 So therefore whosoever he be of you that renounceth not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple. 34 Salt therefore is good: but if even the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? 35 It is fit neither for the land nor for the dunghill: *men* cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

§ 116. THE PHARISEES AND THE SCRIBES MURMUR AGAINST JESUS FOR RECEIVING SINNERS. HE DEFENDS HIMSELF BY THREE GREAT PARABLES (THE LOST SHEEP, THE LOST COIN, THE LOST SON)

Probably in Perea

Luke 15:1-32

1 Now all the publicans and sinners were drawing near unto him for to hear him. 2 And both the Pharisees and the scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 And he spake unto them this parable, saying, 4 What man of you, having a hundred sheep, and having lost one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? 5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. 6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and his neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost. 7 I say unto you, that even so there shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, *more* than over ninety and nine

righteous persons, which need no repentance.

8 Or what woman having ten ¹pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and seek diligently until she find it? 9 And when she hath found it, she calleth together her friends and neighbours, saying, Rejoice with me, for I have found the piece which I had lost. 10 Even so, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

11 And he said, A certain man had two sons: 12 and the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of ²thy substance that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. 13 And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country; and there he wasted his substance with riotous living. 14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that country; and he began to be in want. 15 And he went and joined himself to one of the citizens of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. 16 And he would fain have been filled with ³the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. 17 But when he came to himself he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish here with hunger! 18 I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight: 19 I am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. 20 And he arose, and came to his father. But while he was yet afar off, his father saw him, and was moved with compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and ⁴kissed him. 21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight: I am no more worthy to be called thy son.⁵ 22 But the father said to his ⁶servants, Bring forth quickly the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: 23 and bring the fatted calf, *and* kill it, and let us eat, and make merry: 24 for this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. 25 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. 26 And he called to him one of the ⁶servants, and inquired what these things might be. 27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. 28 But he was angry, and would not go in: and his father came out, and intreated him. 29 But he answered and said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, and I never transgressed a commandment of thine: and *yet* thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: 30 but when this thy son came, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou killedst for him the fatted calf. 31 And he said unto him, ⁷Son, thou art ever with me, and all that is mine is thine. 32 But it was meet to make merry and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive *again*; and *was* lost, and is found.

¹ Gr. *drachma*, a coin worth about sixteen cents.

² Gr. *the*.

³ Gr. *the pods of the carob tree*.

⁴ Gr. *kissed him much*.

⁵ Some ancient authorities add *make me as one of thy hired servants*. See ver. 19.

⁶ Gr. *bondservants*.

⁷ Gr. *Child*.

§ 117. THREE PARABLES ON STEWARDSHIP (TO THE DISCIPLES, THE PARABLE OF THE UNJUST STEWARD; TO THE PHARISEES, THE PARABLE OF THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS; TO THE DISCIPLES, THE PARABLE OF THE UNPROFITABLE SERVANTS)

Probably in Perea

Luke 16:1-17:10

1 And he said also unto the disciples, There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he was wasting his goods. 2 And he called him, and said unto him, What is this that I hear of thee? render the account of thy stewardship; for thou canst be no longer steward. 3 And the steward said within himself, What shall I do, seeing that my lord taketh away the stewardship from me? I have not strength to dig; to beg I am ashamed. 4 I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses. 5 And calling to him each one of his lord's debtors, he said to the first, How much owest thou unto my lord? 6 And he said, A hundred ¹measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy ²bond, and sit

down quickly and write fifty. 7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, A hundred ³measures of wheat. He saith unto him, Take thy ²bond, and write fourscore. 8 And his lord commended ⁴the unrighteous steward because he had done wisely: for the sons of this ⁵world are for their own generation wiser than the sons of the light. 9 And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends ⁶by means of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when it shall fail, they may receive you into the eternal tabernacles. 10 He that is faithful in a very little is faithful also in much: and he that is unrighteous in a very little is unrighteous also in much. 11 If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true *riches*? 12 And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another's, who will give you that which is ⁷your own? 13 No ⁸servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

14 And the Pharisees, who were lovers of money, heard all these things; and they scoffed at him. 15 And he said unto them, Ye are they that justify yourselves in the sight of men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is exalted among men is an abomination in the sight of God. 16 The law and the prophets *were* until John: from that time the gospel of the kingdom of God is preached, and every man entereth violently into it [*see Matt. 11:12*]. 17 But it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one tittle of the law to fall. 18 Every one that putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and he that marrieth one that is put away from a husband committeth adultery.

19 Now there was a certain rich man, and he was clothed in purple and fine linen, ⁹faring sumptuously every day: 20 and a certain beggar named Lazarus was laid at his gate, full of sores, 21 and desiring to be fed with the *crumbs* that fell from the rich man's table; yea, even the dogs came and licked his sores. 22 And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and that he was carried away by the angels into Abraham's bosom: and the rich man also died, and was buried. 23 And in Hades he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. 24 And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am in anguish in this flame. 25 But Abraham said, ¹⁰Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and Lazarus in like manner evil things: but now here he is comforted, and thou art in anguish. 26 And ¹¹beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, that they which would pass from hence to you may not be able, and that none may cross over from thence to us. 27 And he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house; 28 for I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. 29 But Abraham saith, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. 30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one go to them from the dead, they will repent. 31 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, if one rise from the dead.

1 And he said unto his disciples, It is impossible but that occasions of stumbling should come: but woe unto him, through whom they come! 2 It were well for him if a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were thrown into the sea, rather than that he should cause one of these little ones to stumble. 3 Take heed to yourselves: if thy brother sin, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. 4 And if he sin against thee seven times in the day, and seven times turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith. 6 And the Lord said, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye would say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou rooted up, and be thou planted in the sea; and it would have obeyed you. 7 But who is there of you, having a ¹²servant plowing or keeping sheep, that will say unto him, when he is come in from the field, Come straightway and sit down to meat; 8 and will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? 9 Doth he thank the ¹²servant because he did the things that were commanded? 10 Even so ye also, when ye shall have done all the things that are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable ¹³servants; we have done that which it was our duty to do.

¹ Gr. *baths*, the bath being a Hebrew measure. See Ezek. 45:10, 11, 14.

² Gr. *writings*.

³ Gr. *cors*, the cor being a Hebrew measure. See Ezek. 45:14.

⁴ Gr. *the steward of unrighteousness*.

⁵ Or, *age*.

⁶ Gr. *out of*.

⁷ Some ancient authorities read, *our own*.

⁸ Gr. *household-servant*.

⁹ Or, *living in mirth and splendour every day*.

¹⁰ Gr. *Child*.

¹¹ Or, *in all these things*.

¹² Gr. *bondservant*.

¹³ Gr. *bondservants*.

§ 118. JESUS RAISES LAZARUS FROM THE DEAD

From Perea^a to Bethany near Jerusalem

John 11:1-44

1 Now a certain man was sick, Lazarus of Bethany, of the village of Mary and her sister Martha. 2 And it was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick. 3 The sisters therefore sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. 4 But when Jesus heard it, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God may be glorified thereby. 5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. 6 When therefore he heard that he was sick, he abode at that time two days in the place where he was. 7 Then after this he saith to the disciples, Let us go into Judea again. 8 The disciples say unto him, Rabbi, the Jews were but now seeking to stone thee; and goest thou thither again? 9 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If a man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world. 10 But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because the light is not in him. 11 These things spake he: and after this he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus is fallen asleep; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep. 12 The disciples therefore said unto him, Lord, if he is fallen asleep, he will ¹recover. 13 Now Jesus had spoken of his death: but they thought that he spake of taking rest in sleep. 14 Then Jesus therefore said unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead. 15 And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him. 16 Thomas therefore, who is called ²Didymus, said unto his fellow-disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

17 So when Jesus came, he found that he had been in the tomb four days already. 18 Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off; 19 and many of the Jews had come to Martha and Mary, to console them concerning their brother. 20 Martha therefore, when she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary still sat in the house. 21 Martha therefore said unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. 22 And even now I know that, whatsoever thou shalt ask of God, God will give thee. 23 Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. 24 Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. 25 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth on me, though he die, yet shall he live: 26 and whosoever liveth and believeth on me shall never die. Believest thou this? 27 She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I have believed that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, *even* he that cometh into the world. 28 And when she had said this, she went away, and called Mary ³her sister secretly, saying, The ⁴Master is here, and calleth thee. 29 And she, when she heard it, arose quickly, and went unto him. 30 (Now Jesus was not yet come into the village, but was still in the place where Martha met him.) 31 The Jews then which were with her in the house, and were comforting her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up quickly and went out, followed her, supposing that she was going unto the tomb to ⁵weep there. 32 Mary therefore, when she came where Jesus was, and saw him, fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. 33 When Jesus therefore saw her ⁶weeping, and the Jews *also* ⁶weeping which came with her, he ⁷groaned in the spirit, and ⁸was troubled, 34 and said, Where have ye laid him? They say unto him, Lord, come and see. 35 Jesus wept. 36 The Jews therefore said, Behold how he loved him! 37 But some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of him that was blind, have caused that this man also should not die? 38 Jesus therefore again ⁹groaning in himself cometh to the tomb. Now it was a cave, and a stone lay ¹⁰against it. 39 Jesus saith, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been *dead* four days. 40 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou believedst, thou shouldest see the glory of God? 41 So they took away the stone. And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou heardest me. 42 And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the multitude which standeth around I said it, that they may believe that thou didst send me. 43 And when he had thus spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. 44 He that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with ¹¹grave-clothes; and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

¹ Gr. *be saved*.

² That is, *Twin*.

³ Or, *her sister, saying secretly*.

⁴ Or, *Teacher*.

⁵ Gr. *wail*.

⁶ Gr. *wailing*.

⁷ Or, *was moved with indignation in the spirit*.

⁸ Gr. *troubled himself*.

⁹ Or, *being moved with indignation in himself*.

¹⁰ Or, *upon*.

¹¹ Or, *grave-bands*.

^a Our Lord was apparently at a distance of two or three days' journey (verses 6, 17) from Bethany; and he was probably in Perea. This visit to Bethany, a suburb of Jerusalem, may be that to which Luke pointed in [13:22](#).

§ 119. THE EFFECT OF THE RAISING OF LAZARUS (ON THE PEOPLE, ON THE SANHEDRIN, ON THE MOVEMENTS OF JESUS)

Jerusalem and Ephraim in Judea.

John 11:45-54

45 Many therefore of the Jews, which came to Mary and beheld ¹that which he did, believed on him. 46 But some of them went away to the Pharisees, and told them the thing which Jesus had done.

47 The chief priests therefore and the Pharisees gathered a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many signs. 48 If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans will come and take away both our place and our nation. 49 But a certain one of them, Caiaphas, being high priest that year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, 50 nor do ye take account that it is expedient for you that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. 51 Now this he said not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for the nation; 52 and not for the nation only, but that he might also gather together into one the children of God that are scattered abroad. 53 So from that day forth they took counsel that they might put him to death.

54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews, but departed thence into the country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim; and there he tarried with the disciples.

¹ Many ancient authorities read *the things which he did*.

§ 120. JESUS STARTS ON THE LAST JOURNEY TO JERUSALEM BY WAY OF SAMARIA AND GALILEE

He heals the Ten Lepers and explains the Nature of the Kingdom of God to the Pharisees and the Disciples.

In Samaria or Galilee

Luke 17:11-37

11 And it came to pass, ¹as they were on the way to Jerusalem, that he was passing ²through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.^a 12 And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off [*see Lev. 13:45-46*]: 13 and they lifted up their voices, saying, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. 14 And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go and

shew yourselves unto the priests [*see Lev. 13:49; 14:1-3*]. And it came to pass, as they went, they were cleansed. 15 And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, with a loud voice glorifying God; 16 and he fell upon his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. 17 And Jesus answering said, Were not the ten cleansed? but where are the nine? 18 ³Were there none found that returned to give glory to God, save this ⁴stranger? 19 And he said unto him, Arise, and go thy way: thy faith hath ⁵made thee whole.

20 And being asked by the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God cometh, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: 21 neither shall they say, Lo, here! or, There! for lo, the kingdom of God is ⁶within you.

22 And he said unto the disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it. 23 And they shall say to you, Lo, there! Lo, here! go not away, nor follow after *them*: 24 for as the lightning, when it lighteneth out of the one part under the heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven; so shall the Son of man be ⁷in his day. 25 But first must he suffer many things and be rejected of this generation. 26 And as it came to pass in the days of Noah, even so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man [*see Gen. 6:11-13; 7:21-23*]. 27 They ate, they drank, they married, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. 28 Likewise even as it came to pass in the days of Lot; they ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded [*see Gen. 18:20-22*]; 29 but in the day that Lot went out from Sodom [*see Gen. 19:24-25*] it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all: 30 after the same manner shall it be in the day that the Son of man is revealed. 31 In that day, he which shall be on the housetop, and his goods in the house, let him not go down to take them away: and let him that is in the field likewise not return back. 32 Remember Lot's wife [*see Gen. 19:26*]. 33 Whosoever shall seek to gain his ⁸life shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose *his* ⁹life shall ⁹preserve it. 34 I say unto you, In that night there shall be two men on one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. 35 There shall be two women grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left¹⁰. 37 And they answering say unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Where the body *is*, thither will the ¹¹eagles also be gathered together.

¹ Or, *as he was*.

² Or, *between*.

³ Or, *There were none found ... save this stranger*.

⁴ Or, *alien*.

⁵ Or, *saved thee*.

⁶ Or, *in the midst of you*.

⁷ Some ancient authorities omit *in his day*.

⁸ Or, *soul*.

⁹ Gr. *save it alive*.

¹⁰ Some ancient authorities add ver. 36 *There shall be two men in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left*.

¹¹ Or, *vultures*.

^a As Ephraim (§ 119) was pretty certainly in the northern part of Judea, it has been reasonably supposed (Wieseler, Clark, and others) that, when the Passover was approaching, Jesus went from that region northward through Samaria into the southern or southeastern part of Galilee, so as to fall in with the pilgrims going from Galilee through Perea to Jerusalem. We thus again combine Luke's account with that of John in easy agreement. And this explains Luke's mention of Samaria first, which would be strange in describing a journey from Galilee through Samaria to Jerusalem, while the marginal translation, "between Samaria and Galilee," would be obscure and hard to account for. From this point he is making his final journey to Jerusalem, for the Passover of the crucifixion.

§ 121. TWO PARABLES ON PRAYER (THE IMPORTUNATE WIDOW, THE PHARISEE AND THE PUBLICAN)

1 And he spake a parable unto them to the end that they ought always to pray, and not to faint; 2 saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, and regarded not man: 3 and there was a widow in that city; and she came oft unto him, saying, ¹Avenge me of mine adversary. 4 And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; 5 yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest she ²wear me out by her continual coming. 6 And the Lord said, Hear what ³the unrighteous judge saith. 7 And shall not God avenge his elect, which cry to him day and night, and he is longsuffering over them? 8 I say unto you, that he will avenge them speedily. Howbeit when the Son of man cometh, shall he find ⁴faith on the earth?

9 And he spake also this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and set ⁵all others at nought: 10 Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. 11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. 12 I fast twice in the week; I give tithes of all that I get. 13 But the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote his breast, saying, God, ⁶be merciful to me ⁷a sinner. 14 I say unto you, This man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; but he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

¹ Or, *Do me justice of*: and so in verses 5, 7, 8.

² Gr. *bruise*.

³ Gr. *the judge of unrighteousness*.

⁴ Or, *the faith*.

⁵ Gr. *the rest*.

⁶ Or, *be propitiated*.

⁷ Or, *the sinner*.

§ 122. GOING FROM GALILEE THROUGH PEREA,^a HE TEACHES CONCERNING DIVORCE

Perea

Mark 10:1-12

1 And he arose from thence, and cometh into the borders of Judea and beyond Jordan: and multitudes come together unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.

2 And there came unto him Pharisees, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away *his* wife? tempting him. 3 And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you [*see Deut. 24:1*]? 4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away. 5 But Jesus said unto them, For your hardness of heart he wrote you this commandment. 6 But from the beginning of the creation, Male and female made he them [*see Gen. 1:27*]. 7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, ⁵and shall

Matt. 19:1-12

1 And it came to pass when Jesus had finished these words, he departed from Galilee, and came into the borders of Judea beyond Jordan; 2 and great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there.

3 And there came unto him ¹Pharisees, tempting him, and saying, Is it lawful *for a man* to put away his wife for every cause? 4 And he answered and said, Have

ye not read, that he which ²made *them* from the beginning made them male and female, 5 and said, For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife; and the twain

cleave to his wife; 8 and the twain shall become one flesh [*see Gen. 2:24*]: so that they are no more twain, but one flesh. 9 What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. 10 And in the house the disciples asked him again of this matter.

11 And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her: 12 and if she herself shall put away her husband, and marry another, she committeth adultery.

shall become one flesh? 6 So that they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

7 They say unto him, Why then did Moses command to give a bill of divorcement, and to put *her* away? 8 He saith unto them, Moses for your hardness of heart suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it hath not been so. 9 And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, ³except for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: ⁴and he that marrieth her when she is put away committeth adultery. 10 The disciples say unto him, If the case of the man is so with his wife, it is not expedient to marry. 11 But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, but they to whom it is given. 12 For there are eunuchs, which were so born from their mother's womb: and there are eunuchs, which were made eunuchs by men: and there are eunuchs, which made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

¹ Many authorities, some ancient, insert *the*.

² Some ancient authorities read *created*.

³ Some ancient authorities read *saving for the cause of fornication, maketh her an adulteress*: as in ch. 5:32, [§ 54](#).

⁴ The following words, to the end of the verse, are omitted by some ancient authorities.

⁵ Some ancient authorities omit *and shall cleave to his wife*.

^a Matthew expressly states that he went from Galilee through Perea, and soon afterwards carries him forward to Jericho and Jerusalem. (Comp. Mark also.) Yet he says that Jesus did this when he had finished the parable of the unforgiving servant, which we have placed nearly six months earlier ([§ 92](#)). Luke here presently agrees with Matthew and Mark, and they go on together to the end, while heretofore Matthew and Mark have given us nothing since Jesus went to the Feast of Tabernacles. In one way or another we must suppose quite a break in their narrative. See Broadus' commentary on Matthew 19:1, and compare [note 10](#) at end of Harmony.

§ 123. CHRIST AND CHILDREN AND THE FAILURE OF THE DISCIPLES TO UNDERSTAND THE ATTITUDE OF JESUS

Perea

Mark 10:13-16	Matt. 19:13-15	Luke 18:15-17 ^a
13 And they brought unto him little children, that he should touch them: and the disciples rebuked	13 Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should lay his hands on them, and	15 And they brought unto him also their babes, that he should touch them: but when the disciples saw it,

them. 14 But when Jesus saw it, he was moved with indignation, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me; forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.	pray: and the disciples rebuked them.	they rebuked them.
15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall in no wise enter therein.	14 But Jesus said, Suffer the little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.	16 But Jesus called them unto him, saying, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.
16 And he took them in his arms, and blessed them, laying his hands upon them.	15 And he laid his hands on them, and departed thence.	17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall in no wise enter therein.

^a From this point Matthew, Mark and Luke will be parallel more frequently than they were even during the great ministry in Galilee.

§ 124. THE RICH YOUNG RULER, THE PERILS OF RICHES, AND AMAZEMENT OF THE DISCIPLES. THE REWARDS OF FORSAKING ALL TO FOLLOW THE MESSIAH WILL BE GREAT, BUT WILL BE SOVEREIGN (PARABLE OF THE LABORERS IN THE VINEYARD)

In Perea

Mark 10:17-31	Matt. 19:16 to 20:16	Luke 18:18-30
17 And as he was going forth ⁸ into the way, there ran one to him, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good ² Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life? 18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good save one, <i>even</i> God.	16 And behold, one came to him and said, ¹ ² Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? 17 And he said unto him, ³ Why askest thou me concerning that which is good? One there is who is good: but if thou wouldest enter into life, keep the commandments.	18 And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good ² Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? 19 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good save one, <i>even</i> God.
19 Thou knowest the commandments [<i>see Ex. 20:12-16; Deut. 5:16-20</i>],	18 He saith unto him, Which? And Jesus said, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, 19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. 20 The young man saith unto him, All these things have I observed: what lack I	20 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and mother.
Do not kill, Do not commit adultery,		
Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Do not defraud, Honour thy father and mother.		
20 And he said unto him, ² Master, all these things have I observed from my youth. 21 And Jesus looking upon him	21 And he said, All these things have I observed: what lack I	21 And he said, All these things have I observed from my youth up. 22 And when

loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me. 22 But his countenance fell at the saying, and he went away sorrowful: for he was one that had great possessions. 23 And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God! 24 And the disciples were amazed at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it ⁹for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God! 25 It is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. 26 And they were astonished exceedingly, saying ¹⁰unto him, Then who can be saved? 27 Jesus looking upon them saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for all things are possible with God [*see Gen. 18:24; Job, 42:2*]. 28 Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee. 29 Jesus said, Verily I say unto you,

There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or lands, for my sake, and for the gospel's sake, 30 but he shall receive a hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions;

yet? 21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wouldest be perfect, go, sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me.

22 But when the young man heard the saying, he went away sorrowful: for he was one that had great possessions. 23 And Jesus said unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, It is hard for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven.

24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. 25 And when the disciples heard it, they were astonished exceedingly, saying, Who then can be saved? 26 And Jesus looking upon *them* said to them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible. 27 Then answered Peter and said unto him, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee; what then shall we have? 28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. 29 And every one that hath left houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother,⁴ or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive ⁵a hundredfold,

Jesus heard it, he said unto him, One thing thou lackest yet: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me.

23 But when he heard these things, he became exceeding sorrowful; for he was very rich.

24 And Jesus seeing him said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

25 For it is easier for a camel to enter in through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they that heard it said, Then who can be saved?

27 But he said, The things that are impossible with men are possible with God. 28 And Peter said, Lo, we have left ¹²our own, and followed thee.

29 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you,

There is no man that hath left house, or wife, or brethren, or parents, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake,

30 who shall not receive manifold more in this time, and in

and in the ¹¹world to
come eternal life.

31 But many
that are first shall
be last; and the last
first.

and shall inherit
eternal life.

30 But
many shall be last
that are first; and
first *that are* last.

the ¹¹world to come
eternal life.

1

For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2

And when he had agreed with the labourers for a

6

penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

3

And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing in the marketplace idle;

4

and to them he said, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way.

5

Again he went out about the sixth and the ninth hour, and did likewise.

6

And about the eleventh

hour

he went out, and found others standing; and he saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7

They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard.

8

And when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and pay them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

9

And when they came that

were hired

about the eleventh hour, they received every man a

6

penny.

10

And when the first came, they supposed that they would receive more; and they likewise received every man a

6

penny.

11

And when they received it, they murmured against the householder,

12

saying, These last have spent

but

one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden of the day and the

7

scorching heat.

13

But he answered and said to one of them, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a

6

penny?

14

Take up that which is thine, and go thy way; it is my will to give unto this last, even as unto thee.

15

Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? or is thine eye evil, because I am good?

16

So the last shall be first, and the first last.

¹ Some ancient authorities read *Good Master*. See Mark 10:17; Luke 18:18.

² Or, *Teacher*.

³ Some ancient authorities read *Why callest thou me good? None is good save one, even God*. See Mark 10:18; Luke 18:19.

⁴ Many ancient authorities add *or wife*: as in Luke 18:29.

⁵ Some ancient authorities read *manifold*.

⁶ The Roman denarius, about seventeen cents of our money.

⁷ Or, *hot wind*.

⁸ Or, *on his way*.

⁹ Some ancient authorities omit *for them that trust in riches*.

¹⁰ Many ancient authorities read *among themselves*.

¹¹ Or, *age*.

¹² Or, *our own homes*.

§ 125. JESUS AGAIN FORETELLS TO THE DISCIPLES HIS DEATH AND RESURRECTION (COMP. §§ 83, 85, 86, 88), AND REBUKES THE SELFISH AMBITION OF JAMES AND JOHN

Probably in Perea

Mark 10:32-45

32 And they were in the way, going up to Jerusalem;^a and Jesus was going before them: and they

Matt. 20:17-28

17 And as Jesus was going up to Jerusalem,

Luke 18:31-34

were amazed; ³and they that followed were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them the things that were to happen unto him, ³³ *saying*, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles: ³⁴ and they shall mock him, and shall spit upon him, and shall scourge him, and shall kill him; and after three days he shall rise again.

he took the twelve disciples apart, and in the way he said unto them,

¹⁸ Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, ¹⁹ and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles to mock,

and to scourge, and to crucify: and the third day he shall be raised up.

³¹ And he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all the things that are written ⁵by the prophets shall be accomplished unto the Son of man.

³² For he shall be delivered up unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and shamefully, entreated, and spit upon: ³³ and they shall scourge and kill him: and the third day he shall rise again. ³⁴ And they understood none of these things; and this saying was hid from them, and they perceived not the things that were said.

³⁵ And there come near unto him James and John, the sons of Zebedee, saying unto him, ⁴Master, we would that thou shouldst do for us whatsoever we shall ask of thee. ³⁶ And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you? ³⁷ And they said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and one on *thy* left hand, in thy glory. ³⁸ But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink the cup that I drink? or to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? ³⁹ And they said unto him, We are able. And Jesus said unto them, The cup that I drink ye shall drink; and with the baptism that I am baptized withal shall ye be baptized: ⁴⁰ but to sit on my right hand or on *my* left hand is not mine to give: but *it is for them* for whom it hath been prepared. ⁴¹ And when the ten heard it, they began to be moved with indignation concerning James and John. ⁴² And Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles lord it over them; and their great ones exercise authority over them. ⁴³ But it is not so among you: but whosoever would become great among you, shall be your ¹minister: ⁴⁴ and whosoever would be first among you, shall be ²servant of all. ⁴⁵ For verily the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

²⁰ Then came to him the mother of the sons of Zebedee with her sons, worshipping *him*, and asking a certain thing of him.

²¹ And he said unto her, What wouldest thou? She saith unto him, Command that these my two sons may sit, one on thy right hand, and one on thy left hand, in thy kingdom.

²² But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink the cup that I am about to drink?

They say unto him, We are able.

²³ He saith unto them, My cup indeed ye shall drink:

but to sit on my right hand, and on *my* left hand, is not mine to give, but *it is for them* for whom it hath been prepared of my Father. ²⁴ And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation concerning the two brethren. ²⁵ But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their great ones exercise authority over them. ²⁶ Not so shall it be among you: but whosoever would become great among you shall be your ¹minister; ²⁷ and whosoever would be first among you shall be your ²servant: ²⁸ even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

¹ Or, *servant*.

² Gr. *bondservant*.

³ Or, *but some as they followed were afraid*.

⁴ Or, *Teacher*.

⁵ Or, *through*.

^a He left Galilee in § 122, crossing the Jordan into Perea, probably in company with many Jews from Galilee (who regularly went this way to Jerusalem), and will now soon cross the river again and reach Jericho (§ 126).

§ 126. BLIND BARTIMÆUS AND HIS COMPANION HEALED

At Jericho

Mark 10:46-52	Matt. 20:29-34	Luke 18:35-43
46 And they come to Jericho: and as he went out from Jericho, with his disciples and a great multitude, the son of Timæus, Bartimæus, a blind beggar, was sitting by the way side.	29 And as they went out from Jericho, a great multitude followed him.	35 And it came to pass, as he drew nigh unto Jericho,
47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me. 48 And many rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried out the more a great deal, Thou son of David, have mercy on me.	30 And behold, two ^a blind men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Jesus was passing by, cried out, saying, Lord, have mercy on us, thou Son of David. 31 And the multitude rebuked them, that they should hold their peace: but they cried out the more, saying, Lord, have mercy on us, thou son of David.	a certain blind man sat by the way side begging: 36 and hearing a multitude going by, he inquired what this meant. 37 And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by. 38 And he cried, saying, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me. 39 And they that went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried out the more a great deal, Thou son of David, have mercy on me.
49 And Jesus stood still, and said, Call ye him. And they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good cheer: rise, he calleth thee. 50 And he, casting away his garment, sprang up, and came to Jesus.	32 And Jesus stood still, and called them,	40 And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be brought unto him:
51 And Jesus answered him, and said, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? And the blind man said unto him, ¹ Rabboni, that I may receive my sight. 52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way; thy faith hath ² made thee	and said, What will ye that I should do unto you? 33 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened. 34 And Jesus, being moved with compassion, touched their eyes: and straightway they	and when he was come near, he asked him, 41 What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight. 42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath ² made thee whole. 43 And immediately he received his sight, and

whole. And straightway received their sight,
he received his sight, and followed
him in the way.

and followed him. followed him, glorifying
God: and all the
people, when they
saw it, gave praise
unto God.

¹ See [John 20:16](#).

² Or, *saved thee*.

^a Matthew mentions two blind men, while Mark and Luke describe one, probably the more conspicuous one.—The discrepancy as to place, "as he went out from Jericho," "as he drew nigh unto Jericho," is best explained by the recent suggestion that the healing occurred after he left the old Jericho, and as he was approaching the new Jericho which Herod the Great had built at some distance away. An older, and also possible explanation was that the blind men made application when he was approaching the city, but were not then healed, and only when he had left the city were they healed. (Comp. [Matt. 15:23 ff.](#), and [Mark 8:22 f.](#))

§ 127. JESUS VISITS ZACCHÆUS, AND SPEAKS THE PARABLE OF THE POUNDS,^a AND SETS OUT FOR JERUSALEM

Jericho

Luke 19:1-28

1 And he entered and was passing through Jericho. 2 And behold, a man called by name Zacchæus; and he was a chief publican, and he was rich. 3 And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for the crowd, because he was little of stature. 4 And he ran on before, and climbed up into a sycomore tree to see him: for he was to pass that way. 5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and said unto him, Zacchæus, make haste, and come down; for to-day I must abide at thy house. 6 And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully. 7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, He is gone in to lodge with a man that is a sinner. 8 And Zacchæus stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have wrongfully exacted aught of any man, I restore fourfold [*see Ex. 22:1; Num. 5:6-7*]. 9 And Jesus said unto him, To-day is salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he also is a son of Abraham. 10 For the Son of man came to seek and to save that which was lost [*Ezek. 34:16*].

11 And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and *because* they supposed that the kingdom of God was immediately to appear. 12 He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country, to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. 13 And he called ten ¹servants of his, and gave them ten ²pounds, and said unto them, Trade ye *herewith* till I come. 14 But his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him, saying, We will not that this man reign over us. 15 And it came to pass, when he was come back again, having received the kingdom, that he commanded these ¹servants, unto whom he had given the money, to be called to him, that he might know what they had gained by trading. 16 And the first came before him, saying, Lord, thy pound hath made ten pounds more. 17 And he said unto him, Well done, thou good ³servant: because thou wast found faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. 18 And the second came, saying, Thy pound, Lord, hath made five pounds. 19 And he said unto him also, Be thou also over five cities. 20 And ⁴another came, saying, Lord, behold, *here is* thy pound, which I kept laid up in a napkin: 21 for I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow. 22 He saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked ³servant. Thou knewest that I am an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow; 23 then wherefore gavest thou not my money into the bank, and ⁵I at my coming should have required it with interest? 24 And he said unto them that stood by, Take away from him the pound, and give it unto him that hath the ten pounds. 25 And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds. 26 I say unto you, that unto every one that hath shall be given; but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away from him. 27 Howbeit these mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

28 And when he had thus spoken, he went on before, going up to Jerusalem.

¹ Gr. *bondservants*.

² *Mina*, here translated a pound, is equal to one hundred drachmas. See [ch. 15:8](#).

³ Gr. *bondservant*.

⁴ Gr. *the other*.

⁵ Or, *I should have gone and required*.

^a The similar parable of the Talents was given several days later. See [§ 139](#). On this first occasion the illustration has a specific design (ver. 11 f.), which will not appear on the second, *viz.*, to check the wild enthusiasm of the multitude to make Jesus King in Jerusalem as they had once planned a year ago (John 6:15. [§ 73](#)).

PART XI THE LAST PUBLIC MINISTRY IN JERUSALEM

Friday before to Tuesday of Passion Week, Spring of A.D. 30 (or A.D. 29).^a Just before Passover. §§ 128a-138.

^a If the feast of [John 5:1](#) was a Passover, and so his ministry lasted over three years, then his death was pretty certainly in A.D. 30; otherwise in A.D. 29.

§ 128a. JESUS ARRIVES AT BETHANY,^a NEAR JERUSALEM

Friday afternoon

John 11:55 to 12:1, 9-11

55 Now the passover of the Jews was at hand: and many went up to Jerusalem out of the country before the passover, to purify themselves. 56 They sought therefore for Jesus, and spake one with another, as they stood in the temple, What think ye? That he will not come to the feast? 57 Now the chief priests and the Pharisees had given commandment, that, if any man knew where he was, he should shew it, that they might take him.

1 Jesus therefore six days before the passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was, whom Jesus raised from the dead.^b

9 The common people therefore of the Jews learned that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he raised from the dead. 10 But the chief priests took counsel that they might put Lazarus also to death; 11 because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

^a Compare former visits to this Bethany, §§ [104](#), [118](#), and see also below, [§ 141](#).

^b John ([12:2-8](#)) gives the supper in the house of Simon the leper at this stage, probably because it is the last mention of Bethany in his Gospel. It seems better to follow the order of Mark here in the location of the anointing of Jesus by Mary of Bethany.

In §§ 128b-138 we have the Saviour's movements and teachings on Sunday, Monday and Tuesday —the close of his public ministry, except the little that he said during the Jewish and Roman trial. All of his teaching thereafter will be given to his disciples.

§ 128b. HIS TRIUMPHAL ENTRY INTO JERUSALEM AS THE MESSIAH^a

From Bethany to Jerusalem and back (*Sunday*). A Day of Messianic Demonstration

Mark 11:1-11	Matt. 21:1-11, 14-17	Luke 19:29-44	John 12:12-19
<p>1 And when they draw nigh unto Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth two of his disciples, 2 and saith unto them, Go your way into the village that is over against you: and straightway as ye enter into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon no man ever yet sat; loose him, and bring him.</p> <p>3 And if any one say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye, The Lord hath need of him; and straightway he ²will send him ³back hither. 4 And they went away, and found a colt tied at the door without in the open street; and they loose him. 5 And certain of them that stood there said unto them, What do ye, loosing the colt? 6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had said: and they let them go. 7 And they bring the colt unto Jesus, and cast on him their garments; and he sat upon him.</p>	<p>1 And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and came unto Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then Jesus sent two disciples, 2 saying unto them, Go into the village that is over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose <i>them</i>, and bring <i>them</i> unto me.</p> <p>3 And if any one say aught unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them.</p> <p>6 And the disciples went, and did even as Jesus appointed them,</p> <p>7 and brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their garments; and he sat thereon.</p> <p>4 Now this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled</p>	<p>29 And it came to pass, when he drew nigh unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount that is called <i>the mount</i> of Olives, he sent two of the disciples, 30 saying, Go your way into the village over against <i>you</i>; in the which as ye enter ye shall find a colt tied, whereon no man ever yet sat: loose him, and bring him.</p> <p>31 And if any one ask you, Why do ye loose him? thus shall ye say, The Lord hath need of him.</p> <p>32 And they that were sent went away, and found even as he had said unto them. 33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the colt? 34 And they said, The Lord hath need of him. 35 And they brought him to Jesus: and they threw their garments upon the colt, and set Jesus thereon.</p>	<p>12 On the morrow ^aa great multitude that had come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, 13 took the branches of the palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried out, Hosanna: Blessed <i>is</i> he that cometh in the name of the Lord, even the King of Israel. 14 And Jesus, having found a young ass, sat thereon;</p>

which was spoken ¹by the prophet [see *Isa. 62:11; Zech. 9:9*], saying:

5 Tell ye the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, Meek, and riding upon an ass, And upon a colt the foal of an ass.

8 And many spread their garments upon the way; and others ⁴branches, which they had cut from the fields. ⁹ And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, Hosanna; Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord [see *Ps. 118:25-26*]: ¹⁰ Blessed *is* the kingdom that cometh, *the kingdom* of our father David: Hosanna in the highest.

8 And the most part of the multitude spread their garments in the way; and others cut branches from the trees, and spread them in the way. ⁹ And the multitudes that went before him, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the son of David: Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest.

36 And as he went, they spread their garments in the way. ³⁷ And as he was now drawing nigh, *even* at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the ⁵mighty works which they had seen; ³⁸ saying, Blessed *is* the King that cometh in the name of the Lord: peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

as it is written, ¹⁵ Fear not, daughter of Zion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt. ¹⁶ These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him. ¹⁷ The multitude therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of the tomb, and raised him from the dead, bare witness. ¹⁸ For this cause also the multitude went and met him, for that they heard that he had done this sign. ¹⁹ The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, ¹⁰Behold how ye prevail nothing: lo, the world is gone after him.

³⁹ And some of the Pharisees from the multitude said unto him, ⁶Master, rebuke thy disciples. ⁴⁰ And he answered and said, I tell you that, if these shall hold their peace, the stones will cry out.

⁴¹ And when he drew nigh, he saw the city and wept over it, ⁴² saying, ⁷If thou hadst known in this day, even thou, the things which belong unto peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes. ⁴³ For the days shall come upon thee, when thine enemies shall cast up a ⁸bank about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, ⁴⁴ and shall dash thee to the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation [see *Ps. 139:9*].

Mark 11:11

¹¹ And he entered into Jerusalem,

Matt. 21:10-11, 14-17

¹⁰ And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was stirred, saying, Who is this? ¹¹ And the multitudes said, This is the prophet, Jesus, from Nazareth of Galilee. ¹⁴ And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple: and he healed them.

into the temple;

¹⁵ But when the chief priests and the scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children that were crying in the temple and saying, Hosanna to

cast out them that sold and them that bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold the doves; 16 and he would not suffer that any man should carry a vessel through the temple. 17 And he taught, and said unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called a house of prayer for all the nations? but ye have made it a den of robbers. 18 And the chief priests and the scribes heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, for all the multitude was astonished at his teaching.

bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold the doves;

13 and he saith unto them, It is written, My house shall be called a house of prayer: but ye make it a den of robbers.

46 saying unto them, It is written [*see Isa. 56:7; Jer. 7:11*], And my house shall be a house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of robbers. 47 And he was teaching daily in the temple. But the chief priests and the scribes and the principal men of the people sought to destroy him: 48 and they could not find what they might do; for the people all hung upon him, listening.

¹ Or, *a single*.

² Many ancient authorities omit *of God*.

^a Once more at the close of the Ministry in Jerusalem, as at the beginning, Jesus asserts his authority over the Temple as the Messiah. In both instances his authority is sharply challenged by the Jewish rulers.

§ 130. THE DESIRE OF SOME GREEKS TO SEE JESUS PUZZLES THE DISCIPLES AND LEADS JESUS IN AGITATION OF SOUL TO INTERPRET LIFE AND DEATH AS SACRIFICE AND TO SHOW HOW BY BEING "LIFTED UP" HE WILL DRAW ALL MEN TO HIM

Jerusalem (*Monday*)

John 12:20-50

20 Now there were certain Greeks among those that went up to worship at the feast: 21 these therefore came to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and asked him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus. 22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: Andrew cometh, and Philip, and they tell Jesus. 23 And Jesus answereth them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. 24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a grain of wheat fall into the earth and die, it abideth by itself alone; but if it die, it beareth much fruit. 25 He that loveth his ¹life loseth it; and he that hateth his ¹life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal. 26 If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will the Father honour. 27 Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say [*see Ps. 42:6*]? Father, save me from this ²hour. But for this cause came I unto this hour. 28 Father, glorify thy name. There came therefore a voice out of heaven, *saying*, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again. 29 The multitude therefore, that stood by, and heard it, said that it had thundered: others said, An angel hath spoken to him. 30 Jesus answered and said, This voice hath not come for my sake, but for your sakes. 31 Now is ³the judgement of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. 32 And I, if I be lifted up ⁴from the earth, will draw all men unto myself. 33 But this he said, signifying by what manner of death he should die. 34 The multitude therefore answered him, We have heard out of the law that the Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man? 35 Jesus therefore said unto them, Yet a little while is the light ⁵among you. Walk while ye have the light, that darkness overtake you not: and he that

walketh in the darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. 36 While ye have the light, believe on the light, that ye may become sons of light.

These things spake Jesus, and he departed and hid himself from them. 37 But though he had done so many signs before them, yet they believed not^a on him: 38 that the word of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled [*see Isa. 53:1*], which he spake,

Lord, who hath believed our report?
And to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

39 For this cause they could not believe, for that Isaiah said again,

40 He hath blinded their eyes, and he hardened their heart;
Lest they should see with their eyes, and perceive with their heart,
And should turn,
And I should heal them.

41 These things said Isaiah [*see Isa. 6:1, 10*], because he saw his glory; and he spake of him. 42 Nevertheless even of the rulers many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess it, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: 43 for they loved the glory of men more than the glory of God.

44 And Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. 45 And he that beholdeth me beholdeth him that sent me. 46 I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me may not abide in the darkness. 47 And if any man hear my sayings, and keep them not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. 48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my sayings, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I spake, the same shall judge him in the last day. 49 For I spake not from myself; but the Father which sent me, he hath given me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. 50 And I know that his commandment is life eternal: the things therefore which I speak, even as the Father hath said unto me, so I speak.

¹ Or, *soul*.

² Or, *hour?*

³ Or, *a judgement*.

⁴ Or, *out of*.

⁵ Or, *in*.

⁶ Or, *was hidden from them*.

⁷ Or, *him*.

^a The rejection of Jesus by the Jews is clearly set forth by John's Gospel. The Pharisees made many timid and afraid.

§ 131. THE BARREN FIG TREE FOUND TO HAVE WITHERED

On the way from Bethany to Jerusalem. (*Tuesday*^a)

Mark 11:19-25
19 And every evening he went forth out of the city. 20 And as they passed by in the morning, they saw the fig tree withered away from the roots. 21 And Peter saith unto him, Rabbi, behold, the fig tree which

Matt. 21:19-22
19 And immediately the fig tree withered away. 20 And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How did the fig tree immediately wither away? 21 And

Luke 21:37, 38
37 And every day he was teaching in the temple; and every night he went out, and lodged in the mount that is called *the mount* of Olives. 38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, to hear him.

thou cursedst is
withered away. 22 And
Jesus answering saith
unto them, Have
faith in God. 23 Verily
I say unto you,
Whosoever shall say
unto this mountain, Be
thou taken up and
cast into the sea; and
shall not doubt in his
heart, but shall
believe that what he
saith cometh to pass;
he shall have it.
24 Therefore I say unto
you, All things
whatsoever ye pray and
ask for, believe that ye
have received them,
and ye shall have them.
25 And whensoever ye
stand praying, forgive,
if ye have aught against
any one; that your
Father also which is in
heaven may forgive
you your trespasses.³

Jesus answered and
said unto them,
Verily I say unto you,
If ye have faith, and
doubt not, ye shall
not only do what is
done to the fig tree,
but even if ye shall
say unto this mountain,
Be thou taken
up and cast into the
sea, it shall be done.
22 And all things,
whatsoever ye shall ask
in prayer, believing,
ye shall receive.

¹ Gr. *whenever evening came*.

² Some ancient authorities read *they*.

³ Many ancient authorities add ver. 26 *But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses*.

^a The Synoptic Gospels give more details of the teaching of Jesus on this Tuesday in the Temple and on the Mount of Olives than for any other single day. We had another Busy Day in Galilee (§§ 61-66).

§ 132. THE RULERS (SANHEDRIN) FORMALLY CHALLENGE^a THE AUTHORITY OF JESUS AS AN ACCREDITED TEACHER (RABBI)

Jesus bases His human authority on John the Baptist, His Forerunner who baptized him, and demands the Sanhedrin's opinion of the Baptism of John. This pertinent counter-question paralyzes the Jewish leaders and Jesus drives His argument home by three parables. (a) Parable of the Two Sons. (b) Parable of the Wicked Husbandmen. (c) Parable of the Marriage Feast of the King's Son.

In the court of the Temple. (*Tuesday^b*) A Day of Controversy

Mark 11:27-12:12
27 And they come
again to Jerusalem:
and as he was walking
in the temple, there
come to him the
chief priests, and the
scribes, and the
elders; 28 and they said
unto him,

Matt. 21:23-22:14
23 And when he was
come into the temple,
the chief priests and
the elders of the
people came unto him
as he was teaching,
and said,

Luke 20:1-19
1 And it came to
pass, on one of the
days, as he was teaching
the people in the
temple, and preaching
the gospel, there came
upon him the chief
priests and the scribes
with the elders; 2 and
they spake, saying
unto him, Tell us: By
what authority doest

By what authority

By
what authority doest

doest thou these things? or who gave thee this authority to do these things? 29 And Jesus said unto them, I will ask of you one ¹question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things. 30 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or from men? answer me. 31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him? 32 ⁷But should we say, From men—they feared the people: ⁸for all verily held John to be a prophet. 33 And they answered Jesus and say, We know

not. And Jesus saith unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

1 And he began to speak unto them in parables. A man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged a pit for the winepress, and built a

thou these things? and who gave thee this authority? 24 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one ¹question, which if ye tell me, I likewise will tell you by what authority I do these things. 25 The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven or from men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why then did ye not believe him? 26 But if we shall say, From men; we fear the multitude; for all hold John as a prophet. 27 And they answered Jesus, and said, We know not.

He also said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things. 28 But what think ye? A man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, ²Son, go work to-day in the vineyard. 29 And he answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented himself, and went. 30 And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I *go*, sir: and went not. 31 Whether of the twain did the will of his father? They say, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. 32 For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye saw it, did not even repent yourselves afterward, that ye might believe him.

33 Hear another parable: There was a man that was a householder, which planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged a winepress in it, and

thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority? 3 And he answered and said unto them, I also will ask you a ¹question; and tell me: 4 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or from men?

5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why did ye not believe him? 6 But if we shall say, From men; all the people will stone us: for they be persuaded that John was a prophet. 7 And they answered, that they knew not whence *it* was. 8 And Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

9 And he began to speak unto the people this parable [*see Isa. 5:1-2*]: A man planted a vineyard,

tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into another country.

2 And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a ⁹servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruits of the vineyard. 3 And they took him, and beat him, and sent him away empty. 4 And again he sent unto them another ⁹servant; and him they wounded in the head, and handled shamefully. 5 And he sent another; and him they killed: and many others; beating some, and killing some. 6 He had yet one, a beloved son: he sent him last unto them, saying, They will reverence my son. 7 But those husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they took him, and killed him, and cast him forth out of the vineyard. 9 What therefore will the lord of the vineyard do?

he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

10 Have ye not read even this scripture;

The stone which the builders rejected,
The same was made the head of the corner:

11 This was from the Lord,
And it is marvelous in our eyes?

built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into another country.

34 And when the season of the fruits drew near, he sent his ³servants to the husbandmen, to receive ⁴his fruits. 35 And the husbandmen took his ³servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another. 36 Again, he sent other ³servants more than the first: and they did unto him in like manner.

37 But afterward he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.

38 But the husbandmen, when they saw the son, said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and take his inheritance.

39 And they took him, and cast him forth out of the vineyard, and killed him. 40 When therefore the lord of the vineyard shall come, what will he do unto those husbandmen? 41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those miserable men, and will let out the vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures [*see Ps. 118:22-23*],

The stone which the builders rejected,
The same was made the head of the corner:

This was from the Lord,
And it is marvelous in our eyes?

43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth

and let it out to husbandmen, and went into another country for a long time. 10 And at the season he sent unto the husbandmen a ⁹servant, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty.

11 And he sent yet another ⁹servant: and him also they beat, and handled him shamefully, and sent him away empty.

12 And he sent yet a third: and him also they wounded, and cast him forth. 13 And the Lord of the vineyard said, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned one with another, saying, This is the heir: let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours. 15 And they cast him forth out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore will the lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16 He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others. And when they heard it, they said, ¹⁰God forbid.

17 But he looked upon them, and said, What then is this that is written [*see Ps. 118:22*],

The stone which the builders rejected,
The same was made the head of the corner?

the fruits thereof.

44 ⁵And he that falleth on this stone shall be broken to pieces; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will scatter him as dust. 45 And when the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

12 And they sought to lay hold on him; and they feared the multitude; for they perceived that he spake the parable against them: and they left him, and went away.

46 And when they sought to lay hold on him, they feared the multitudes, because they took him for a prophet.

18 Every one that falleth on that stone shall be broken to pieces; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will scatter him as dust [*see Isa. 8:14-15*].

19 And the scribes and the chief priests

sought to lay hands on him in that very hour; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he spake this parable against them.

1 And Jesus answered and spake again in parables unto them, saying, 2 The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a certain king, which made a marriage feast for his son, 3 and sent forth his ³servants to call them that were bidden to the marriage feast: and they would not come. 4 Again he sent forth other ³servants, saying, Tell them that are bidden, Behold, I have made ready my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come to the marriage feast. 5 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his own farm, another to his merchandise: 6 and the rest laid hold on his ³servants, and entreated them shamefully, and killed them. 7 But the king was wroth; and he sent his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned their city. 8 Then saith he to his ³servants, The wedding is ready, but they that were bidden were not worthy. 9 Go ye therefore unto the partings of the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage feast. 10 And those ³servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was filled with guests. 11 But when the king came in to behold the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding-garment: 12 and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding-garment? And he was speechless. 13 Then the king said to the ⁶servants, Bind him hand and foot, and cast him out into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. 14 For many are called, but few chosen.

¹ Gr. *word*.

² Gr. *Child*.

³ Gr. *bondservants*.

⁴ Or, *the fruits of it*.

⁵ Some ancient authorities omit ver. 44.

⁶ Or, *ministers*.

⁷ Or, *But shall we say, From men?*

⁸ Or, *for all held John to be a prophet indeed*.

⁹ Gr. *bondservant*.

¹⁰ Gr. *Be it not so*.

^a It was very common to test a Rabbi with hard questions. See this continued in the following sections. In like manner the Fourth Gospel gave us much animated dialogue between Jesus and the Jews at Jerusalem in chap. 5, and chap. 7-10. The Sanhedrin were within their rights in challenging the ecclesiastical and scholastic (scribal) standing of Jesus. He did not dodge in his answer.

^b On this last day of Christ's public ministry the Sanhedrin seek to break the power of Jesus with the people whose hero he is since the Triumphal Entry. The first attempt fails miserably, but it is followed by a series of other efforts to entrap Jesus and so turn the crowd against him. The three parables leave the rulers exposed by Jesus and they keenly feel the denunciation of the reply of Jesus.

**§ 133. THE PHARISEES AND THE HERODIANS TRY TO ENSNARE JESUS ABOUT
PAYING TRIBUTE TO CÆSAR**

<p>Mark 12:13-17</p> <p>13 And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, that they might catch him in talk.</p> <p>14 And when they were come, they say unto him, ¹Master, we know that thou art true, and carest not for any one: for thou regardest not the person of men, but of a truth teachest the way of God: Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cæsar, or not? 15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a ²penny, that I may see it. 16 And they brought it. And he saith unto them,</p> <p>Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Cæsar's. 17 And Jesus said unto them, Render unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and unto God the things that are God's.</p> <p align="right">And they marvelled greatly at him.</p>	<p>Matt. 22:15-22</p> <p>15 Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might ensnare him in <i>his</i> talk. 16 And they send to him their disciples,^a with the Herodians, saying, ¹Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, and carest not for any one: for thou regardest not the person of men. 17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cæsar, or not? 18 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites? 19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought unto him a ²penny. 20 And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? 21 They say unto him, Cæsar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's; and unto God the things that are God's.</p> <p align="right">22 And when they heard it, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.</p>	<p>Luke 20:20-26</p> <p>20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which feigned themselves to be righteous, that they might take hold of his speech, so as to deliver him up to the rule and to the authority of the governor. 21 And they asked him, saying, ¹Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, and acceptest not the person <i>of any</i>, but of a truth teachest the way of God [<i>see John 3:2</i>]: 22 Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cæsar, or not? 23 But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, 24 Shew me a ²penny.</p> <p align="right">Whose image and superscription hath it? And they said, Cæsar's. 25 And he said unto them, Then render unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and unto God the things that are God's. 26 And they were not able to take hold of the saying before the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.</p>
---	--	---

¹ Or, *Teacher*.

² See marginal note on [Matt. 18:28](#).

^a The Pharisees send a group of their keenest students to go with the Herodians to catch Jesus with the dilemma about paying tribute to Cæsar, a live question in current politics and theology. They offered Jesus the alternative of popular disfavor or of disloyalty to the Roman government.

**§ 134. THE SADDUCEES ASK HIM A PUZZLING QUESTION^a ABOUT THE
RESURRECTION**

In the Court of the Temple. (*Tuesday*)

Mark 12:18-27
18 And there come unto him Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying, ¹⁹ ²Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a man's brother die, and leave a wife behind him, and leave no child, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. ²⁰ There

were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed; ²¹ and the second took her, and died, leaving no seed behind him; and the third likewise: ²² and the seven left no seed. Last of all the woman also died. ²³ In the resurrection whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife. ²⁴ Jesus said unto them, Is it not for this cause that ye err, that ye know not the scriptures, nor the power of God?

²⁵ For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as angels in heaven.

²⁶ But as touching the dead, that they are raised; have ye not read in the book of Moses, in *the place concerning* the Bush, how God spake unto him, saying, I *am* the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? ²⁷ He is not the God of the dead, but of the living: ye do greatly err.

Matt. 22:23-33
²³ On that day there came to him Sadducees, ¹which say that there is no resurrection: and they asked him, ²⁴ saying, ²Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother ³shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

²⁵ Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first married and deceased, and having no seed left his wife unto his brother; ²⁶ in like manner the second also, and the third, unto the ⁴seventh. ²⁷ And after them all the woman died. ²⁸ In the resurrection therefore whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her. ²⁹ But Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.

³⁰ For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as angels⁵ in heaven.

³¹ But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,

³² I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not *the God* of the dead, but of the living. ³³ And when the multitudes heard it, they were astonished at his teaching.

Luke 20:27-40
²⁷ And there came to him certain of the Sadducees, they which say that there is no resurrection; ²⁸ and they asked him, saying, ²Master, Moses wrote unto us [*see Gen. 38:8; Deut. 25:5-6*], that if a man's brother die, having a wife, and he be childless, his brother should take the wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. ²⁹ There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died childless; ³⁰ and the second; ³¹ and the third took her; and likewise the seven also left no children, and died.

³² Afterward the woman also died. ³³ In the resurrection therefore whose wife of them shall she be? for the seven had her to wife. ³⁴ And Jesus said unto them,

The sons of this ⁶world marry, and are given in marriage: ³⁵ but they that are accounted worthy to attain to that ⁶world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: ³⁶ for neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are sons of God, being sons of the resurrection.

³⁷ But that the dead are raised,

even Moses shewed in *the place concerning* the Bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob [*see Ex. 3:6*]. ³⁸ Now he is not the God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him. ³⁹ And certain of the scribes answering said, ²Master, thou

hast well said. 40 For they durst not any more ask him any question.

¹ Gr. *saying*.

² Or, *Teacher*.

³ Gr. *shall perform the duty of a husband's brother to his wife*. Compare Deut. 25:5.

⁴ Gr. *seven*.

⁵ Many ancient authorities add *of God*.

⁶ Or, *age*.

^a Probably a stock conundrum that the Sadducees had often propounded to the discomfort of the Pharisees.

§ 135. THE PHARISEES REJOICE OVER THE ROUT OF THE SADDUCEES AND A PHARISAIC LAWYER ASKS JESUS A LEGAL QUESTION

In the Court of the Temple. (*Tuesday*)

Mark 12:28-34

28 And one of the scribes came, and heard them questioning together, and knowing that he had answered them well, asked him,

What commandment is the first of all [*see Deut. 6:4*]? 29 Jesus answered, The first is, Hear, O Israel; ³The Lord our God [*see Deut. 6:4*], the Lord is one: 30 and thou shalt love the Lord thy God ⁴with all thy heart, and ⁴with all thy soul, and ⁴with all thy mind, and ⁴with all thy strength [*see Deut. 6:5*]. 31 The second is this, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself [*see Lev. 19:18*]. There is none other commandment greater than these. 32 And the scribe said unto him, Of a truth, ¹Master, thou hast well said that he is one; and there is none other but he: 33 and to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbor as himself, is much more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices [*see 1 Sam. 15:22*].

34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.

Matt. 22:34-40

34 But the Pharisees, when they heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, gathered themselves together. 35 And one of them, a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, 36 ¹Master, which is the great commandment in the law? 37 And he said unto him,

Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. 38 This is the great and first commandment. 39 ²And a second like *unto it* is this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 40 On these two commandments hangeth the whole law, and the prophets.

¹ Or, *Teacher*.

² Or, *And a second is like unto it, Thou shalt love etc.*

³ Or, *The Lord is our God; the Lord is one.*

⁴ Gr. *from.*

§ 136. JESUS, TO THE JOY OF THE MULTITUDE, SILENCES HIS ENEMIES BY THE PERTINENT QUESTION OF THE MESSIAH'S DESCENT FROM DAVID AND LORDSHIP OVER DAVID

In the Court of the Temple. (*Tuesday*)

Mark 12:35-37	Matt. 22:41-46	Luke 20:41-44
35 And Jesus answered and said, as he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that the Christ is the son of David?	41 Now while the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them a question, 42 saying, What think ye of the Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, <i>The son</i> of David. 43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in the Spirit call him Lord, saying,	41 And he said unto them, How say they that the Christ is David's son?
36 David himself said in the Holy Spirit, [<i>see Ps. 110:1</i>], The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, Till I make thine enemies ¹ the footstool of thy feet.	44 The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, Till I put thine enemies underneath thy feet?	42 For David himself saith in the book of Psalms, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, 43 Till I make thine enemies the footstool of thy feet.
37 David himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he his son? And ² the common people heard him gladly.	45 If David then calleth him Lord, how is he his son? 46 And no one was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man from that day forth ask him any more questions.	44 David therefore calleth him Lord, and how is he his son?

¹ Some ancient authorities read *underneath thy feet*.

² Or, *the great multitude*.

§ 137. IN HIS LAST PUBLIC DISCOURSE, JESUS SOLEMNLY DENOUNCES^a THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES (COMP. § 107)

In the Court of the Temple. (*Tuesday*)

Mark 12:38-40	Matt. 23:1-39	Luke 20:45-47
1	Then spake Jesus	45 And in the hearing

38 And in his teaching he said, Beware of the scribes,

which desire to walk in long robes, and *to have* salutations in the marketplaces, 39 and chief seats in the synagogues, and chief places at feasts:

40 they which devour widows' houses, ¹²and for a pretence make long prayers; these shall receive greater condemnation.

15 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is become so, ye make him twofold more a son of ⁷hell than yourselves.

to the multitudes and to his disciples, saying, ²The scribes and the Pharisees sit on Moses' seat: ³all things therefore whatsoever they bid you, *these* do and observe: but do not ye after their works; for they say, and do not. ⁴Yea, they bind heavy burdens ¹and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with their finger. ⁵But all their works they do for to be seen of men [*see Ex. 13:9; Num. 15:38-39; Deut. 6:8; 11:18*]: for they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders *of their garments*, ⁶and love the chief place at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues, ⁷and the salutations in the marketplaces, and to be called of men, Rabbi. ⁸But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your teacher, and all ye are brethren. ⁹And call no man your father on the earth: for one is your Father, ²which is in heaven. ¹⁰Neither be ye called masters: for one is your master, *even* the Christ. ¹¹But he that is ³greatest among you shall be your ⁴servant. ¹²And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and whosoever shall humble himself shall be exalted. ¹³But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye shut the kingdom of heaven ⁵against men: for ye enter not in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering in to enter.⁶

of all the people he said unto his disciples, ⁴⁶Beware of the scribes,

which desire to walk in long robes, and love salutations in the marketplaces, and chief seats in the synagogues, and chief places at feasts;

47 which devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater condemnation.

16 Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the ⁸temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the ⁸temple, he is ^{9a}a debtor. 17 Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the ⁸temple that hath sanctified the gold? 18 And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gift that is upon it, he is ^{9a}a debtor. 19 Ye blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift? 20 He therefore that sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. 21 And he that sweareth by the ⁸temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. 22 And he that sweareth by the heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

23 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye tithe mint and ¹⁰anise and cummin [*see Lev. 27:30; Mic. 6:8*], and have left undone the weightier matters of the law, judgement, and mercy, and faith: but these ye ought to have done, and not to have left the other undone. 24 Ye blind guides, which strain out the gnat, and swallow the camel.

25 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full from extortion and excess. 26 Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first the inside of the cup and of the platter, that the outside thereof may become clean also.

27 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which outwardly appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. 28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but inwardly ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

29 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and garnish the tombs of the righteous, 30 and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we should not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye witness to yourselves, that ye are sons of them that slew the prophets. 32 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. 33 Ye serpents, ye offspring of vipers, how shall ye escape the judgement of ⁷hell? 34 Therefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: some of them shall ye kill and crucify; and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from city to city: 35 that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of Abel the righteous unto the blood of Zachariah son of Barachiah, whom ye slew between the sanctuary and the altar [*see Gen. 4:8; 2 Chron. 24:20-21*]. 36 Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killeth the prophets, and stoneth them that are sent unto her! how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! 38 Behold, your house is left unto you ¹¹desolate [*see Jer. 12:7; 39 22:5*]. 39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord [*see Ps. 118:26*].

¹ Many ancient authorities omit *and grievous to be borne*.

² Gr. *the heavenly*.

³ Gr. *greater*.

⁴ Or, *minister*.

⁵ Gr. *before*.

⁶ Some authorities insert here, or after ver. 12, ver. 14, *Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, even while for a pretence ye make long prayers: therefore ye shall receive greater condemnation*. See Mark 12:40, Luke 20:47, above.

⁷ Gr. *Gehenna*.

⁸ Or, *sanctuary*: as in ver. 35.

⁹ Or, *bound* by his oath.

¹⁰ Or, *dill*.

¹¹ Some ancient authorities omit *desolate*.

¹² Or, *even while for a pretence they make*.

^a Jesus has been criticized for lack of self-control in this exposure of the hypocrisy of the Pharisees. One must bear in mind the tremendous sins of which the Pharisees are guilty. The very teachers of righteousness are now in the act of rejecting and finally crucifying the Son of God. See my book, *The Pharisees and Jesus*, for full discussion.

**§ 138. JESUS CLOSELY OBSERVES^a THE CONTRIBUTIONS IN THE TEMPLE, AND
COMMENDS THE POOR WIDOW'S GIFT**

(Tuesday)

Mark 12:41-44

Luke 21:1-4

41 And he sat down over against the treasury, and beheld how the multitude cast ¹ money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much. 42 And there came ² a poor widow, and she cast in two mites, which make a farthing. 43 And he called unto him his disciples, and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, This poor widow cast in more than all they which are casting into the treasury: 44 for they all did cast in of their superfluity; but she of her want did cast in all that she had, <i>even</i> all her living.	1 And he looked up, ³ and saw the rich men that were casting their gifts into the treasury. 2 And he saw a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites. 3 And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, This poor widow cast in more than they all: 4 for all these did of their superfluity cast in unto the gifts: but she of her want did cast in all the living that she had.
--	--

¹ Gr. *brass*.

² Gr. *one*.

³ Or, *and saw them that ... treasury, and they were rich*.

^a Notice that this was the last occurrence in the Saviour's public ministry, except the trial and the crucifixion. This is the last appearance of Jesus in the Temple. His public teaching is over save the words of defence in his trial and the seven sayings on the Cross. The Pharisees and Sadducees had withdrawn in terror at the explosion of the wrath of Jesus and even the disciples were at some distance as Jesus sat alone by the treasury. It is useless further to plead with his enemies. The task now remains to get the disciples prepared for the Master's death and the time is short and they as yet have completely failed to grasp the fact or the significance of his death and the promise of his resurrection on the third day.

**PART XII
IN THE SHADOW WITH JESUS**

Tuesday afternoon to Thursday night of Passion Week, A.D. 30 (or 29). Jerusalem.

§§ 139-152. Jesus now seeks to prepare the disciples for the tragedy of His death and for carrying on His work after His departure.

§ 139. SITTING ON THE MOUNT OF OLIVES, JESUS SPEAKS TO HIS DISCIPLES ABOUT THE DESTRUCTION OF JERUSALEM, AND HIS OWN SECOND COMING, IN APOCALYPTIC LANGUAGE. THE GREAT ESCHATOLOGICAL DISCOURSE^a

(Tuesday Afternoon)

^a This great discourse has as its background the death of Christ. Further on as part punishment for this crime lies the destruction of Jerusalem. This catastrophe is itself a symbol of the end of the world and in one sense a coming of Christ in power and judgment. But Christ boldly predicts his own personal return to earth, though the time is not revealed. But he does exhort an expectant attitude toward the promises of his coming and readiness for his return which will be at an unexpected hour. Jesus employs the common Jewish apocalyptic imagery to portray this most difficult subject. Some scholars insist that Jesus was himself merely a wild enthusiast who was carried away by the Messianic hopes of his people, but that is a one-sided and distorted view of Christ's life and ignores the great mass of his ethical teaching. It forgets also that Jesus has a world program of conquest and of power. The various aspects of the discourse are not kept distinct. Some think that the Gospels have misunderstood or misrepresented Jesus in this discourse. But we can catch the general drift of the teaching and leave alone minute details of time and place against which Jesus himself warned us.

	Mark 13:1-37	Matt. 24 and 25	Luke 21:5-36
<i>1 Occasion of the Prophecy about the Destruction of the Temple.</i>	1 And as he went forth out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, ¹⁸ Master, behold, what manner of stones and what manner of buildings!	1 And Jesus went out from the temple, and was going on his way; and his disciples came to him to shew him the buildings of the temple. 2 But he answered and said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.	5 And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and offerings, he said, ⁶ As for these things which ye behold,
	2 And Jesus said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left here one stone upon another, which shall not be thrown down.	2 But he answered and said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.	the days will come, in which there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.
<i>2 Inquiry for Further Light from Peter and James and John and Andrew on Christ's Second Coming and the End of the World.</i>	3 And as he sat on the mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately,	3 And as he sat on the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying,	7 And they asked him, saying, ¹⁸ Master, when therefore shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when these things are about to come to pass?
	4 Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when these things are all about to be accomplished?	Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy ¹ coming, and of ² the end of the world?	8 And he said, Take heed that ye be not led astray: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am <i>he</i> ; and
	5 And Jesus began to say unto them, Take heed that no man lead you astray.	4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man lead you astray. ⁵ For many shall come in my name, saying,	Take heed that ye be not led astray: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am <i>he</i> ; and, The time is at hand: go ye
	6 Many shall come in my name, saying, I am <i>he</i> ; and	5 For many shall come in my name, saying,	

shall lead many astray.
7 And when ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars, be not troubled: *these things* must needs come to pass; but the end is not yet.
8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: there shall be earthquakes in divers places; there shall be famines:

I am the Christ; and shall lead many astray.
6 And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for *these things* must needs come to pass; but the end is not yet.
7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines and earthquakes in divers places.

not after them.
9 And when ye shall hear of wars and tumults, be not terrified: for these things must needs come to pass first; but the end is not immediately.
10 Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: 11 and there shall be great earthquakes, and in divers places famines and pestilences; and there shall be terrors and great signs from heaven.

these things are the beginning of travail [*see Isa. 19:2*].
9 But take ye heed to yourselves: for they shall deliver you up to councils; and in synagogues shall ye be beaten; and before governors and kings shall ye stand for my sake, for a testimony unto them.
10 And the gospel must first be preached unto all the nations.
11 And when they lead you *to judgement*, and deliver you up, be not anxious beforehand what ye shall speak: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost. 12 And brother shall deliver up

8 But all these things are the beginning of travail.
9 Then shall they deliver you up unto tribulation, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all the nations for my name's sake.

12 But before all these things, they shall lay their hands on you, and shall persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons, ²²bringing you before kings and governors for my name's sake. 13 It shall turn unto you for a testimony.

10 And then shall many stumble, and shall deliver

14 Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate beforehand how to answer: 15 for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to withstand or to gainsay. 16 But ye shall be delivered

brother to death, and the father his child; and children shall rise up against parents, and ¹⁹cause them to be put to death [*see Micah 7:6*]. 13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake:

up one another, and shall hate one another.

up even by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolk, and friends; and *some* of you ²³shall they cause to be put to death. 17 And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake. 18 And not a hair of your head shall perish. 19 In your patience ye shall win your ²⁴souls.

but he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved.

11 And many false prophets shall arise, and shall lead many astray. 12 And because iniquity shall be multiplied, the love of the many shall wax cold. 13 But he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved. 14 And ³this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole ⁴world for a testimony unto all the nations; and then shall the end come.

3 Sign of the Destruction of Jerusalem. 14 But when ye see the abomination of desolation standing where he ought not

15 When therefore ye see the abomination of desolation, which was spoken of ⁵by Daniel the prophet [*see Dan. 9:27; 11:31; 12:11*], standing in ⁶the holy place (let him that readeth understand),

(let him that readeth understand),

then let them that are in Judea flee unto the mountains: 15 and let him that is on the housetop not

16 then let them that are in Judea flee unto the mountains: 17 let him that is on the housetop not

20 But when ye see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that her desolation is at hand. 21 Then let them that are in Judea flee unto the mountains; and let them that are in the

go down, nor enter in, to take anything out of his house: 16 and let him that is in the field not return back to take his cloke.

go down to take out the things that are in his house: 18 and let him that is in the field not return back to take his cloke.

midst of her depart out; and let not them that are in the country enter therein.

17 But woe unto them that are with child and to them that give suck in those days! 18 And pray ye that it be not in the winter. 19 For those days shall be tribulation, such as there hath not been the like from the beginning of the creation which God created until now, and never shall be. 20 And except the Lord had shortened the days, no flesh would have been saved: but for the elect's sake, whom he chose, he shortened the days.

19 But woe unto them that are with child and to them that give suck in those days! 20 And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on a sabbath: 21 for then shall be great tribulation, such as hath not been from the beginning of the world until now, no, nor ever shall be [see Dan. 12:1]. 22 And except those days had been shortened, no flesh would have been saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

22 For these are days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. 23 Woe unto them that are with child and to them that give suck in those days!

for there shall be great distress upon the ²⁵land, and wrath unto this people. 24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

4 *False Christs and the Second Coming.*

21 And then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is the Christ; or, Lo, there; believe ⁷it not: 22 for

23 Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is the Christ, or, Here; believe ⁷it not. 24 For

there shall arise false Christs and false prophets, and shall shew signs and wonders, that they may lead astray, if possible, the elect.

23 But take ye heed: behold, I have told you all things beforehand.

24 But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall be falling from heaven,

and the powers that are in the heavens shall be shaken.

26 And then shall they see

there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; so as to lead astray, if possible, even the elect [*see Deut. 13:1*].

25 Behold, I have told you beforehand. 26 If therefore they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the wilderness; go not forth: Behold, he is in the inner chambers; believe ^{it} not. 27 For as the lightning cometh forth from the east, and is seen even unto the west; so shall be the ¹coming of the Son of man.

28 Wheresoever the carcase is, there will the ⁹eagles be gathered together.

29 But immediately, after the tribulation of those days, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven,

and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: 30 and then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven [*see Zech. 12:12*]: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man

25 And there shall be signs in sun and moon and stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, in perplexity for the roaring of the sea and the billows; 26 men ²⁶fainting for fear, and for expectation of the things which are coming on ²⁷the world: for the powers of the heavens shall be shaken [*see Isa. 13:9-10; Ezek. 32:7-8; Joel 2:1-2, 10-11, 30-31; Amos 8:9; Zeph. 1:14-16*].

27 And then shall they see

the Son of man coming in clouds with great power and glory. 27 And then shall he send forth the angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. 31 And he shall send forth his angels ¹⁰with ^{11a} great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. [see *Dan. 7:13-14 (Septuagint)*]

28 But when these things begin to come to pass, look up, and lift up your heads; because your redemption draweth nigh. [see *Deut. 30:4 (Septuagint); Isa. 27:12-13; Zech. 2:6 (Septuagint)*]

Parable of the Fig Tree.

28 Now from the fig tree learn her parable: when her branch is now become tender, and putteth forth its leaves, ye know that the summer is nigh; 29 even so ye also, when ye see these things coming to pass, know ye that ¹²he is nigh, *even* at the doors. 30 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, until all these things be accomplished. 31 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away. 32 But of that day or that hour knoweth no one, not even the angels in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

32 Now from the fig tree learn her parable: when her branch is now become tender, and putteth forth its leaves, ye know that the summer is nigh; 33 even so ye also, when ye see all these things, know ye that ¹²he is nigh, *even* at the doors. 34 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be accomplished. 35 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away. 36 But of that day and hour knoweth no one, not even the angels of heaven, ¹³neither the Son, but the Father only. 37 And as *were* the days of Noah, so shall be the ¹coming

29 And he spake to them a parable: Behold the fig tree, and all trees: 30 when they now shoot forth, ye see it and know of your own selves that the summer is now nigh. 31 Even so ye also, when ye see these things coming to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh. 32 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all things be accomplished. 33 Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

of the Son of man [*see Gen. 6:11-13; 7:7, 21-23*]. 38 For as in those days which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, 39 and they knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall be the ¹coming of the Son of man. 40 Then shall two men be in the field; one is taken, and one is left: 41 two women *shall be* grinding at the mill; one is taken, and one is left.

5 Readiness urged by Series of Parables.

33 Take ye heed, watch ²⁰and pray: for ye know not when the time is. 34 *It is as when* a man, sojourning in another country, having left his house, and given authority to his ²¹servants, to each one his work, commanded also the porter to

34 But take heed to yourselves, lest haply your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and that day come on you suddenly as a snare: 35 for *so* shall it come upon all them that dwell on the face of all the earth.

Parable of the Porter

watch. 35 Watch therefore: for ye know not when the lord of the house cometh, whether at even, or at midnight, or at cockcrowing, or in the morning; 36 lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping. 37 And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.

42 Watch therefore: for ye know not on what day your Lord cometh.

36 But watch ye at every season, making supplication, that ye may prevail to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

Parable of the Master of the House.

43 ¹⁴But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what watch the thief was coming, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to

Matt. 24 and 25

*Parable of
the Faithful
Servant and
of the Evil
Servant.*

be ¹⁵broken through. 44 Therefore be ye also ready: for
in an hour that ye think not the Son of man cometh.
45 Who then is the faithful and wise ¹⁶servant, whom
his lord hath set over his household, to give them their
food in due season? 46 Blessed is that ¹⁶servant, whom
his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. 47 Verily I
say unto you, that he will set him over all that he hath.
48 But if that evil ¹⁶servant shall say in his heart, My lord
tarrieth; 49 and shall begin to beat his fellow-servants,
and shall eat and drink with the drunken;
50 the lord of that ¹⁶servant shall come in a day when
he expecteth not, and in an hour when he knoweth not,
51 and shall ¹⁷cut him asunder, and appoint his portion
with the hypocrites: there shall be the weeping and
gnashing of teeth.

¹ Gr. *presence*.

² Or, *the consummation of the age*.

³ Or, *these good tidings*.

⁴ Gr. *inhabited earth*.

⁵ Or, *through*.

⁶ Or, *a holy place*.

⁷ Or, *him*.

⁸ Or, *them*.

⁹ Or, *vultures*.

¹⁰ Many ancient authorities read *with a great trumpet, and they shall gather &c*.

¹¹ Or, *a trumpet of great sound*.

¹² Or, *it*.

¹³ Many authorities, some ancient, omit *neither the Son*.

¹⁴ Or, *But this ye know*.

¹⁵ Gr. *digged through*.

¹⁶ Gr. *bondservant*.

¹⁷ Or, *severely scourge him*.

¹⁸ Or, *Teacher*.

¹⁹ Or, *put them to death*.

²⁰ Some ancient authorities omit *and pray*.

²¹ Gr. *bondservants*.

²² Gr. *you being brought*.

²³ Or, *shall they put to death*.

²⁴ Or, *lives*.

²⁵ Or, *earth*.

²⁶ Or, *expiring*.

²⁷ Gr. *the inhabited earth*.

Matt. chap. 25

*Parable of
the Ten
Virgins.*

1 Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto
ten virgins, which took their ¹lamps, and went forth
to meet the bridegroom. 2 And five of them were
foolish, and five were wise. 3 For the foolish, when
they took their ¹lamps, took no oil with them: 4 but the
wise took oil in their vessels with their ¹lamps. 5 Now
while the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and

slept. 6 But at midnight there is a cry, Behold, the bridegroom! Come ye forth to meet him. 7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their ¹lamps. 8 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our ¹lamps are going out. 9 But the wise answered, saying, Peradventure there will not be enough for us and you: go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. 10 And while they went away to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage feast: and the door was shut. 11 Afterward, come also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. 12 But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. 13 Watch therefore, for ye know not the day nor the hour.

Parable of the Talents.

14 For *it is* as *when* a man, going into another country, called his own ²servants, and delivered unto them his goods. 15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, to another one; to each according to his several ability; and he went on his journey. 16 Straightway he that received the five talents went and traded with them, and made other five talents. 17 In like manner he also that *received* the two gained other two. 18 But he that received the one went away and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. 19 Now after a long time the lord of those ²servants cometh, and maketh a reckoning with them. 20 And he that received the five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: lo, I have gained other five talents. 21 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful ³servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will set thee over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. 22 And he also that *received* the two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: lo, I have gained other two talents. 23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful ³servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will set thee over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. 24 And he also that had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou didst not sow, and gathering where thou didst not scatter: 25 and I was afraid, and went away and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, thou hast thine own. 26 But his lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful ³servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I did not scatter; 27 thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the bankers, and at my coming I should have received back mine own with interest. 28 Take ye away therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him that hath the ten talents. 29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away. 30 And cast ye out the unprofitable ³servant into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

6 Picture of the Judgment with Parable of the Sheep and the Goats.

31 But when the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the angels with him [*see Zech. 14:5*], then shall he sit on the throne of his glory: 32 and before him shall be gathered all the nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as the shepherd separateth the sheep from the ⁴goats; 33 and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the ⁴goats on the left. 34 Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: 35 for I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in; 36 naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. 37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or athirst, and gave thee drink? 38 And when saw we

thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? 39 And when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? 40 And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it unto one of these my brethren, *even* these least, ye did it unto me. 41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, ⁵Depart from me, ye cursed, into the eternal fire which is prepared for the devil and his angels: 42 for I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: 43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in; naked, and ye clothed me not; sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. 44 Then shall they also answer, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? 45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not unto one of these least, ye did it not unto me. 46 And these shall go away into eternal punishment: but the righteous into eternal life [*see Dan. 12:2*].

¹ Or, *torches*.

² Gr. *bondservants*.

³ Gr. *bondservant*.

⁴ Gr. *kids*.

⁵ Or, *Depart from me under a curse*.

§ 140. JESUS PREDICTS HIS CRUCIFIXION TWO DAYS HENCE (JEWISH FRIDAY)

Probably at Bethany on Tuesday evening (beginning of Jewish Wednesday). The Rulers in Jerusalem plot His death

Mark 14:1-2	Matt. 26:1-5	Luke 22:1-2
<p>1 Now after two days was <i>the feast of the passover</i> and the unleavened bread:</p>	<p>1 And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these words, he said unto his disciples, 2 Ye know that after two days the passover cometh, and the Son of man is delivered up to be crucified. 3 Then were gathered together the chief priests, and the elders of the people, unto the court of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas; 4 and they took counsel together that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him. 5 But they said, Not during the feast, lest a tumult arise among the people.</p>	<p>1 Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover. And the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might put him to death; for they feared the people.</p>
<p>and the chief priests and the scribes</p>	<p>2 And the chief priests and the elders of the people, unto the court of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas; 4 and they took counsel together that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him. 5 But they said, Not during the feast, lest a tumult arise among the people.</p>	<p>2 And the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might put him to death; for they feared the people.</p>
<p>sought how they might take him with subtilty, and kill him: 2 for they said, Not during the feast, lest haply there shall be a tumult of the people.</p>	<p>3 Then were gathered together the chief priests, and the elders of the people, unto the court of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas; 4 and they took counsel together that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him. 5 But they said, Not during the feast, lest a tumult arise among the people.</p>	<p>2 And the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might put him to death; for they feared the people.</p>

**§ 141. AT THE FEAST IN THE HOUSE OF SIMON THE LEPER MARY OF BETHANY
ANOINTS JESUS FOR HIS BURIAL**

At Bethany (Tuesday evening, Jewish Wednesday)

Mark 14:3-9

3 And while he was in Bethany in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman having ¹an alabaster cruse of ointment of ²spikenard very costly; *and* she brake the cruse, and poured it over his head. 4 But there were some that had indignation among themselves, *saying*, To what purpose hath this waste of the ointment been made? 5 For this ointment might have been sold for above three hundred ³pence, and given to the poor. And they murmured against her. 6 But Jesus said, Let her alone; why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good work on me. 7 For ye have the poor always with you, and whensoever ye will ye can do them good: but me ye have not always. 8 She hath done what she could: she hath anointed my body aforehand for the burying. 9 And verily I say unto you, Wheresoever the gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, that also which this woman hath done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.

Matt. 26:6-13

6 Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, 7 there came unto him a woman having ¹an alabaster cruse of exceeding precious ointment, and she poured it upon his head, as he sat at meat. 8 But when the disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying,

To what purpose is this waste?
9 For this *ointment* might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

10 But Jesus perceiving it said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me. 11 For ye have the poor always with you; but me you have not always. 12 For in that she poured this ointment upon my body, she did it to prepare me for burial. 13 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, that also which this woman hath done shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.

John 12:2-8

2 So they made him a supper there: and Martha served; but Lazarus was one of them that sat at meat with him. 3 Mary^a therefore took a pound of ointment of ²spikenard, very precious, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment. 4 But Judas Iscariot, one of his disciples, which should betray him, saith, 5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred ³pence, and given to the poor? 6 Now this he said, not because he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and having the ⁴bag ⁵took away what was put therein. 7 Jesus therefore said, ⁶Suffer her to keep it against the day of my burying. 8 For the poor ye have always with you; but me ye have not always.

¹ Or, *a flask*.

² Gr. *pistic nard*, *pistic* being perhaps a local name. Some take it to mean *genuine*; others, *liquid*.

³ The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about seventeen cents.

⁴ Or, *box*.

⁵ Or, *carried what was put therein*.

⁶ Or, *Let her alone: it was that she might keep it.*

^a This anointing has nothing in common with that given by Luke (§ 59), except the fact of a woman anointing the Saviour's feet, and the name Simon, which was common. The former was in Galilee, this is at Bethany near Jerusalem. There the host despised the woman who anointed, here her brother is one of the guests, and her sister an active attendant. There the woman was "a sinner," a notoriously bad woman, here it is the devout Mary who "sat at the Lord's feet and heard his word" months before (§ 104). There the host thought strange that Jesus allowed her to touch him, here the disciples complain of the waste. There the Saviour gave assurance of forgiveness, here of perpetual and world-wide honor. Especially notice that here the woman who anoints is anticipating his speedy death and burial, of which at the former time he had never distinctly spoken. In view of all these differences it is absurd to represent the two anointings as the same, and outrageous on such slender ground to cast reproach on Mary of Bethany.

§ 142. JUDAS, STUNG BY THE REBUKE OF JESUS AT THE FEAST, BARGAINS WITH THE RULERS TO BETRAY JESUS

Tuesday Night in Jerusalem

Mark 14:10-11	Matt. 26:14-16	Luke 22:3-6
10 And Judas Iscariot, ¹ he that was one of the twelve, went away unto the chief priests, that he might deliver him unto them.	14 Then one of the twelve, who was called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests, 15 and said, What are ye willing to give me, and I will deliver him unto you?	3 And Satan entered into Judas who was called Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. 4 And he went away, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might deliver him unto them.
11 And they, when they heard it, were glad, and promised to give him money.	16 And from that time he sought opportunity to deliver him <i>unto them.</i>	5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money. 6 And he consented, and sought opportunity to deliver him unto them ² in the absence of the multitude.
And he sought how he might conveniently deliver him <i>unto them.</i>		

¹ Gr. *the one of the twelve.*

² Or, *without tumult.*

§ 143. THE PREPARATION FOR THE PASCHAL MEAL AT THE HOME OF A FRIEND (POSSIBLY THAT OF JOHN MARK'S FATHER AND MOTHER)

Jerusalem, Thursday^a afternoon. (A Day of Preparation)

<p>Mark 14:12-16 12 And on the first day of unleavened bread, when they sacrificed the passover, his disciples say unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and make ready that thou mayest eat the passover [see Ex. 12:18-20]? 13 And he sendeth two of his disciples, and saith unto them,</p> <p style="text-align: center;">Go into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him; 14 and wheresoever he shall enter in, say to the goodman of the house, The ¹Master saith, Where is my guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? 15 And he will himself shew you a large upper room furnished <i>and</i> ready: and there make ready for us. 16 And the disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.</p>	<p>Matt. 26:17-19 17 Now on the first <i>day</i> of unleavened bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying, Where wilt thou that we make ready for thee to eat the passover? 18 And he said,</p> <p style="text-align: center;">Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him,</p> <p style="text-align: center;">The ¹Master saith, My time is at hand; I keep the passover at thy house with my disciples.</p> <p>19 And the disciples did as Jesus appointed them; and they made ready the passover.</p>	<p>Luke 22:7-13 7 And the day of unleavened bread came, on which the passover must be sacrificed.</p> <p>8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and make ready for us the passover, that we may eat. 9 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we make ready? 10 And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the house whereinto he goeth. 11 And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house, The ¹Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? 12 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished: there make ready.</p> <p>13 And they went, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.</p>
--	---	--

¹ Or, *Teacher*.

^a Wednesday (A Day of Rest) was apparently spent with the disciples in retirement in Bethany. Thursday was spent wholly with the disciples till the arrest in Gethsemane after midnight.

§ 144. JESUS PARTAKES OF THE PASCHAL MEAL WITH THE TWELVE APOSTLES AND REBUKES THEIR JEALOUSY

Jerusalem, Thursday evening after sunset (beginning of Jewish Friday)

Mark 14:17	Matt. 26:20	Luke 22:14-16, 24-30
17 And when it was	20 Now when even	

evening he cometh with the twelve. was come, he was sitting at meat with the twelve ¹disciples;

14 And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the apostles with

him. 15 And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover^a with you before I suffer: 16 for I say unto you, I will not eat it, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

24 And there arose also a contention among them, which of them is accounted to be ²greatest. 25 And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles have lordship over them; and they that have authority over them are called Benefactors. 26 But ye *shall* not *be* so: but he that is the greater among you, let him become as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. 27 For whether is greater, he that ³sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that ³sitteth at meat? but I am in the midst of you as he that serveth. 28 But ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations; 29 and ⁴I appoint unto you a kingdom, even as my Father appointed unto me, 30 that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom; and ye shall sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

¹ Many authorities, some ancient, omit *disciples*.

² Gr. *greater*.

³ Gr. *reclineth*.

⁴ Or, *I appoint unto you, even as my Father appointed unto me a kingdom, that ye may eat and drink etc.*

^a Some regard certain expressions in the Gospel of John as showing that Jesus did not eat the Paschal meal, thus hopelessly contradicting the other Gospels. But no one of John's expressions shows what is supposed, and one of them really indicates the contrary. See [note](#) at end of volume. Matthew, Mark, and Luke clearly show that he did eat the regular Passover meal.

§ 145. DURING THE PASCHAL MEAL, JESUS WASHES THE FEET OF HIS DISCIPLES

Evening before the Crucifixion (our Thursday, Jewish Friday)

John 13:1-20

1 Now before^a the feast of the passover, Jesus knowing that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them ¹unto the end. 2 And during supper, the devil having already put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's *son*, to betray him, 3 *Jesus*, knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he came forth from God, and goeth unto God, 4 riseth from supper, and layeth aside his garments; and he took a towel, and girded himself. 5 Then he poureth water into the bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded. 6 So he cometh to Simon Peter. He saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? 7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt understand hereafter. 8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. 9 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. 10 Jesus saith to him, He that is bathed needeth not ²save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. 11 For he knew him that should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

12 So when he had washed their feet, and taken his garments, and ³sat down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? 13 Ye call me, ⁴Master, and, Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. 14 If I then, the Lord and the ⁴Master, have washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one another's feet. 15 For I have given you an example, that ye also should do as I have done to you. 16 Verily, verily, I say unto you, A ⁵servant is not greater than his lord; neither ⁶one that is sent greater than he that sent him. 17 If ye know these things, blessed are ye if ye do them. 18 I speak not of you all: I know whom I ⁷have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth ⁸my bread lifted up his heel against me [*see Ps. 41:9*]. 19 From henceforth I tell you before

it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that ⁹I am *he*. 20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.

¹ Or, *to the uttermost*.

² Some ancient authorities omit *save*, and *his feet*.

³ Gr. *reclined*.

⁴ Or, *Teacher*.

⁵ Gr. *bondservant*.

⁶ Gr. *an apostle*.

⁷ Or, *chose*.

⁸ Many ancient authorities read *his bread with me*.

⁹ Or, *I am*.

^a It is needlessly inferred that John by this expression means that it was a full day before the passover meal. In fact, the words in verse 2 "during supper" rather imply that "before passover" was just before the meal began.

§ 146. AT THE PASCHAL MEAL JESUS POINTS OUT JUDAS AS THE BETRAYER

Thursday evening (Jewish Friday)

Mark 14:18-21	Matt. 26:21-25	Luke 22:21-23	John 13:21-30
18 And as they ² sat and were eating, Jesus said, Verily I say unto you, One of you shall betray me, <i>even</i> he that eateth with me [<i>see</i> <i>Ps. 41:9</i>].	21 and as they were eating, he said, Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.	21 But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me is with me on the table. 22 For the Son of man indeed goeth, as it hath been determined: but woe unto that man through whom he is betrayed!	21 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in the spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.
19 They began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him one by one, Is it I?	22 And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began to say unto him every one, Is it I, Lord?	23 And they began to question among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.	22 The disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.
20 And he said unto them, <i>It is</i> one of the twelve, he that dippeth with me in the dish.	23 And he answered and said, He that dipped his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.		
21 For the Son of man goeth, even as it is written of him: but woe unto	24 The Son of man goeth, even as it is written of him: but woe unto		

that man through whom
the Son of man is betrayed!
good were it ¹for that man
if he had not been born.

that man through whom
the Son of man is betrayed!
good were it ¹for that man
if he had not been born.

23 There
was at the
table reclining

in Jesus' bosom one of his
disciples, whom Jesus loved. 24
Simon Peter therefore beckoneth
to him, and saith unto him, Tell *us*
who it is of whom he speaketh.
25 He leaning back, as he was, on
Jesus' breast saith unto him,
Lord, who is it? 26 Jesus therefore
answereth, He it is, for whom I
shall dip the sop, and give it him.
So when he had dipped the sop,
he taketh and giveth it to Judas,
the son of Simon Iscariot.

25 And
Judas, which
betrayed him,
answered and
said, Is it I,
Rabbi? He
saith unto
him, Thou
hast said.

27 And after the sop, then entered
Satan into him. Jesus therefore
saith unto him, That thou doest,
do quickly. 28 Now no man at the
table knew for what intent he
spake this unto him. 29 For some
thought, because Judas had the
³bag, that Jesus said unto him, Buy
what things we have need of for
the feast; or, that he should give
something to the poor. 30 He then
having received the sop went out
straightway: and it was night.

¹ Gr. *for him if that man*.

² Gr. *reclined*.

³ Or, *box*.

§ 147. AFTER THE DEPARTURE OF JUDAS JESUS WARNS THE DISCIPLES (PETER IN PARTICULAR) AGAINST DESERTION, WHILE ALL PROTEST THEIR LOYALTY

Mark 14:27-31 Matt. 26:31-35 Luke 22:31-38 John 13:31-38

31 When
therefore he was
gone out, Jesus
saith, Now ¹is
the Son of man
glorified, and
God ¹is glorified
in him; 32 and

God shall glorify him in himself, and straightway shall he glorify him. 33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; 34 so now I say unto you, A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another; ²even as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

<p>27 And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be ³offended: for it is written [<i>see Zech. 13:7</i>], I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered abroad. 28 Howbeit, after I am raised up, I will go before you into Galilee. 29 But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be ³offended, yet will not I. 30 And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that thou to-day, <i>even</i> this night, before the cock crow twice, shalt deny me thrice. 31 But he spake exceeding vehemently, If I must die with thee, I will not deny thee. And in like manner also said they all.</p>	<p>31 Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be ³offended in me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. 32 But after I am raised up, I will go before you into Galilee. 33 But Peter answered and said unto him, If all shall be ³offended in thee, I will never be ³offended. 34 Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. 35 Peter saith unto him, Even if I must die with thee, <i>yet</i> will I not deny thee. Likewise also said all the disciples.</p>	<p>31 Simon, Simon, behold, Satan ⁴asked to have you, that he might sift you as wheat: 32 but I made supplication for thee, that thy faith fail not: and do thou, when once thou hast turned again, stablish thy brethren. 33 And he said unto him, Lord, with thee I am ready to go both to prison and to death. 34 And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, until thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.</p>	<p>36 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow afterwards. 37 Peter saith unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee even now? I will lay down my life for thee. 38 Jesus answereth, Wilt thou lay down thy life for me? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.</p>
---	---	---	--

35 And he said unto them, When I sent you forth without purse, and wallet, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.
 36 And he said unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise a wallet: ⁵and he that hath none, let him sell his cloke, and buy a sword. 37 For I say unto you, that this which is written must be fulfilled in me [*see Isa. 53:12*], And he was reckoned with transgressors: for that which concerneth me hath ⁶fulfilment.
 38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

¹ Or, *was*.

² Or, *even as I loved you, that ye also may love one another*.

³ Gr. *caused to stumble*.

⁴ Or, *obtained you by asking*.

⁵ Or, *and he that hath no sword, let him sell his cloke, and buy one*.

⁶ Gr. *end*.

§ 148. JESUS INSTITUTES THE MEMORIAL OF EATING BREAD AND DRINKING WINE

Jerusalem. Evening before the Crucifixion

Mark 14:22-25 Matt. 26:26-29 Luke^a 22:17-20 1 Cor.^b 11:23-26

17 And he received a cup, and when he had given thanks, he said, Take this, and divide it among yourselves:
 18 for I say unto you, I will not drink from henceforth of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

<p>22 And as they were eating, he took ¹bread, and when he had blessed, he brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take ye: this is my body.</p>	<p>26 And as they were eating, Jesus took ¹bread, and blessed, and brake it; and he gave to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.</p>	<p>19 And he took ¹bread, and when he had given thanks, he brake it, and gave to them, saying, This is my body ⁵which is given for you: this do in</p>	<p>23 For I received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, how that the Lord Jesus in the night in which he was betrayed took bread; 24 and</p>
---	---	--	---

<p>23 And he took a cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave to them: and they all drank of it. 24 And he said unto them, This is my blood of ³the ⁴covenant, which is shed for many [<i>see Ex. 24:8; Lev. 4:18-20; Jer. 31:31; Zech. 9:11</i>]. 25 Verily I say unto you, I will no more drink of the fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new in the kingdom of God.</p>	<p>27 And he took ^{2a}a cup, and gave thanks, and gave to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; 28 for this is my blood of ³the ⁴covenant, which is shed for many unto remission of sins. 29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my kingdom.</p>	<p>remembrance of when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, This is my body, which ⁷is for you: this do in remembrance of me. 25 In like manner also the cup, after supper, saying, This cup is the new ⁶covenant in my blood, <i>even</i> that which is poured out for you. 26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink the cup, ye proclaim the Lord's death till he come.</p>
--	---	---

¹ Or, *a loaf*.

² Some ancient authorities read *the cup*.

³ Or, *the testament*.

⁴ Many ancient authorities insert *new*.

⁵ Some ancient authorities omit *which is given for you ... which is poured out for you*.

⁶ Or, *testament*.

⁷ Many ancient authorities read *is broken for you*.

^a Luke here (see § 144) departs from the order of Mark (and Matthew) and mentions the institution of the supper earlier in the evening. It seems best to follow the chronology of Mark, who places it after the departure of Judas.

^b These are two parallel reports of the institution of the supper. Mark is followed by Matthew and 1 Corinthians (about A.D. 56) by Luke (not earlier than A.D. 58).

§ 149. THE FAREWELL DISCOURSE TO HIS DISCIPLES IN THE UPPER ROOM

Jerusalem

John 14^a

1 Let not your heart be troubled: ¹ye believe in God, believe also in me. 2 In my Father's house are many ²mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. 3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I come again, and will receive you unto myself; that where I am, *there* ye may be also. 4 ³And whither I go, ye know the way. 5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; how know we the way? 6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life: no one cometh unto the Father, but ⁴by me. 7 If ye had known me, ye would have known my Father also: from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him. 8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. 9 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and dost thou not know me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; how sayest thou, Shew us the Father? 10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I say unto you I speak not from myself: but the Father

abiding in me doeth his works. 11 Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake. 12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater *works* than these shall he do; because I go unto the Father. 13 And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. 14 If ye shall ask ⁵me anything in my name, that will I do. 15 If ye love me, ye will keep my commandments. 16 And I will ⁶pray the Father, and he shall give you another ⁷Comforter, that he may be with you for ever, 17 *even* the Spirit of truth: whom the world cannot receive; for it beholdeth him not, neither knoweth him: ye know him; for he abideth with you, and shall be in you. 18 I will not leave you ⁸desolate: I come unto you. 19 Yet a little while, and the world beholdeth me no more; but ye behold me: because I live, ⁹ye shall live also. 20 In that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you. 21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself unto him. 22 Judas (not Iscariot) saith unto him, Lord, what is come to pass that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world? 23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my word: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. 24 He that loveth me not keepeth not my words: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's who sent me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, while *yet* abiding with you. 26 But the ⁷Comforter, *even* the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said unto you. 27 Peace I leave with you; my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be fearful. 28 Ye heard how I said to you, I go away, and I come unto you. If ye loved me, ye would have rejoiced, because I go unto the Father: for the Father is greater than I. 29 And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe. 30 I will no more speak much with you, for the prince of the world cometh: and he hath nothing in me; 31 but that the world may know that I love the Father, and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.^b

¹ Or, *believe in God*.

² Or, *abiding-places*.

³ Many ancient authorities read *And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know*.

⁴ Or, *through*.

⁵ Many ancient authorities omit *me*.

⁶ Gr. *make request of*.

⁷ Or, *Advocate*. Or, *Helper*. Gr. *Paraclete*.

⁸ Or, *orphans*.

⁹ Or, *and ye shall live*.

^a Chapters 13 to 17 in John really belong together. There is first the effort of Jesus to stop the bickerings of the Twelve, then his warning and their reply. Jesus continues to address them with repeated interruption (dialogue), but finally they fear to ask him further (monologue). The discourse concludes with the wonderful prayer (the real Lord's Prayer) in chapter 17.

^b Apparently they leave the Upper Room.

§ 150. THE DISCOURSE ON THE WAY TO GETHSEMANE

Possibly on the Street

John 15 and 16^a

1 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. 2 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh it away: and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he cleanseth it, that it may bear more fruit. 3 Already ye are clean because of the word which I have spoken unto you. 4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; so neither

can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same beareth much fruit: for apart from me ye can do nothing. 6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and they gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. 7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ask whatsoever ye will, and it shall be done unto you. 8 Herein ¹is my Father glorified, ²that ye bear much fruit; and so shall ye be my disciples. 9 Even as the Father hath loved me, I also have loved you: abide ye in my love. 10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. 11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy may be in you, and *that* your joy may be fulfilled. 12 This is my commandment, that ye love one another, even as I have loved you. 13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. 14 Ye are my friends, if ye do the things which I command you. 15 No longer do I call you ³servants; for the ⁴servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I heard from my Father I have made known unto you. 16 Ye did not choose me, but I chose you, and appointed you, that ye should go and bear fruit, and *that* your fruit should abide: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. 17 These things I command you, that ye may love one another. 18 If the world hateth you, ⁵ye know that it hath hated me before *it hated* you. 19 If ye were of the world, the world would love its own: but because ye are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. 20 Remember the word that I said unto you, A ⁴servant is not greater than his lord. If they persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they keep my word, they will keep yours also. 21 But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. 22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no excuse for their sin. 23 He that hateth me hateth my Father also. 24 If I had not done among them the works which none other did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. 25 But *this cometh to pass*, that the word may be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause [see Ps. 35:19; 69:4]. 26 But when the ⁶Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which ⁷proceedeth from the Father, he shall bear witness of me: 27 ⁸and ye also bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

1 These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be made to stumble. 2 They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the hour cometh, that whosoever killeth you shall think that he offereth service unto God. 3 And these things will they do, because they have not known the Father, nor me. 4 But these things have I spoken unto you, that when their hour is come, ye may remember them, how that I told you. And these things I said not unto you from the beginning, because I was with you. 5 But now I go unto him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? 6 But because I have spoken these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. 7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the ⁶Comforter will not come unto you; but if I go, I will send him unto you. 8 And he, when he is come, will convict the world in respect of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement: 9 of sin, because they believe not on me; 10 of righteousness, because I go to the Father, and ye behold me no more; 11 of judgement, because the prince of this world hath been judged. 12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. 13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he shall guide you into all the truth: for he shall not speak from himself; but what things soever he shall hear, *these* shall he speak: and he shall declare unto you the things that are to come. 14 He shall glorify me: for he shall take of mine, and shall declare *it* unto you. 15 All things whatsoever the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he taketh of mine, and shall declare *it* unto you. 16 A little while, and ye behold me no more; and again a little while, and ye shall see me. 17 *Some* of his disciples therefore said one to another, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye behold me not; and again a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father? 18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? We know not what he saith. 19 Jesus perceived that they were desirous to ask him, and he said unto them, Do ye inquire among yourselves concerning this, that I said, A little while, and ye behold me not, and again a little while, and ye shall see me? 20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. 21 A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but when she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for the joy that a man is born into the world. 22 And ye therefore now have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no one taketh away from you [see Isa. 66:14]. 23 And in that day ye shall ⁹ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, If ye shall ask anything of the Father, he will give it you in my name. 24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be fulfilled.

25 These things have I spoken unto you in ¹⁰proverbs: the hour cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in ¹⁰proverbs, but shall tell you plainly of the Father. 26 In that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will ¹¹pray the Father for you; 27 for the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came forth from the Father. 28 I came out from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go unto the Father. 29 His disciples say, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no ¹²proverb. 30 Now know we that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. 31 Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? 32 Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and *yet* I am not alone, because the Father is with me. 33 These things have I spoken

unto you, that in me ye may have peace. In the world ye have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

¹ Or, *was*.

² Many ancient authorities read *that ye bear much fruit, and be my disciples*.

³ Gr. *bondservants*.

⁴ Gr. *bondservant*.

⁵ Or, *know ye*.

⁶ Or, *Advocate*. Or, *Helper*. Gr. *Paraclete*.

⁷ Or, *goeth forth from*.

⁸ Or, *and bear ye also witness*.

⁹ Or, *ask me no question*.

¹⁰ Or, *parables*.

¹¹ Gr. *make request of*.

¹² Or, *parable*.

^a Chapters 14-17 are called the Heart of Christ. Nowhere does the Master lay bare his very soul more completely than here in chapters 15 and 16, with the allegory of the Vine and the teaching concerning the Holy Spirit.

§ 151. CHRIST'S INTERCESSORY PRAYER

Possibly near Gethsemane

John 17

1 These things spake Jesus; and lifting up his eyes to heaven, he said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that the Son may glorify thee: 2 even as thou gavest him authority over all flesh, that whatsoever thou hast given him, to them he should give eternal life. 3 And this is life eternal, that they should know thee the only true God, and him whom thou didst send, *even* Jesus Christ. 4 I glorified thee on the earth, having accomplished the work which thou hast given me to do. 5 And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. 6 I manifested thy name unto the men whom thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them to me; and they have kept thy word. 7 Now they know that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are from thee: 8 for the words which thou gavest me I have given unto them; and they received *them*, and knew of a truth that I came forth from thee, and they believed that thou didst send me. 9 I ¹pray for them: I ¹pray not for the world, but for those whom thou hast given me; for they are thine: 10 and all things that are mine are thine, and thine are mine: and I am glorified in them. 11 And I am no more in the world, and these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep them in thy name which thou hast given me, that they may be one, even as we *are*. 12 While I was with them, I kept them in thy name which thou hast given me: and I guarded them, and not one of them perished, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled [*see Ps. 41:9*]. 13 But now I come to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they may have my joy fulfilled in themselves. 14 I have given them thy word; and the world hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 15 I ¹pray not that thou shouldest take them ²from the world, but that thou shouldest keep them ²from ³the evil *one*. 16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 17 ⁴Sanctify them in the truth: thy word is truth. 18 As thou didst send me into the world, even so sent I them into the world. 19 And for their sakes I ⁴sanctify myself, that they themselves also may be sanctified in truth. 20 Neither for these only do I ¹pray, but for them also that believe on me through their word; 21 that they may all be one; even as thou, Father, *art* in me, and I in thee, that they also may be in us: that the world may believe that thou didst send me. 22 And the glory which thou hast given me I have given unto them; that they may be one, even as we *are* one; 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be perfected into one; that the world may know that thou didst send me, and lovedst them, even as thou lovedst me. 24 Father, ⁵that which thou hast given me, I will that, where I am, they also may be with me; that they may behold my glory, which thou

hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. 25 O righteous Father, the world knew thee not, but I knew thee; and these knew that thou didst send me; 26 and I made known unto them thy name, and will make it known; that the love wherewith thou lovedst me may be in them, and I in them.

¹ Gr. *make request*.

² Gr. *out of*.

³ Or, *evil*.

⁴ Or, *Consecrate*.

⁵ Many ancient authorities read *those whom*.

§ 152. GOING FORTH TO GETHSEMANE, JESUS SUFFERS LONG IN AGONY

IN AN OPEN GARDEN, BETWEEN THE BROOK KEDRON AND THE FOOT OF THE MOUNT OF OLIVES

Late in the night introducing Friday

Mark 14:26, 32-42	Matt. 26:30, 36-46	Luke 22:39-46	John 18:1
26 ^a And when they had sung a hymn, they went out unto the mount of Olives.	30 And when they had sung a hymn, they went out unto the mount of Olives.	39 And he came out, and went, as his custom was, unto the mount of Olives; and the disciples also followed him.	1 When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the ⁴ brook
32 And they come unto ^{1a} a place which was named Gethsemane: and he saith unto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I pray.	36 Then cometh Jesus with them unto ^{1a} a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I go yonder and pray. 37 And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and sore troubled.	40 And when he was at the place, he said unto them,	⁵ Kidron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, himself and his disciples.
33 And he taketh with him Peter and James and John, and began to be greatly amazed, and sore troubled. 34 And he saith unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful even unto death [see Ps. 42:6]: abide ye here, and watch.	38 Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: abide ye here, and watch with me. 39 And he went forward a little, and fell on his face, and prayed,	Pray that ye enter not into temptation.	
35 And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed that, if it were possible, the		41 And he was parted from them about a stone's cast; and he kneeled down and prayed, saying,	

hour might
pass away
from him. 36 And
he said, Abba,
Father, all
things are
possible unto
thee; remove
this cup from
me: howbeit
not what I
will, but what
thou wilt.

saying, O my
Father, if it be
possible, let
this cup pass
away from me:
nevertheless,
not as I
will, but as
thou wilt.

42 Father,
if thou be
willing, remove
this cup from
me: nevertheless
not my
will, but thine,
be done.

43 ³And
there appeared
unto him an
angel from
heaven,
strengthening
him. 44 And
being in an agony
he prayed more
earnestly: and
his sweat became
as it were
great drops of
blood falling
down upon the
ground. 45 And
when he rose
up from his
prayer, he
came unto the
disciples, and
found them
sleeping for
sorrow, 46 and
said unto
them, Why
sleep ye? rise
and pray, that
ye enter not
into temptation.

37 And
he cometh,
and findeth
them sleeping,
and saith unto
Peter, Simon,
 sleepest thou?
 couldst thou
 not watch one
 hour?

38 ²Watch
and pray, that
ye enter not
into tempta-
tion: the spirit
indeed is
willing, but the
flesh is weak.
39 And again he
went away,
and prayed,
saying the
same words.

40 And
again he came,
and found
them sleeping,
for their eyes
were very
heavy; and
they wist not
what to answer
him.

41 And he
cometh the third
time, and saith

40 And
he cometh unto
the disciples,
and findeth
them
sleeping, and
saith unto
Peter, What,
could ye not
watch with me
one hour?

41 ²Watch and
pray, that ye
enter not into
temptation:
the spirit indeed
is willing,
but the flesh
is weak. 42 Again
a second time
he went away,
and prayed,
saying, O my
Father, if this
cannot pass
away, except
I drink it, thy
will be done.

43 And he came
again and
found them
sleeping, for
their eyes were
heavy. 44 And
he left them
again, and
went away,
and prayed a
third time,
saying again the
same words.

45 Then cometh
he to the
disciples, and

unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough; the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. 42 Arise, let us be going: behold, he that betrayeth me is at hand.	saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed unto the hands of sinners. 46 Arise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that betrayeth me.
--	---

¹ Gr. *an enclosed piece of ground*.

² Or, *Watch ye, and pray that ye enter not*.

³ Many ancient authorities omit verses 43, 44.

⁴ Or, *ravine*. Gr. *winter-torrent*.

⁵ Or, *of the Cedars*.

^a The Synoptic Gospels do not give the great discourse of Jesus in John 14 to 17. Hence they represent Jesus as going forth to Gethsemane after the institution of the supper ([§ 148](#)). The time was probably not long and they apparently sang the hymn (probably one of the Psalms) as they rose to leave the Upper Room ([John 14:31](#)). Hence the passage in John 15 to 17 comes in between singing the hymn and reaching Gethsemane.

PART XIII THE ARREST, TRIAL, CRUCIFIXION AND BURIAL OF JESUS

Thursday Night, Friday, and Saturday of Passion Week (Days of Darkness for the Kingdom of God^a). §§ 153-168.

^a "Your hour and the power of darkness" (Luke 22:53). Friday, the Day of Suffering, has become for Christians the Day of the Cross and of Glory.

§ 153. JESUS IS BETRAYED, ARRESTED AND FORSAKEN

Garden of Gethsemane. Friday, long before dawn

Mark 14:43-52	Matt. 26:47-56	Luke 22:47-53	John 18:2-12
			2 Now Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oft-times resorted thither with his disciples.
			3 Judas

43 And straightway, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders.

47 And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people.

47 While he yet spake, behold, a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them;

then, having received the ³band of *soldiers*, and officers from the chief priests and the Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns and torches and weapons.

4 Jesus therefore, knowing all the things that were coming upon him, went forth, and saith unto them, Whom seek ye? 5 They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am *he*. And Judas also, which betrayed him, was standing with them.

6 When therefore he said unto them, I am *he*, they went backward, and fell to the ground.

7 Again therefore he asked them, Whom seek ye? And they said, Jesus of Nazareth. 8 Jesus answered, I told you that I am *he*: if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way: 9 that the word might be fulfilled which he spake, Of those whom thou hast given me I lost not one.

44 Now he that betrayed him had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he; take him, and lead him away safely. 45 And when he was come, straightway he came to him, and saith, Rabbi; and ¹kissed him.

48 Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he: take him.

49 And straightway he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, Rabbi; and ¹kissed him. and he drew near unto Jesus to kiss him. 48 But Jesus said unto

46 And they laid hands on him, and took him.

47 But a certain one of them that stood by drew his sword, and smote the ²servant of the high priest, and struck off his ear.

48 And Jesus answered and said unto them,

Are ye come out, as against a robber, with swords and staves to seize me? 49 I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and ye took me not: but *this is done* that the scriptures might be fulfilled. 50 And they all left him, and fled.

51 And a certain young man followed with him,

50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, *do* that for which thou art come. Then they came and laid hands on Jesus, and took him. 51 And behold, one of them that were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and smote the ²servant of the high priest, and struck off his ear. 52 Then saith Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into its place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword. 53 Or thinkest thou that I cannot beseech my Father, and he shall even now send me more than twelve legions of angels? 54 How then should the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be? 55 In that hour said Jesus to the multitudes,

Are ye come out as against a robber with swords and staves to seize me? I sat daily in the temple teaching, and ye took me not. 56 But all this is come to pass, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples left him, and fled.

him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?

49 And when they that were about him saw what would follow, they said, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

50 And a certain one of them smote the ²servant of the high priest, and struck off his right ear.

51 But Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him.

52 And Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and elders, which were come against him, Are ye come out, as against a robber, with swords and staves? 53 When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched not forth your hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.

10 Simon Peter therefore having a sword drew it, and struck the high priest's ²servant, and cut off his right ear. Now the ²servant's name was Malchus. 11 Jesus therefore said unto Peter, Put up the sword into the sheath: the cup which the Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?

12 So the ³band and the ⁴chief captain, and the officers of the Jews, seized Jesus and bound him.

having a linen
cloth cast
about him,
over *his* naked
body: and they
lay hold on
him; 52 but he
left the linen
cloth, and fled
naked.

¹ Gr. *kissed him much*.

² Gr. *bondservant*.

³ Or, *cohort*.

⁴ Or, *military tribune*. Gr. *chiliarch*.

§ 154. JESUS FIRST^a EXAMINED BY ANNAS, THE EX-HIGH-PRIEST

The Jewish Trial and related occurrences, §§ 154-162.

Friday before dawn

John 18:12-14, 19-23

12 So the ¹band and the ²chief captain, and the officers of the Jews, seized Jesus and bound him, 13 and led him to Annas first; for he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was high priest that year. 14 Now Caiaphas was he which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

19 The high priest therefore asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his teaching. 20 Jesus answered him, I have spoken openly to the world; I ever taught in ³synagogues, and in the temple, where all the Jews come together; and in secret spake I nothing. 21 Why askest thou me? ask them that have heard *me*, what I spake unto them: behold, these know the things which I said. 22 And when he had said this, one of the officers standing by struck Jesus ⁴with his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so? 23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?

¹ Or, *cohort*.

² Or, *military tribune*. Gr. *chiliarch*.

³ Gr. *synagogue*.

⁴ Or, *with a rod*.

^a The *Jewish trial* comprised three stages, the preliminary examination by Annas (§ 154), the informal trial by the Sanhedrin, probably before dawn, and the formal trial after dawn. With these are narrated two related matters, the denial by Peter and the suicide of Judas.

§ 155. JESUS HURRIEDLY TRIED AND CONDEMNED BY CAIAPHAS AND THE SANHEDRIN, WHO MOCK AND BUFFET HIM

Mark 14:53, 55-65	Matt. 26:57, 59-68	Luke 22:54, 63-65	John 18:24
53 And they led Jesus away to the high priest: and there come together with him all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes.	57 And they that had taken Jesus led him away to <i>the house of</i> Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were gathered together.	54 And they seized him, and led him away, and brought him into the high priest's house.	24 Annas therefore sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high priest.
55 Now the chief priests and the whole council sought witness against Jesus to put him to death; and found it not. 56 For many bare false witness against him, and their witness agreed not together.	59 Now the chief priests and the whole council sought false witness against Jesus, that they might put him to death; 60 and they found it not, though many false witnesses came.		
57 And there stood up certain, and bare false witness against him, saying, 58 We heard him say, I will destroy this ¹ temple that is made with hands, and in three days I will build another made without hands. 59 And not even so did their witness agree together.	But afterward came two, 61 and said, This man said, I am able to destroy the ¹ temple of God, and to build it in three days [<i>see John 2:19</i>].		
60 And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witness against thee?	62 And the high priest stood up, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witness against thee?		
61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and saith unto him,	63 But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God.		
Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?			
62 And Jesus	64 Jesus		

said, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and coming with the clouds of heaven [*see Ps. 110:1; Dan. 7:13*]. 63 And the high priest rent his clothes, and saith,

What further need have we of witnesses? 64 Ye have heard the blasphemy [*see Lev. 24:16*]: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be ²worthy of death. 65 And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophecy: and the officers received him with ⁴blows of their hands.

saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Henceforth ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and coming on the clouds of heaven. 65 Then the high priest rent his garments, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy: what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard the blasphemy: 66 what think ye? They answered and said, He is ²worthy of death. 67 Then did they spit in his face and buffet him: and some smote him ³with the palms of their hands, 68 saying, Prophecy unto us, thou Christ: who is he that struck thee?

63 And the men that held ⁵Jesus mocked him, and beat him. 64 And they blindfolded him, and asked him, saying, Prophecy: who is he that struck thee? 65 And many other things spake they against him, reviling him.

¹ Or, *sanctuary*: as in [Matt. 23:35](#); and [chap. 27:5](#).

² Gr. *liable to*.

³ Or, *with rods*.

⁴ Or, *strokes of rods*.

⁵ Gr. *him*.

§ 156. PETER THRICE^a DENIES HIS LORD

COURT OF THE HIGH-PRIEST'S RESIDENCE, DURING THE SERIES OF TRIALS

Friday before and about dawn

Mark 14:54, 66-72	Matt. 26:58, 69-75	Luke 22:54-62	John 18:15-18, 25-27
54 And Peter had	58 But Peter	54 But Peter	15 And Simon

followed him
afar off,

followed him
afar off,

followed afar
off.

Peter followed
Jesus, and *so*
did another
disciple. Now
that disciple
was known
unto the high
priest, and
entered in
with Jesus into
the court of
the high priest;
16 but Peter was
standing at the
door without.
So the
other disciple,
which was
known unto
the high priest,
went out and
spake unto her
that kept the
door, and
brought in Peter.

even
within, unto the
court of the
high priest;

unto the
court of the
high priest,
and entered in,

17 The maid
therefore that
kept the door
saith unto
Peter, Art thou
also *one* of
this man's
disciples? He
saith, I am
not. 18 Now the
⁵servants and
the officers
were standing
there, having
made ⁶a fire of
coals; for it
was cold; and
they were
warming
themselves:
and Peter also
was with
them, standing
and warming
himself.

and he
was sitting
with the officers,
and warming
himself
in the light
of the fire.

and sat with
the officers, to
see the end.

55 And when
they had
kindled a fire in
the midst of
the court, and
had sat down
together,
Peter sat in the
midst of them.

25 Now Simon
Peter was
standing and
warming himself.
They said
therefore unto
him, Art thou
also *one* of his
disciples?

66 And as Peter
was beneath in
the court, there
cometh one of
the maids of
the high priest;
67 and seeing
Peter warming
himself, she
looked upon
him, and saith,
Thou also wast
with the
Nazarene, *even*
Jesus. 68 But he
denied, saying,
¹I neither
know, nor
understand what
thou sayest:
and he went
out into the
²porch; ³and
the cock crew.

69 Now Peter was
sitting without
in the court:
and a maid
came unto
him, saying,

Thou also wast
with Jesus the
Galilean.
70 But
he denied
before them all,
saying, I know
not what thou
sayest.

56 And a certain
maid seeing
him as he sat
in the light *of*
the fire, and
looking
stedfastly upon
him, said, This
man also was
with him.

He
denied, and
said, I am not.

57 But he
denied, saying,
Woman, I
know him not.

71 And
when he was
gone out into

	the porch,	58 And after a	
69 And the maid	another <i>maid</i> saw	little while	
saw him, and	him, and saith	another saw	
began again to	unto them	him, and said,	
say to them	that were	Thou also art	
that stood by,	there, This	<i>one</i> of them.	
This is <i>one</i> of	man also was	But Peter said,	
them.	with Jesus the	Man, I am not.	
	Nazarene.		
70 But he	72 And again he		
again denied	denied with an		
it.	oath, I know		
	not the man.	59 And	26 One of the
And after	73 And after a	after the space	⁵ servants of
a little while	little while	of about one	the high priest,
again they	they that	hour another	being a kinsman
that stood by	stood by came	confidently	of him
said to Peter,	and said to	affirmed, saying,	whose ear
Of a truth	Peter, Of a	Of a truth this	Peter cut off,
thou art <i>one</i>	truth thou also	man also was	saith, Did not
of them; for	art <i>one</i> of	with him: for	I see thee in
thou art a	them; for thy	he is a Galilean.	the garden with
Galilean. 71 But	speech	60 But	him? 27 Peter
he began to	bewrayeth thee.	Peter said, Man,	therefore
curse, and to	74 Then began	I know not	denied again:
swear, I know	he to curse and	what thou	
not this man	to swear, I	sayest.	
of whom ye	know not the		
speak. 72 And	man.	And	and straightway
straightway	And straightway	immediately,	the cock
the second	the cock	while he yet	crew.
time the cock	crew.	spake, the cock	
crew.		crew. 61 And the	
		Lord turned,	
		and looked upon	
And	75 And Peter	Peter. And Peter	
Peter called to	remembered	remembered	
mind the	the word	the word	
word, how	which Jesus	of the Lord,	
that Jesus said	had said,	how that he	
unto him,	Before the cock	said unto him,	
Before the cock	crow, thou	Before the	
crow twice,	shalt deny	cock crow this	
thou shalt	me thrice.	day, thou shalt	
deny me	And he went	deny me	
thrice. ⁴ And	out, and wept	thrice. 62 And	
when he	bitterly.	he went out,	
thought thereon,		and wept	
he wept.		bitterly.	

¹ Or, *I neither know, nor understand: thou, what sayest thou?*

² Gr. *forecourt*.

³ Many ancient authorities omit *and the cock crew*.

⁴ Or, *And he began to weep*.

⁵ Gr. *bondservants*.

⁶ Gr. *a fire of charcoal*.

^a Each of the four Gospels records three denials; but the details differ considerably, as must always be the case where in each narrative a few facts are selected out of many sayings and doings. We have seen (footnote on § 154) that there were *three stages* of the Jewish trial, (1) before Annas, (2) before Caiaphas and the Sanhedrin for informal examination, (3) before them in a formal trial. Now John gives only the first of the three stages, Luke only the last, Matthew and Mark give the second stage fully, and the third in brief mention. If Peter's denials ran through all three (and Luke says in ver. 59 that there was an hour between his second and third denials), then no one of the four Gospels could give each of the denials precisely at the time of its occurrence; and so each Gospel merely throws them together, as in another way we here bring them together in one section. There is no difficulty about the substantial fact of the denials; and we must be content with our inability to arrange all the circumstances into a complete programme.

§ 157. AFTER DAWN, JESUS IS FORMALLY^a CONDEMNED BY THE SANHEDRIN

Friday

Mark 15:1	Matt. 27:1	Luke 22:66-71
1 And straightway in the morning the chief priests with the elders and scribes, and the whole council, held a consultation,	1 Now when morning was come, all the chief priests and the elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death:	66 And as soon as it was day, the assembly of the elders of the people was gathered together, both chief priests and scribes; and they led him away into their council, saying, 67 If thou art the Christ, tell us. But he said unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe: 68 and if I ask <i>you</i> , ye will not answer. 69 But from henceforth shall the Son of man be seated on the right hand of the power of God [<i>see Ps. 110:1; Dan. 7:13</i>]. 70 And they all said, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, ¹ Ye say that I am. 71 And they said, What further need have we of witness? for we ourselves have heard from his own mouth.

¹ Or, *Ye say it, because I am.*

^a This ratification of the condemnation after dawn was an effort to make the action legal. But no ratification of a wrong can make it right. Some modern Jewish writers admit the illegalities and argue the unhistorical character of the narrative. But the hate of the Sanhedrin for Jesus made them violate their own rules of legal procedure. See my book, *The Pharisees and Jesus*.

§ 158. REMORSE AND SUICIDE OF JUDAS THE BETRAYER

IN THE TEMPLE AND IN A PLACE WITHOUT THE WALLS OF JERUSALEM

Friday morning

Matt. 27:3-10	Acts 1:18, 19
3 Then Judas, which betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and	18 (Now this man obtained a field with the reward of his iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. 19 And it

elders, ⁴ saying, I have sinned in that I betrayed ¹innocent blood. But they said, What is that to us? see thou *to it*. ⁵ And he cast down the pieces of silver into the sanctuary, and departed; and he went away and hanged himself. ⁶ And the chief priests took the pieces of silver, and said, It is not lawful to put them into the ²treasury, since it is the price of blood [*see Deut. 23:18*]. ⁷ And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. ⁸ Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day. ⁹ Then was fulfilled that which was spoken ³by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, And ⁴they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was priced, ⁵whom *certain* of the children of Israel did price; ¹⁰ and ⁶they gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me [*see Zech. 11:13; Jer. 18:2; 19:2; 32:6-15*].

became known to all the dwellers at Jerusalem; insomuch that in their language that field was called Akeldama, that is, The field of blood.)

¹ Many ancient authorities read *righteous*.

² Gr. *corbanas*, that is, *sacred treasury*. Comp. [Mark 7:11](#).

³ Or, *through*.

⁴ Or, *I took*.

⁵ Or, *whom they priced on the part of the sons of Israel*.

⁶ Some ancient authorities read *I gave*.

§ 159. JESUS BEFORE PILATE THE FIRST^a TIME

Jerusalem. Friday, early morning

Mark 15:1-5	Matt. 27:2, 11-14	Luke 23:1-5	John 18:28-38
1 and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him up to Pilate.	2 and they bound him, and led him away, and delivered him up to Pilate the governor.	1 And the whole company of them rose up, and brought him before Pilate.	28 They lead Jesus therefore from Caiaphas into the ² palace: and it was early; and they themselves entered not into the ² palace, that they might not be defiled, but might eat the passover. 29 Pilate therefore went out unto them, and saith, What accusation
		2 And they	

began to accuse bring
 him, saying, ye against this
 We found man? 30 They
 this man answered and
 perverting our said unto him,
 nation, and If this man
 forbidding to were not an
 give tribute to evil-doer, we
 Cæsar, and should not
 saying that he have delivered
 himself is him up unto
¹Christ a king. thee. 31 Pilate
 therefore said
 unto them,
 Take him
 yourselves,
 and judge him
 according to
 your law. The
 Jews said unto
 him, It is not
 lawful for us
 to put any
 man to death:
 32 that the word
 of Jesus might
 be fulfilled,
 which he
 spake, signifying
 by what
 manner of
 death he should
 die. 33 Pilate
 therefore
 entered
 again into the
²palace, and
 called Jesus,
 and said unto
 him,

2 And Pilate
 asked him,

 Art
 thou the King
 of the Jews?
 And he
 answering saith
 unto him,
 Thou sayest.

11 Now Jesus
 stood before
 the governor:
 and the
 governor asked
 him, saying,
 Art thou the
 King of the
 Jews? And
 Jesus said unto
 him, Thou
 sayest.

3 And Pilate
 asked him,
 saying,

 Art thou
 the King of the
 Jews? And he
 answered him
 and said, Thou
 sayest.

Art thou
 the King of the
 Jews? 34 Jesus
 answered,
 Sayest thou this
 of thyself, or
 did others tell it
 thee concerning
 me? 35 Pilate
 answered, Am
 I a Jew? Thine
 own nation
 and the chief
 priests delivered
 thee unto me:
 what hast thou
 done? 36 Jesus
 answered,
 My kingdom
 is not of
 this world: if
 my kingdom
 were of this
 world, then
 would my
³servants fight,
 that I should
 not be delivered
 to the Jews:
 but now is my
 kingdom not
 from hence.

3 And the chief priests accused him of many things.

4 And Pilate again asked him, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they accuse thee of. 5 But Jesus no more answered anything; insomuch that Pilate marvelled.

12 And when he was accused by the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee? 14 And he gave him no answer, not even to one word: insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly.

4 And Pilate said unto the chief priests and the multitudes, I find no fault in this man.

37 Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, ⁴Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end have I been born, and to this end am I come into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice. 38 Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find no crime in him.

5 But they were the more urgent, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Judea, and beginning from Galilee even unto this place.

¹ Or, *an anointed king*.

² Gr. *Prætorium*.

³ Or, *officers*: as in verses 3, 12, 18, 22.

⁴ Or, *Thou sayest it, because I am a king*.

^a The Roman Trial also comprised three stages, (1) the first appearance before the Roman procurator Pilate (§ 159), (2) the appearance before Herod Antipas, the native ruler of Galilee appointed by the Romans (§ 160), and (3) the final appearance before Pilate (§ 161).

§ 160. JESUS BEFORE HEROD ANTIPAS THE TETRARCH

Jerusalem. Friday, early morning

Luke 23:6-12

6 But when Pilate heard it, he asked whether the man were a Galilean. 7 And when he knew that he was of Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him unto Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem in these days.

8 Now when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was of a long time desirous to see him, because he had heard concerning him;^a and he hoped to see some ¹miracle done by him. 9 And he questioned him in many words; but he answered him nothing. 10 And the chief priests and the scribes stood, vehemently accusing him. 11 And Herod with his soldiers set him at nought, and mocked him, and arraying him in gorgeous apparel sent him back to Pilate. 12 And Herod and Pilate became friends with each other that very day: for before they were at enmity between themselves.

¹ Gr. *sign*.

^a See [§ 71](#).

§ 161. JESUS THE SECOND TIME BEFORE PILATE

Pilate slowly and reluctantly and in fear surrenders to the demand of the Sanhedrin for the crucifixion of Christ.

Friday toward sunrise (John 19:14)

Mark 15:6-15	Matt. 27:15-26	Luke 23:13-25	John 18:39-19:16
6 Now at ¹ the feast he used to release unto them one prisoner, whom they asked of him. 7 And there was one called Barabbas, <i>lying</i> bound with them that had made insurrection, men who in the insurrection had committed murder.	15 Now at ¹ the feast the governor was wont to release unto the multitude one prisoner, whom they would. 16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.		
8 And the multitude went up and began to ask him <i>to do</i> as he was wont to do unto them.			

13 And Pilate called together

the chief
priests and the
rulers and the
people, 14 and
said unto
them, Ye
brought unto
me this man,
as one that
perverteth the
people: and
behold, I, having
examined him
before you,
found no fault
in this man
touching those
things whereof
ye accuse him:
15 no, nor yet
Herod: for he
sent him back
unto us; and
behold, nothing
worthy of
death hath
been done by
him.

9 And Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews?
10 For he perceived that for envy the chief priests had delivered him up.
11 But the chief priests stirred up the multitude, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

17 When therefore they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ? 18 For he knew that for envy they had delivered him up. 19 And while he was sitting on the judgement-seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that righteous man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him. 20 Now the chief priests and the elders persuaded the multitudes that they should ask for Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. 21 But the governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I

16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.⁵

39 But ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

release unto
you? And
they said,
Barabbas.

18 But they cried out all together, saying,
Away with this man, and
release unto us Barabbas:
Barabbas: 19 one was a robber.
who for a certain
insurrection
made in
the city, and
for murder,
was cast into
prison.

1 Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him.
2 And the soldiers plaited a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and arrayed him in a purple garment; 3 and they came unto him, and said, Hail, King of the Jews! and they struck him with their hands. 4 And Pilate went out again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him out to you, that ye may know that I find no crime in him. 5 Jesus therefore came out, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple garment. And Pilate saith unto them, Behold, the man!
6 When therefore the chief priests and the officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify him, crucify him.
7 Pilate saith unto them, Take him yourselves, and crucify him: for I find no crime in him. 7 The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by that law he

12 And Pilate again answered and said unto them, What then shall I do unto him whom ye call the King of the Jews? 13 And they cried out again, Crucify him. 14 And Pilate said unto them, Why, what evil hath he done?

22 Pilate saith unto them, What then shall I do unto Jesus which is called Christ? They all say, Let him be crucified.
23 And he said, Why, what evil hath he done?

20 And Pilate spake unto them again, desiring to release Jesus; 21 but they shouted, saying, Crucify, crucify him. 22 And he said unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath this man done? I have found no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him and release him.

But

But

they cried out exceedingly,
Crucify him.

they cried out exceedingly,
saying, Let him be crucified.

ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God. 8 When Pilate therefore heard this saying, he was the more afraid; 9 and he entered into the ³palace again, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer. 10 Pilate therefore saith unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have ⁷power to release thee, and have ⁷power to crucify thee? 11 Jesus answered him, Thou wouldest have no ⁷power against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath greater sin. 12 Upon this Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou release this man, thou art not Cæsar's friend: every one that maketh himself a king ⁸speaketh against Cæsar. 13 When Pilate therefore heard these words, he brought Jesus out, and sat down on the judgement-seat at a place called The Pavement, but in Hebrew, Gabbatha. 14 Now it was the Preparation of the passover: it was about the sixth hour.^a And he saith unto the Jews, Behold, your King!

23 But they were instant with loud voices, asking that he might be crucified.

15 They therefore cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucify him. Pilate

saith unto
them, Shall I
crucify your
King? The
chief priests
answered, We
have no king
but Cæsar.

	24	So when Pilate saw that he prevailed nothing, but rather that a tumult was arising, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude [see Deut. 21:6-9], saying, I am innocent ² of the blood of this righteous man: see ye to it. 25 And all the people answered and said, His blood be on us, and on our children. ^b	And their voices prevailed.		
15	And Pilate, wishing to content the multitude,		24	And Pilate gave sentence that what they asked for should be done. 25 And he released him that for insurrection and murder had been cast into prison, whom they asked for; but Jesus he delivered up to their will.	
	released unto them Barabbas,	26	Then released he unto them Barabbas:	16	Then therefore he delivered him unto them to be crucified.
	and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified.		but Jesus he scourged and delivered to be crucified.		

¹ Or, *a feast*.

² Some ancient authorities read *of this blood: see ye etc.*

³ Gr. *Prætorium*. See [Mark 15:16](#).

⁴ Or, *palace*.

⁵ Many ancient authorities insert ver. 17 *Now he must needs release unto them at the feast one prisoner*. Others add the same words after ver. 19.

⁶ Or, *with rods*.

⁷ Or, *authority*.

⁸ Or, *opposeth Cæsar*.

^a It appears that John, who wrote in Asia Minor, long after the destruction of Jerusalem, makes the day begin at midnight, as the Greeks and Romans did. We seem compelled so to understand him in [20:19](#) (comp. [Luke 24:29-39](#)); and in no passage of his Gospel is that view unsuitable. Here then we understand that Pilate passed the sentence about sunrise, which at the Passover, near the vernal equinox, would be 6 o'clock. The intervening three hours might be occupied in preparations, and the Crucifixion occurred at 9 o'clock, viz. the third hour as counted by the Jews ([Mark 15:25](#)).

^b Pilate, of course, could not escape full legal and moral responsibility for his cowardly surrender to the Sanhedrin to keep his own office. The guilt of the Sanhedrin (both Pharisees and Sadducees unite in the demand for the blood of Jesus) is beyond dispute. It is impossible to make a mere political issue out of it and to lay all the blame on the

Sadducees, who feared a revolution. The Pharisees began the attacks against Jesus on theological and ecclesiastical grounds. The Sadducees later joined the conspiracy against Christ. Judas was a mere tool of the Sanhedrin, who had his resentments and grievances to avenge. There is guilt enough for all the plotters in the greatest wrong of the ages.

§ 162. THE ROMAN SOLDIERS MOCK^a JESUS

Friday, between 6 and 9 A.M.

Mark 15:16-19

16 And the soldiers led him away within the court, which is the ⁴Prætorium; and they call together the whole ²band. 17 And they clothed him with purple, and plaiting a crown of thorns, they put it on him; 18 and they began to salute him, Hail, King of the Jews! 19 And they smote his head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees worshipped him.

Matt. 27:27-30

27 Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the ¹palace, and gathered unto him the whole ²band. 28 And they ³stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe. 29 And they plaited a crown of thorns and put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand; and they kneeled down before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! 30 And they spat upon him, and took the reed and smote him on the head.

¹ Gr. *Prætorium*.

² Or, *cohort*.

³ Some ancient authorities read *clothed him*.

⁴ Or, *palace*.

^a The Sanhedrin likewise had mocked Jesus when they had condemned him to death ([§ 155](#)).

§ 163. JESUS ON THE WAY TO THE CROSS (*VIA DOLOROSA*) ON GOLGOTHA^a

Before 9 A.M. Friday

Mark 15:20-23

20 And when they had mocked him, they took off from him the purple, and put on him his garments. And they lead him out to crucify him.

21 And they ²compel one passing by, Simon of Cyrene,

Matt. 27:31-34

31 And when they had mocked him, they took off from him the robe, and put on him his garments, and led him away to crucify him.

32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene,

Luke 23:26-33

26 And when they led him away, they laid hold upon one

John 19:16-17

16 They took Jesus therefore: 17 and he went out, bearing the cross for himself,

coming from
the country,
the father of
Alexander and
Rufus, to go
with them, that
he might bear
his cross.

Simon by name:
him they
¹compelled to go
with them, that
he might bear
his cross. Simon of
Cyrene, coming
from the country,
and laid
on him the
cross, to bear
it after Jesus.

27 And there
followed him a
great multitude
of the
people, and of
women who
bewailed and
lamented him.

28 But Jesus
turning unto them
said, Daughters
of Jerusalem,
weep not
for me, but
weep for your-
selves, and for
your children.

29 For behold, the
days are coming,
in which
they shall say,
Blessed are the
barren, and the
wombs that
never bare, and
the breasts that
never gave
suck. 30 Then
shall they
begin to say to
the mountains,
Fall on
us; and to the
hills, Cover us
[see *Hos. 10:8*].

31 For if they
do these things
in the green
tree, what shall
be done in the
dry?

32 And there
were also two
others,
malefactors, led
with him to be
put to death.

22 And
they bring him
unto the place
Golgotha,
which is, being
interpreted,
The place of a
skull. 23 And
they offered
him wine
mingled with
myrrh: but he
received it not.

33 And
when they
were come unto
a place called
Golgotha,
that is to say,
The place of a
skull, 34 they
gave him wine
to drink
mingled with gall
[see *Ps. 69:21*];
and when he
had tasted it,
he would not
drink.

33 And when
they came unto
the place
which is called
³The skull,

unto the
place called
The place of a
skull, which
is called in
Hebrew
Golgotha:

¹ Gr. *impressed*.

² Gr. *impress*.

³ According to the Latin, *Calvary*, which has the same meaning.

^a Golgotha is the Aramaic word for "skull," and Calvary is the Latin word. The place cannot have been where the so-called "Church of the Holy Sepulchre" stands, far within the walls. There is of late a rapidly growing agreement that it was the northern end of the Temple hill, whose rounded summit (without the city wall), and southern face with holes in the rock, looks at a little distance much like a skull. This place fulfils all the conditions.

§ 164. THE FIRST THREE HOURS ON THE CROSS

From nine A.M. till noon on Friday (three sayings of Jesus; the soldiers gambling for the garment of Jesus; the inscription on the Cross; the scoffing of Jesus by the multitude, the Sanhedrin, the soldiers, and even by the two robbers on each side of Christ)^a

<p>Mark 15:24-32 24 And they crucify him, and part his garments among them, casting lots upon them, what each should take [see <i>Ps. 22:18</i>].</p>	<p>Matt. 27:35-44 35 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments among them, casting lots: 36 and they sat and watched him there.</p>	<p>Luke 23:33-43 33 there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand and the other on the left. 34 ⁴And Jesus said, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do.</p> <p style="padding-left: 40px;">And parting his garments among them, they cast lots.</p>	<p>John 19:18-27 18 where they crucified him, and with him two others, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.</p> <p>23 The soldiers therefore, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and also the ⁵coat: now the ⁵coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout.</p> <p>24 They said therefore one to another, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my garments among them, And upon my vesture did they cast lots. [<i>Ps. 22:18</i>].</p> <p>25 These things therefore the soldiers did.</p> <p>19 And Pilate wrote a title also, and put it</p>
<p>25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified</p>	<p>37 And they set up over his head</p>	<p>38 And there was also a superscription</p>	<p>19 And Pilate wrote a title also, and put it</p>

him. 26 And the superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

over him, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

on the cross. And there was written, JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS. 20 This title therefore read many of the Jews: ⁷for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, *and* in Latin, *and* in Greek. 21 The chief priests of the Jews therefore said to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but, that he said, I am King of the Jews. 22 Pilate answered, What I have written I have written.

27 And with him they crucify two robbers; one on his right hand, and one on his left.³

38 Then are there crucified with him two robbers, one on the right hand, and one on the left.

29 And they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads [*see Ps. 22:7*], and saying, Ha! thou that destroyest the ¹temple, and buildest it in three days, ³⁰ save thyself, and come down from the cross.

39 And they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, ⁴⁰ and saying, Thou that destroyest the ¹temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself: if thou art the Son of God, come down from the cross.

35 And the people stood beholding.

31 In like manner also the chief priests mocking *him* among themselves with the scribes said, He saved others; ²himself he cannot save. ³² Let the Christ, the King of Israel, now come down from the cross, that we may see and believe.

41 In like manner also the chief priests mocking *him*, with the scribes and elders, said, ⁴² He saved others; ²himself he cannot save. He is the King of Israel; let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe on him. ⁴³ He trusteth on God [*see Ps. 22:8*]; let him deliver him now, if he desireth him: for he said, I am the Son of God. ⁴⁴ And the robbers also that were crucified with him cast upon him the same reproach.

And the rulers also scoffed at him, saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if this is the Christ of God, his chosen. ³⁶ And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, offering him vinegar, ³⁷ and saying, If thou art the King of the Jews, save thyself.

And they that were crucified with him reproached him.

39 And one of
the malefactors
which
were hanged
railed on him,
saying, Art not
thou the
Christ? save
thyself and us.
40 But the other
answered, and
rebuking him
said, Dost thou
not even fear
God, seeing thou
art in the same
condemnation?
41 And we
indeed justly;
for we receive
the due reward
of our deeds:
but this man
hath done
nothing amiss.
42 And he said,
Jesus, remember
me when
thou comest ⁶in
thy kingdom.
43 And he said
unto him, Verily
I say unto
thee, To-day
shalt thou be
with me in
Paradise.

25 But there were
standing by the
cross of Jesus
his mother, and
his mother's
sister, Mary
the *wife* of
Cleopas, and
Mary Magdalene.
26 When Jesus
therefore
saw his mother,
and the disciple
standing by,
whom he
loved, he saith
unto his mother,
Woman, behold,
thy son!
27 Then saith
he to the
disciple, Behold,
thy mother!
And from that
hour the disciple
took her unto
his own *home*.

¹ Or, *sanctuary*.

² Or, *can he not save himself?*

³ Many ancient authorities insert ver. 28 *And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was reckoned with transgressors*. See [Luke 22:37](#).

⁴ Some ancient authorities omit *And Jesus said, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do*.

⁵ Or, *tunic*.

⁶ Some ancient authorities read *into thy kingdom*.

⁷ Or, *for the place of the city where Jesus was crucified was nigh at hand*.

^a It is not easy to tell the precise order of the events during this period of three hours, since the Gospels do not present them in the same detail or order. On the whole it has seemed best simply to follow Mark's arrangement as we have done uniformly in the Harmony. Thus the apparent order of the sayings is (1) The Prayer for Christ's enemies in Luke 23:34. (2) The Promise to the Repentant Robber in Luke 23:43. (3) The Charge to the Mother of Jesus and to the Beloved Disciple in John 19:26, 27. These three sayings are with reference to others.

§ 165. THE THREE HOURS OF DARKNESS FROM NOON TO THREE P.M.

(Four More Sayings^a at the Close of the Darkness and the Death of Christ.)

Mark 15:33-37	Matt. 27:45-50	Luke 23:44-46	John 19:28-30
33 And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole ¹ land until the ninth hour.	45 Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the ¹ land until the ninth hour. 46 And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, ² why hast thou forsaken me?	44 And it was now about the sixth hour, and a darkness came over the whole ¹ land until the ninth hour, 45 ⁴ the sun's light failing.	
34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, ² why hast thou forsaken me?	47 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elijah.		
36 And one ran, and filling a sponge full of vinegar, put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let be; let us see whether Elijah cometh to take him down.	48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink. 49 And the rest said, Let be; let us see whether Elijah cometh to save him. ³		28 After this Jesus, knowing that all things are now finished, that the scripture might be accomplished, saith, I thirst. 29 There was set there a vessel full of vinegar: so they put a sponge full of the vinegar upon hysop, and brought it to his mouth [<i>see Ps. 69:21</i>]. 30 When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar,
37 And Jesus uttered	50 And Jesus cried again	46 ⁵ And when Jesus had cried	

a loud voice,	with a loud voice,	with a loud voice, he said,	he said, It is finished:
		Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit [<i>see Ps. 31:5</i>]; and having said this,	and he bowed his head,
and gave up the ghost.	and yielded up his spirit.	and he gave up the ghost.	and gave up his spirit.

¹ Or, *earth*.

² Or, *why didst thou forsake me?*

³ Many ancient authorities add *And another took a spear and pierced his side, and there came out water and blood*. See [John 19:34](#).

⁴ Gr. *the sun failing*.

⁵ Or, *And Jesus, crying with a loud voice, said*.

^a The probable order of these four sayings coming just before the death of Jesus is (1) The Cry of Desolation, Mark 15:34 = Matt. 27:46. (2) The Cry of Physical Anguish, John 19:28. (3) The Cry of Victory, John 19:30. (4) The Cry of Resignation, Luke 23:46. These four sayings of Jesus are with reference to himself.

§ 166. THE PHENOMENA ACCOMPANYING THE DEATH OF CHRIST

Mark 15:38-41	Matt. 27:51-56	Luke 23:45, 47-49
38 And the veil of the ² temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom.	51 And behold, the veil of the ² temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake; and the rocks were rent; 52 and the tombs were opened; and many bodies of the saints that had fallen asleep were raised; 53 and coming forth out of the tombs after his resurrection they entered into the holy city and appeared unto many.	45 And the veil of the ² temple was rent in the midst.
39 And when the centurion, which stood by over against him, saw that he ¹ so gave up the ghost, he said,	54 Now the centurion, and they that were with him watching Jesus, when they saw the earthquake, and the things that were done, feared exceedingly, saying, Truly this was ³ the Son of God. 55 And many women were there beholding from afar, which had followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him: 56 among whom <i>were</i> both	47 And when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man. 48 And all the multitudes that came together to this sight, when they beheld the things that were done, returned smiting their breasts. 49 And all his

himself was looking for the kingdom of God;

and he boldly went in unto Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus. 44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he ¹had been any while dead. 45 And when he learned it of the centurion, he granted the corpse to Joseph.

46 And he bought a linen cloth, and taking him down, wound him in the linen cloth,

and laid him in a tomb which had been hewn out of a rock; and he rolled a stone against the door of the tomb.

himself was Jesus' disciple: 58 this man went to Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus.

Then Pilate commanded it to be given up.

59 And Joseph took the body, and wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,

60 and laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the tomb, and departed.

looking for the kingdom of God: 52 this man went to Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus.

53 And he took it down, and wrapped it in a linen cloth,

and laid him in a tomb that was hewn in stone, where never man had yet lain. 54 And it was the day of the Preparation, and the sabbath ²drew on.

being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews, asked of Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus: and

Pilate gave *him* leave. He came therefore, and took away his body. 39 And there came also Nicodemus, he who at the first came to him by night, bringing a ⁴mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pound *weight*. 40 So they took the body of Jesus, and bound it in linen cloths with the spices, as the custom of the Jews is to bury. 41 Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new tomb wherein was never man yet laid [*see Deut. 21:22-23*]. 42 There then because of the Jews' Preparation (for the tomb was nigh at hand) they laid Jesus.

¹ Many ancient authorities read *were already dead*.

² Gr. *began to dawn*.

³ Or, *crushed*.

⁴ Some ancient authorities read *roll*.

§ 168. THE WATCH OF THE WOMEN BY THE TOMB OF JESUS

The women maintain their watch and rest on the Sabbath (beginning 6 P.M.) while the Pharisees have a guard of Roman soldiers to keep watch over the Roman seal on the tomb.

Friday afternoon till Saturday afternoon

Mark 15:47 47 And Mary Magdalene and Mary the <i>mother</i> of Joses beheld where he was laid.	Matt. 27:61-66 61 And Mary Magdalene was there, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.	Luke 23:55-56 55 And the women, which had come with him out of Galilee, followed after, and beheld the tomb, and how his body was laid. 56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments. And on the sabbath ^a they rested according to the commandment [<i>see Ex. 12:16; 20:8-11; Deut. 5:12-15</i>].
---	--	---

62 Now on the morrow, which is *the day* after the Preparation, the chief priests and the Pharisees were gathered together unto Pilate, 63 saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I rise again.
64 Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest haply his disciples come and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: and the last error will be worse than the first. 65 Pilate said unto them, ¹Ye have a guard: go your way, ²make it as sure as ye can. 66 So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, the guard being with them.

¹ Or, *Take a guard*.

² Gr. *make it sure, as ye know*.

^a Luke (23:54) notes that "the Sabbath drew on" after the burial on Friday afternoon. The Sabbath began at 6 P.M. Then Luke notes that the women rested during the Sabbath (our Friday night and Saturday).

PART XIV THE RESURRECTION, APPEARANCES, AND ASCENSION OF CHRIST

During forty days beginning with Sunday after the death of Christ. Spring of A.D. 30 (or 29). Judea and Galilee.^a §§ 169-184.

^a Of this period we see that he remained at or near Jerusalem for a week. Then he probably left at once for Galilee ([Matt. 28:7](#); [Mark 16:7](#)). In the month that followed we cannot fix the exact time of the events that occurred in Galilee, but just at the end of the forty days we find him again in Jerusalem.

§ 169. THE VISIT OF THE WOMEN TO THE TOMB OF JESUS

They watch the tomb late on the Sabbath (our Saturday afternoon); and the purchase of spices by them after the Sabbath (after 6 P.M. Saturday) on the first day of the week.

GOLGOTHA AND BETHANY

Our late Saturday afternoon and early evening

Mark 16:1

1 And when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the *mother* of James, and Salome, bought spices, that they might come and anoint him.

Matt. 28:1

1 Now late on the sabbath day,^a as it began to dawn toward the first *day* of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.

^a This phrase once gave much trouble, but the usage of the vernacular *Koiné* Greek amply justifies the translation. The visit of the women to inspect the tomb was thus made before the sabbath was over (before 6 P.M. on Saturday). But the same Greek idiom was occasionally used in the sense of "after." See Robertson, *Grammar of the Greek New Testament in the Light of Historical Research*, p. 645. The distance from Bethany to Golgotha was not more than a sabbath day's journey. The spices could be purchased after sundown either in Bethany or Jerusalem. It must be borne in mind that the Jewish First Day of the Week began at 6 P.M. on our Saturday.

§ 170. THE EARTHQUAKE, THE ROLLING AWAY OF THE STONE BY AN ANGEL, AND THE FRIGHT OF THE ROMAN WATCHERS

Sunday before sunrise

Matt. 28:2-4

2 And behold, there was a great earthquake; for an angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled away the stone, and sat upon it. 3 His appearance was as lightning, and his raiment white as snow: 4 and for fear of him the watchers did quake, and became as dead men.

§ 171. THE VISIT OF THE WOMEN TO THE TOMB OF JESUS ABOUT SUNRISE SUNDAY MORNING AND THE MESSAGE OF THE ANGELS ABOUT THE EMPTY TOMB

Golgotha. Early Sunday morning

<p>Mark 16:2-8 2 And very early on the first day of the week, they come to the tomb when the sun was risen. 3 And they were saying among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the tomb? 4 and looking up, they see that the stone is rolled back: for it was exceeding great. 5 And entering into the tomb, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, arrayed in a white robe; and they were amazed. 6 And he saith unto them, Be not amazed: ye seek Jesus, the Nazarene, which hath been crucified: he is risen; he is not here: behold, the place where they laid him! 7 But go, tell his disciples and Peter, He goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him, as he said unto you. 8 And they went out, and fled from the tomb; for trembling and astonishment had come upon them: and</p>	<p>Matt. 28:5-8 5 And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which hath been crucified. 6 He is not here; for he is risen, even as he said. Come, see the place ¹where the Lord lay. 7 And go quickly, and tell his disciples, He is risen from the dead; and lo, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him: lo, I have told you. 8 And they departed quickly from the tomb with fear and great joy, and ran to bring his disciples word.</p>	<p>Luke 24:1-8 1 But on the first day of the week, at early dawn,^a they came unto the tomb, bringing the spices which they had prepared. 2 And they found the stone rolled away from the tomb. 3 And they entered in, and found not the body ²of the Lord Jesus. 4 And it came to pass, while they were perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in dazling apparel: 5 and as they were affrighted, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye ³the living among the dead? 6 ⁴He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, saying 7 that the Son of man must be delivered up into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again. 8 And they remembered his words.</p>	<p>John 20:1 1 Now on the first <i>day</i> of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, while it was yet dark, unto the tomb, and seeth the stone taken away from the tomb.</p>
--	---	--	--

they said nothing
to any one; for
they were afraid.

¹ Many ancient authorities read *where he lay*.

² Some ancient authorities omit *of the Lord Jesus*.

³ Gr. *him that liveth*.

⁴ Some ancient authorities omit *He is not here, but is risen*.

^a So he had already risen at early dawn on the first day of the week. He was buried (§ 167) shortly before sunset on Friday, and at sunset the sabbath began. So he lay in the tomb a small part of Friday, all of Saturday, and 10 or 11 hours of Sunday. This corresponds exactly with the seven times repeated statement that he would or did rise "on the third day," which *could not possibly* mean after 72 hours. The phrase two or three times given, "after three days," naturally denoted for Jews, as for Greeks and Romans, a whole central day and any part of a first and third, thus agreeing with "on the third day." Even the "three days and three nights" of [Matt. 12:40](#) need not, according to known Jewish usage, mean more than we have described. So these expressions *can* be reconciled with "on the third day," and with the facts as recorded, while "on the third day" *cannot* mean after 72 hours. See [Note 13](#) at end of the Harmony for full discussion of the question. There is no real appeal from the testimony of Luke, who gives the whole period. Luke states that Jesus was buried just before the sabbath "drew on" (our Friday evening); that the women rested during the sabbath (our Saturday), and that Jesus was already risen early Sunday morning when the women came to the tomb.

§ 172. MARY MAGDALENE AND THE OTHER WOMEN REPORT TO THE APOSTLES AND PETER AND JOHN VISIT THE EMPTY TOMB

Luke 24:9-12

9 and returned ¹from the tomb, and told all these things to the eleven, and to all the rest. ¹⁰ Now they were Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the *mother* of James: and the other women with them told these things unto the apostles. ¹¹ And these words appeared in their sight as idle talk; and they disbelieved them. ¹² ²But Peter arose, and ran into the tomb; and stooping and looking in, he seeth the linen clothes by themselves; and he ³departed to his home, wondering at that which was come to pass.

John 20:2-10

² She runneth therefore, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the tomb, and we know not where they have laid him. ³ Peter therefore went forth, and the other disciple, and they went toward the tomb. ⁴ And they ran both together: and the other disciple outran Peter, and came first to the tomb; ⁵ and stooping and looking in, he seeth the linen cloths lying; yet entered he not in. ⁶ Simon Peter therefore also cometh, following him, and entered into the tomb; and he beholdeth the linen cloths lying, ⁷ and the napkin, that was upon his head, not lying with the linen cloths, but rolled up in a place by itself. ⁸ Then entered in therefore the other disciple also, which came first to the tomb, and he saw, and believed. ⁹ For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead. ¹⁰ So the disciples went away again unto their own home.

¹ Some ancient authorities omit *from the tomb*.

² Some ancient authorities omit verse 12.

³ Or, *departed, wondering with himself*.

Five appearances are given as occurring on the day of his resurrection, and five subsequently during the forty days. The five appearances on this day were (1) to Mary Magdalene (John and Mark); (2) to other women (Matthew); (3) to the two going to Emmaus; (4) to Simon Peter (Luke 24:34); (5) to ten apostles and others.

§ 173. THE APPEARANCE OF JESUS TO MARY MAGDALENE AND THE MESSAGE TO THE DISCIPLES

Jerusalem. The first day of the week (Sunday)

Mark 16:9-11

9 ¹Now when he was risen early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven ²devils.

10 She went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, disbelieved.

John 20:11-18

11 But Mary was standing without at the tomb weeping: so, as she wept, she stooped and looked into the tomb; 12 and she beholdeth two angels in white sitting, one at the head, and one at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. 13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him. 14 When she had thus said, she turned herself back, and beholdeth Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. 15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. 16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turneth herself, and saith unto him in Hebrew, Rabboni; which is to say, ³Master. 17 Jesus saith to her, ⁴Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended unto the Father: but go unto my brethren, and say to them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and my God and your God. 18 Mary Magdalene cometh and telleth the disciples, I have seen the Lord; and *how that* he had said these things unto her.

¹ The two oldest Greek manuscripts, and some other authorities, omit from ver. 9 to the end. Some other authorities have a different ending to the Gospel.

² Gr. *demons*.

³ Or, *Teacher*.

§ 174. THE APPEARANCE OF JESUS TO THE OTHER WOMEN

Jerusalem. Sunday the first day of the week

Matt. 28:9-10

9 And behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and took hold of his feet, and worshipped him. 10 Then saith Jesus unto them, Fear not: go tell my brethren that they depart into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

§ 175. SOME OF THE GUARD REPORT TO THE JEWISH RULERS

Matt 28:11-15

11 Now while they were going, behold, some of the guard came into the city, and told unto the chief priests all the things that were come to pass. 12 And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, 13 saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. 14 And if this ¹come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and rid you of care. 15 So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying was spread abroad among the Jews, *and continueth* until this day.

¹ Or, *come to a hearing before the governor.*

§ 176. THE APPEARANCE TO TWO DISCIPLES (CLEOPAS AND ANOTHER) ON THE WAY TO EMMAUS

Sunday afternoon

Mark 16:12, 13

12 And after these things he was manifested in another form unto two of them, as they walked, on their way into the country. 13 And they went away and told it unto the rest: neither believed they them.

Luke 24:13-32

13 And behold, two of them were going that very day to a village named Emmaus, which was threescore furlongs from Jerusalem. 14 And they communed with each other of all these things which had happened. 15 And it came to pass, while they communed and questioned together, that Jesus himself drew near, and went with them. 16 But their eyes were holden that they should not know him. 17 And he said unto them, ¹What communications are these that ye have one with another, as ye walk? And they stood still, looking sad. 18 And one of them, named Cleopas, answering said unto him, ²Dost thou alone sojourn in Jerusalem and not know the things which are come to pass there in these days? 19 And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, The things concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: 20 and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him up to be condemned to death, and crucified him. 21 But we hoped that it was he which should redeem Israel. Yea and beside all this, it is now the third day

since these things came to pass. 22 Moreover certain women of our company amazed us, having been early at the tomb; 23 and when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive. 24 And certain of them that were with us went to the tomb, and found it even so as the women had said: but him they saw not. 25 And he said unto them, O foolish men, and slow of heart to believe ³in all that the prophets have spoken! 26 Behoved it not the Christ to suffer these things, and to enter into his glory? 27 And beginning from Moses and from all the prophets, he interpreted to them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. 28 And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they were going: and he made as though he would go further. 29 And they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is now far spent. And he went in to abide with them. 30 And it came to pass, when he had sat down with them to meat, he took the ⁴bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. 31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. 32 And they said one to another, Was not our heart burning within us, while he spake to us in the way, while he opened to us the scriptures?

¹ Gr. *What words are these that ye exchange one with another?*

² Or, *Dost thou sojourn alone in Jerusalem, and knowest thou not the things.*

³ Or, *after.*

⁴ Or, *loaf.*

§ 177. THE REPORT OF THE TWO DISCIPLES AND THE NEWS OF THE APPEARANCE TO SIMON PETER

Jerusalem. Sunday evening

Luke 24:33-35

1 Cor. 15:5

33 And they rose up that very hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, 34 saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. 35 And they rehearsed the things *that happened* in the way, and how he was known of them in the breaking of the bread. 5 and that he appeared to Cephas.

§ 178. THE APPEARANCE TO THE ASTONISHED DISCIPLES (THOMAS ABSENT) WITH A COMMISSION AND THEIR FAILURE TO CONVINCe THOMAS

Jerusalem. Sunday evening

Mark 16:14

Luke 24:36-43

John 20:19-25

19 When therefore it was evening, on that day, the first *day* of the week, and when the doors were shut where the disciples were, for fear of the 14 And afterward he was manifested unto 36 And as they spake these things, he himself

the eleven themselves
as they sat at meat;

stood in the midst
of them, ¹and saith
unto them, Peace *be*
unto you. ³⁷ But they
were terrified and
affrighted, and
supposed that they
beheld a spirit.

Jews, Jesus came and
stood in the midst,
and saith unto them,
Peace *be* unto you.

and he
upbraided them with
their unbelief and
hardness of heart,
because they believed
not them which had
seen him after he was
risen.

³⁸ And he said unto
them, Why are ye
troubled? and
wherefore do reasonings
arise in your heart?

³⁹ See my hands and
my feet, that it is I
myself: handle me,
and see; for a spirit
hath not flesh and
bones, as ye behold
me having. ⁴⁰ ²And
when he had said
this, he shewed them
his hands and his feet.

⁴¹ And while they still
disbelieved for joy,
and wondered, he said
unto them, Have ye
here anything to eat?

⁴² And they gave him a
piece of a broiled fish.³

⁴³ And he took it, and
did eat before them.

²⁰ And when he had
said this, he shewed
unto them his hands
and his side.

The disciples
therefore were
glad, when they saw

the Lord. ²¹ Jesus therefore said to them again, Peace *be* unto you: as
the Father hath sent me, even so send I you. ²² And when he had said
this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the ⁴Holy
Ghost: ²³ whose soever sins ye forgive, they are forgiven unto them;
whose soever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.^a

²⁴ But Thomas, one of the twelve, called ⁵Didymus, was not with
them when Jesus came. ²⁵ The other disciples therefore said unto him,
We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his
hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails,
and put my hand into his side, I will not believe.

¹ Some ancient authorities omit *and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.*

² Some ancient authorities omit ver. 40.

³ Many ancient authorities add *and a honeycomb.*

⁴ Or, *Holy Spirit.*

⁵ That is, *Twin.*

^a Of our Lord's final commissions to the apostles and others ([Luke 24:33](#)), this is the first. See a second in [§ 181](#), and a third in [§ 183](#).

§ 179. THE APPEARANCE TO THE DISCIPLES THE NEXT SUNDAY NIGHT AND THE
CONVINCING OF THOMAS

Jerusalem

John 20:26-31

1 Cor. 15:5

26 And after eight days again his 5 [and that he appeared to Cephas;]
disciples were within, and Thomas then to the twelve;
with them. Jesus cometh, the
doors being shut, and stood in the
midst, and said, Peace *be* unto you.
27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach
hither thy finger, and see my
hands; and reach *hither* thy hand,
and put it into my side: and be not
faithless, but believing. 28 Thomas
answered and said unto him, My
Lord and my God. 29 Jesus saith
unto him, Because thou hast seen
me, ¹thou hast believed: blessed
are they that have not seen, and
yet have believed.
30 Many other signs therefore
did Jesus in the presence of the
disciples, which are not written in
this book: 31 but these are written,
that ye may believe that Jesus is
the Christ, the Son of God; and
that believing ye may have life
in his name.

¹ Or, *hast thou believed?*

§ 180. THE APPEARANCE TO SEVEN DISCIPLES BESIDE THE SEA OF GALILEE.^a THE
MIRACULOUS DRAUGHT OF FISHES

John 21

1 After these things Jesus manifested himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and he manifested *himself* on this wise. 2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called ¹Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons* of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. 3 Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also come with thee. They went forth, and entered into the boat; and that night they took nothing. 4 But when day was now breaking, Jesus stood on the beach: howbeit the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. 5 Jesus therefore said unto them, Children, have ye aught to eat? They answered him, No. 6 And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the boat, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. 7 That disciple therefore whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. So when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his coat about him (for he was naked), and cast himself into the sea. 8 But the other disciples came in the little boat (for they were not far from the land, but about two hundred cubits off), dragging the net *full* of fishes. 9 So when they got out upon the land, they see ²a fire of coals there, and ³fish laid thereon, and ⁴bread. 10 Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now taken. 11 Simon Peter therefore went ⁵up, and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, a hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, the net was not rent. 12 Jesus saith unto them, Come *and* break your fast. And none of the disciples durst inquire of him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord. 13 Jesus cometh, and taketh the ⁶bread, and giveth them, and the fish likewise. 14 This is now the third time that Jesus was manifested to the disciples, after he was risen from the dead.

15 So when they had broken their fast, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, *son* of ⁷John, ⁸lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I ⁹love thee. He saith

unto him, Feed my lambs. 16 He saith to him again a second time, Simon, *son* of ⁷John, ⁸lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I ⁹love thee. He saith unto him, Tend my sheep. 17 He saith unto him the third time, Simon, *son* of ⁷John, ⁹lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, ⁹Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou ¹⁰knowest that I ⁹love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep. 18 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not. 19 Now this he spake, signifying by what manner of death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me. 20 Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following; which also leaned back on his breast at the supper, and said, Lord, who is he that betrayeth thee? 21 Peter therefore seeing him saith to Jesus, Lord, ¹¹and what shall this man do? 22 Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? follow thou me. 23 This saying therefore went forth among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, that he should not die; but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee?

24 This is the disciple which beareth witness of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his witness is true.

25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself would not contain the books that should be written.

¹ That is, *Twin*.

² Gr. *a fire of charcoal*.

³ Or, *a fish*.

⁴ Or, *a loaf*.

⁵ Or, *aboard*.

⁶ Or, *loaf*.

⁷ Gr. *Joanes*. See [ch. 1:42](#).

^{8,9} *Love* in these places represents two different Greek words.

¹⁰ Or, *perceivest*.

¹¹ Gr. *and this man, what?*

^a The precise date of this seventh appearance is not known except that it was after that on the Resurrection Day and before the Ascension.

§ 181. THE APPEARANCE TO ABOVE FIVE HUNDRED^a ON AN APPOINTED MOUNTAIN IN GALILEE, AND A COMMISSION GIVEN

Mark 16:15-18

Matt. 28:16-20

1 Cor. 15:6

16 But the eleven disciples went into Galilee, unto the mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped *him*: but some doubted.

18 And Jesus came to them and spake unto them, saying, All authority hath been given unto me in heaven and on earth.

6 then he appeared to above five hundred brethren at once, of whom the greater part remain until now, but some are fallen asleep;

15 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach

19 Go ye therefore, and make disciples of all

the gospel to the whole creation.

the nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost: 20 teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I commanded you:

16 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that disbelieveth shall be condemned. 17 And these signs shall follow them that believe: in my name shall they cast out ³devils; they shall speak with ⁴new tongues; 18 they shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall in no wise hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

and lo, I am with you ¹alway, even unto ²the end of the world.

¹ Gr. *all the days*.

² Or, *the consummation of the age*.

³ Gr. *demons*.

⁴ Some ancient authorities omit *new*.

^a The meeting attended by so large a number as stated by Paul was most probably that which Jesus had appointed (Matt. 28:16), and it could be held on an appointed mountain without attracting the attention of unbelievers.—The Commission in Mark may perhaps be reckoned the same as Matthew's here. A third Commission is given by Luke in [§ 183](#). This is what is called by many the Great Commission.

§ 182. THE APPEARANCE TO JAMES THE BROTHER OF JESUS

1 Cor. 15:7

7 Then he appeared to James; then to all the apostles.

§ 183. THE APPEARANCE TO THE DISCIPLES WITH ANOTHER COMMISSION

Jerusalem

Luke 24:44-49

44 And he said unto them, These are my words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, how that all things must needs be fulfilled, which are written in the law of Moses, and the prophets, and the psalms, concerning me. 45 Then opened he their mind, that they might understand the scriptures; 46 and he said unto them, Thus it is written [*see Hos. 6:2*], that the Christ should suffer, and rise again from the dead the third day; 47 and that repentance ¹and remission of sins should be preached in his name unto all the ²nations, beginning from Jerusalem. 48 Ye are witnesses of these things. 49 And behold, I send forth the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city, until ye be clothed with power from on high.

Acts 1:3-8

3 to whom he also ³shewed himself alive after his passion by many proofs, appearing unto them by the space of forty days, and speaking the things concerning the kingdom of God: 4 and, ⁴being assembled together with them, he charged them not to depart from Jerusalem, but to wait for the promise of the Father, which, *said he*, ye heard from me: 5 for John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized ⁵with the Holy Ghost not many days hence. 6 They therefore, when they were come together, asked him, saying, Lord, dost thou at this time restore the kingdom to Israel? 7 And he said unto them, It is not for you to know times or seasons, which the Father hath ⁶set within his own authority. 8 But ye shall receive power, when the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be my witnesses both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

¹ Some ancient authorities read *unto*.

² Or, *nations. Beginning from Jerusalem, ye are witnesses.*

³ Gr. *presented*.

⁴ Or, *eating with them*.

⁵ Or, *in*.

⁶ Or, *appointed by*.

§ 184. THE LAST APPEARANCE AND THE ASCENSION

On Olivet between Jerusalem and Bethany

Mark 16:19, 20

Luke 24:50-53

Acts 1:9-12

50 And he led them out until *they were* over against Bethany: and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. 51 And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he parted from them, ¹and was carried up into heaven.

19 So then the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken unto them, was received up into heaven,

9 And when he had said these things, as they were looking, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight.

and sat
down at the right
hand of God.

10 And while they were
looking stedfastly
into heaven as he
went, behold two men
stood by them in
white apparel; 11 which
also said, Ye men of
Galilee, why stand ye
looking into heaven?
this Jesus, which was
received up from you
into heaven, shall so
come in like manner
as ye beheld him
going into heaven.

52 And they
²worshipped him, and
returned to Jerusalem¹² Then returned they
with great joy: 53 and unto Jerusalem.
were continually in
the temple, blessing
God.

20 And they went
forth, and preached
everywhere, the Lord
working with them,
and confirming the
word by the signs
that followed. Amen.

¹ Some ancient authorities omit *and was carried up into heaven*.

² Some ancient authorities omit *worshipped him, and*.

EXPLANATORY NOTES ON POINTS OF SPECIAL DIFFICULTY IN THE HARMONY

1. About Harmonies of the Gospels

We do not know how soon an effort was made to combine in one book the several portrayals of the life of Jesus. Luke in his Gospel ([1:1-4](#)) makes a selection of the material and incorporates data from different sources, but with the stamp of his own arrangement and style. He followed, in the main, the order of Mark's Gospel, as is easily seen. But this method is not what is meant by a harmony of the Gospels, for the result is a selection from all sorts of material (oral and written), monographs and longer treatises.

The first known harmony is Tatian's Diatessaron (*dia tessaron*, by four) in the second century (about 160 A.D.) in the Syriac tongue. It was long lost, but an Arabic translation has been found and an English rendering appeared in 1894 by J. Hamlyn Hill. It is plain that Tatian has blended into one narrative our Four Gospels with a certain amount of freedom as is shown by Hobson's *The Diatessaron of Tatian and the Synoptic Problem* (1904). There have been modern attempts also to combine into one story the records of the Four Gospels. There is a superficial advantage in such an effort in the freedom from variations in the accounts, but the loss is too great for such an arbitrary gain. The word harmony calls for such an arrangement, but it is not the method of the best modern harmonies which preserve the differences in material and style just as they are in the Four Gospels.

In the third century Ammonius arranged the Gospels in four parallel columns (the *Sections* of Ammonius). This was an attempt to give a conspectus of the material in the Gospels side by side. In the fourth century Eusebius with his *Canons* and *Sections* enabled the reader to see at a glance the parallel passages in the Gospels. The ancients took a keen interest in this form of study of the Gospels, as Augustine shows.

Of modern harmonies that by Edward Robinson has had the most influence. The edition in English appeared in 1845, that in Greek in 1846. Riddle revised Robinson's Harmony in 1889. There were many others that employed the Authorized Version, like Clark's, and that divided the

life of Christ according to the feasts.

Broadus (June, 1893) followed Waddy (1887) in the use of the Canterbury Revision, but was the first to break away from the division by feasts and to show the historical development in the life of Jesus. Stevens and Burton followed (December, 1893) Broadus within six months and, like him, used the Canterbury Revision and had an independent division of the life of Christ to show the historical unfolding of the events. These two harmonies have held the field for nearly thirty years for students of the English Gospels. In 1903 Kerr issued one in the American Standard Version and James one in the Canterbury Revision (1901).

Harmonies of the Gospels in the Greek continued to appear, like Tischendorf's (1851, new edition 1891), Wright's *A Synopsis of the Gospels in Greek* (1903), Huck's *Synopse der drei ersten Evangelien* (1892, English translation in 1907), Campbell's *First Three Gospels in Greek* (1899), *A Harmony of the Synoptic Gospels in Greek* by Burton and Goodspeed (1920).

The progress in synoptic criticism emphasized the difference in subject matter and style between the Synoptic Gospels and the Fourth Gospel as appears in the works of Huck, Campbell, and Burton and Goodspeed that give only the Synoptic Gospels. Burton and Goodspeed have also an English work, *A Harmony of the Synoptic Gospels for Historical and Critical Study* (1917). In 1917 Sharman (*Records of the Life of Jesus*) gives first a harmony of the Synoptic Gospels with references to the Fourth Gospel and then an outline of the Fourth Gospel with references to the Synoptic Gospels.

Once more in 1919 Van Kirk produced *The Source Book of the Life of Christ* which is only a partial harmony, for the parables and speeches of Jesus are only referred to, not quoted. But he endeavored to show the results of Gospel criticism in the text of the book. There is much useful material here for a harmony, but it is not a real harmony that can be used for the full story of the life of Jesus. Van Kirk, however, is the first writer to place Mark in the first column instead of Matthew. I had already done it in my outline before I saw Van Kirk's book, but his was published first. It is an immense improvement to put Mark first. The student thus sees that the arrangement of the material is not arbitrary and whimsical, but orderly and natural. Both Matthew and Luke follow Mark's order except in the first part of Matthew where he is topical in the main. John supplements the Synoptic Gospels, particularly in the Judean (Jerusalem) Ministry.

Slowly, therefore, progress has been made in the harmonies of the Gospels. But the modern student is able to reproduce the life and words of Jesus as has not been possible since the first century. It is a fourfold portrait of Christ that we get, but the whole is infinitely richer than the picture given by any one of the Four Gospels. The present Harmony aims to put the student in touch with the results of modern scholarly research and to focus attention on the actual story in the Gospels themselves. One may have his own opinion of the Fourth Gospel, but it is needed in a harmony for completeness.

2. Synoptic Criticism

The criticism of the synoptic gospels has been able to reach a broad general conclusion that is likely to stand the test of time. The reason for this happy solution lies in the fact that the processes and results can be tested. It is not mere subjective speculation. Any one who knows how to weigh evidence can compare Mark, Matthew, and Luke in the English, and still better in the Greek. The pages of the present harmony offer proof enough. It is plain as a pikestaff that both our Matthew and Luke used practically all of Mark and followed his general order of events. For this reason Mark has been placed first on the pages where this Gospel appears at all. But another thing is equally clear and that is that both Matthew and Luke had another source in common because they each give practically identical matter for much that is not in Mark at all. This second common source for Matthew and Luke has been called Logia because it is chiefly discourses. It is sometimes referred to as "Q", the first letter of the German word *Quelle* (source). Unfortunately we do not have the whole of the Logia (Q) before us as in the case of Mark, though we probably do not possess the original ending of Mark in [16:9-20](#). But we can at least reproduce what is preserved. Still, just as sometimes either Matthew or Luke made use of Mark, so in the case of the Logia that is probably true. Hence we cannot tell the precise limits of the Logia. Besides, a small part of Mark is not employed by either Matthew or Luke and that may be true of the Logia. But the fact of these two sources for Matthew and Luke seems to be proven.

But there are various other points to be observed. One is that both Matthew and Luke may have had various other sources. Luke tells us ([Luke 1:1-4](#)) that he made use of "many" such sources, both oral and written. And a large part of Luke does not appear in the other gospels or at least similar events and sayings occur in different environments and times. Hence our solid conclusion must allow freedom and flexibility to the writers in various ways. We can see for ourselves how Matthew and Luke handled both Mark and the Logia, each in his own way and with individual touches of style and purpose.

One other matter calls for attention. Papias is quoted by Eusebius as saying that Matthew wrote in Hebrew (or Aramaic) whereas our present Matthew is in Greek. It is now commonly held that the real Matthew (Levi) wrote the Logia first in Aramaic and that either he or some one else used that with Mark and other sources for our present Gospel of Matthew.

It should be added also that there is a considerable body of evidence for the view that Mark wrote under the influence of Simon Peter and preserves the vividness and freshness of Peter's own style as an eyewitness.

One other result has come. It is increasingly admitted that the Logia was very early, before 50 A.D., and Mark likewise if Luke wrote the Acts while Paul was still alive. Luke's Gospel comes (Acts 1:1) before the Acts. The date of Acts is still in dispute, but the early date (about A.D. 63) is gaining support constantly. The upshot of these centuries of synoptic criticism has brought into sharp outline the facts that now stand out with reasonable clearness. There are many points in dispute still, but we at least know how the synoptic gospels were written, and are reasonably certain of the dates and the authors.

There are many good books on the subject, like Hawkin's *Horae Synopticae* (second edition), Sanday's *Oxford Studies in the Synoptic Problem*, Harnack's *Sayings of Jesus* and his *Date of the Synoptic Gospels and Acts*. My own views appear in my *Commentary on Matthew* (Bible for Home and School), *Studies in Mark's Gospel*, and *Luke the Historian in the Light of Research*.

3. The Authorship of the Fourth Gospel

It has come to pass that one has to defend the use of the Fourth Gospel on a par with the Synoptic Gospels. The Johannine problem is an old one and a difficult one. It cannot be said that modern scholarship has come to a clear result here, as is true of the Synoptic Gospels. As a matter of fact, the battle still rages vigorously. There are powerful arguments on both sides. A mere sketch of the real situation is all that can be attempted here.

The Gospel and the Epistles are in the same style and can be confidently affirmed to be by the same author. The Apocalypse has some striking peculiarities of its own. There are likenesses in vocabulary and idiom beyond a doubt of a subtle nature, but the grammatical irregularities in the Book of Revelation have long been a puzzle to those who hold to the Johannine authorship. A full discussion of these grammatical details can be found in the leading commentaries on the Apocalypse. A brief survey is given in my *Grammar of the Greek New Testament in the Light of Historical Research*. The facts are undisputed and have a most interesting parallel in the papyri fragments of some of the less educated writers of the *Koiné* as one can see for himself in Milligan's *Greek Papyri* or in any other collection.

There are two solutions of the problem with two alternatives in each instance. There are those who roundly assert that the same man could not have written both the Gospel and the Apocalypse. Some of these affirm that the Apostle John wrote the Apocalypse but not the Gospel. Certainly a "John" wrote the Revelation or claimed it at any rate. Others of this group hold that an inferential Presbyter John (not "the elder" in 2 and 3 John) supposed to be meant by Papias wrote the Apocalypse while some one else wrote the Gospel whether the Apostle John or not.

But a considerable body of scholars still hold that the same man wrote both the Gospel and the Apocalypse, but a different explanation is offered by two groups. One class of writers affirm that John wrote the Apocalypse first before he had come to be at home in the Greek idiom as we see it in the Gospel and the Epistles. We know that John and Peter were fishermen and were not considered men of literary training by the Sanhedrin (Acts 4:14). This explanation is sufficient but for the further fact that the early date of the Apocalypse (about 70 A.D.) is not now so generally held to be true. The later or Domitianic date as given by Irenæus seems pretty clearly to be correct. So the other group suggest that the books may belong substantially to the same period (the Domitianic date) and that the explanation of the grammatical infelicities in the Apocalypse may be due to the fact that John being on the Isle of Patmos when he wrote did not have the benefit of friends in Ephesus who apparently read the Gospel ([John 21:24-25](#)). Besides, the excited state of John's mind because of the visions may have added to the number of the solecisms in the Apocalypse. This view I personally hold as probable. The unity of both Gospel and Apocalypse is denied by some.

So the matter stands as between the Gospel and the Apocalypse. But the Fourth Gospel has difficulties of its own. These relate in part to the book in itself. It is true there is a great similarity in language and style between the narrative parts of the book and the discourses of Jesus. It is affirmed that the writer has colored the speeches of Jesus with his own style or even made up the dialogues so that they are without historical value or at least on a much lower plane than the Synoptic Gospels as objective history. There is something in this point, but one must remember that the Synoptic Gospels vary in their manner of reporting the speeches of Jesus and aim to give the substance rather than the precise words of the Master in all instances. It is at most a matter of degree. There is a Johannine type of thought and phrase beyond a doubt, but curiously enough we have a paragraph in [Matthew 11:24-31](#) and [Luke 10:21-23](#) that is precisely like the Johannine specimens, written long before the Fourth Gospel. One must remember the versatility of Jesus, who could not be retained in any one style or mold. But there are those who admit the Johannine authorship of the Gospel and yet who refuse to put it on the same plane as the Synoptic Gospels. Every one must decide for himself on this point. For myself I see too much of Christ in the Fourth Gospel in the most realistic and dramatic form to be mere invention. We can enlarge our conception of Christ to make room for the Fourth Gospel.

But even so it is urged that the Beloved Disciple cannot be the Apostle John. If not, then the Fourth Gospel ignores the Apostle John,—a very curious situation. It is a long story for which one must go to the able books in defense of the Johannine authorship by Ezra Abbott, James Drummond, W. Sanday, Luthardt, Watkins and many others. The ablest modern attacks are made by Bacon and Wendt and Schmiedel. My own view is given in my *The Divinity of Christ in the Gospel of John*.

4. *The Jesus of History*

It is not long since the cry of "Back to Christ" was raised and away from Paul and John. Soon this cry was changed to an appeal to the Jesus of History in opposition to the Christ of Theology. So we had the "Jesus or Christ" controversy (see the Hibbert Journal Supplement for 1909). It was gravely affirmed by some that Paul had created the Christ of Christianity and had permanently altered the simple program of Jesus for a social Kingdom and had turned it into a great ecclesiastical system with speculative Christological interpretations quite beyond the range of the vision of the Jesus of the Synoptic Gospels. It was admitted that the Fourth Gospel, the Apocalypse, and the Epistles all gave the Pauline view.

To the Synoptic Gospels, therefore, we all went. But the Christ of Paul and of John is in the Synoptic Gospels. In all essentials the picture is the same in Luke as in John and Paul. The shading is different, but Jesus in Luke is the Son of God as well as the Son of Man (see my *Luke the Historian in the Light of Research*). It was admitted that Matthew gives the picture of Jesus as the Jewish Messiah. Mark reflects Peter's conception of Jesus and gives Jesus as Lord and Christ (see my *Studies in Mark's Gospel*). And Q (the Logia), the earliest document that we have for the life of Christ and almost contemporary with the time of Christ, gives the same essential features of Jesus as the Son of Man and Son of God (see my article *The Christ of the Logia* in the Contemporary Review for August, 1919). The sober results of modern critical research show the same figure in the very earliest documents that we possess (Q and Mark's Gospel). The Christ of Paul and of John walks as the Jesus of History in the Synoptic Gospels. We do know the earthly life of Jesus much more distinctly and the research of centuries has had a blessed outcome in the enrichment of our knowledge. Matthew and Luke are the first critics of the sources for the life of Jesus. We see how they made use of Mark, the Logia, and other documents. The Fourth Gospel comes last with knowledge of the Synoptic Gospels.

There are, to be sure, a few men who even deny that Jesus ever lived at all. That was the next step; but this absurdity has met complete refutation. The Christ of faith is the Christ of fact. There is no getting away from the fact of Christ, the chief fact of all the ages, the centre of all history, the hope of the ages. Jesus Christ we can still call him, our Lord and Saviour, and he never made such an appeal to men as he does today in the full blaze of modern historical research. Men are just beginning to take his words to heart in all the spheres of human life. The one hope of a new world of righteousness lies precisely in the program of Jesus Christ for the life of the individual in his private affairs, in his family relations, in his business and social dealings, in his political ideals and conduct. And nations must also follow the leadership of Jesus the supreme Teacher of the race.

The purpose of a harmony is not to teach theology, but to make available for men of any faith the facts in the Gospels concerning Jesus of Nazareth. Each interprets these facts and teachings as he sees the light. We can all acknowledge our debt to modern scholarship for the tremendous contributions made to a richer understanding of the environment into which Jesus came and to a juster appreciation of the real significance of his person and his message. The Gospels are still the most fascinating books in the world for sheer simplicity and beauty. One can first trace the picture of Jesus in the Logia, then in Mark, in Matthew, in Luke, in John. To these he can add the pictures of Christ in the Acts, the Epistles, the Apocalypse.

5. *The Two Genealogies of Christ*

Sceptics of all ages, from Porphyry and Celsus to Strauss, have urged the impossibility of reconciling the difficulties in the two accounts of the descent of Jesus. Even Alford says it is impossible to reconcile them. But certainly several possible explanations have been suggested. The chief difficulties will be discussed.

1. In Matthew's list several discrepancies are pointed out.

(a) It is objected that Matthew is mistaken in making three sets of fourteen each. There are only forty-one names, and this would leave one set with only thirteen. But does Matthew say he has mentioned forty-two names? He does say (1:17) that there are three sets of fourteen and divides them for us himself: "So all the generations from Abraham unto David are fourteen generations; and from David unto the carrying away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen generations." The points of division are David and the captivity; in the one case a man, in the other an event. He counts David in each of the first two sets, although Jechoniah is counted only once. David was the connecting link between the patriarchal line and the royal line. But he does not say "from David to Jechoniah," but "from

David to the carrying away unto Babylon," and Josiah is the last name he counts before that event. And so the first name after this same event is Jechoniah. Thus Matthew deliberately counts David in two places to give symmetry to the division, which made an easy help to the memory.

(b) The omissions in Matthew's list have occasioned some trouble. These omissions are after Joram, the names of Ahaziah, Joash, Amaziah, and after Josiah, these of Jehoiakim and Eliakim (2 Kings 8:24; 1 Chron. 3:11; 2 Chron. 22:1, 11; 24:27; 2 Kings 23:34; 24:6). But such omissions were very common in the Old Testament genealogies. See 2 Chron. 22:9. Here "son of Jehoshaphat" means "grandson of Jehoshaphat." So in [Matt. 1:1](#) Jesus is called the son of David, the son of Abraham. A direct line of descent is all that it is designed to express. This is all that the term "begat" necessarily means here. It is a real descent. Whatever omissions were made for various reasons, would not invalidate the line. The fact that Ahaziah, Joash, and Amaziah were the sons of Ahab and Jezebel would be sufficient ground for omitting them.

(c) Matthew mentions four women in his list, which is contrary to Jewish custom, viz. Tamar, Rahab, Ruth, and the wife of Uriah. But neither one is counted in the lists of fourteen, and each one has something remarkable in her case (Broadus, Comm. on Matt. *in loco*). Three were guilty of gross sin, and one, Ruth, was of Gentile origin and deserved mention for that reason. This circumstance would seem to indicate that Matthew did not simply copy the genealogical history of Joseph. He did this, omitting what suited his purpose and adding likewise remarks of his own. His record is thus reliable and yet made a part of his own story.

2. A comparison of the lists of Matthew and Luke.

If no list had been given by Luke, no further explanations would be necessary. But Luke not only gives a list, but one radically different from Matthew's, and in inverse order. Matthew begins with Abraham and comes to Jesus; Luke begins with Jesus and concludes with Adam [the son of God]. Several explanations are offered to remove the apparent contradiction.

(a) As early as Julius Africanus it was suggested that the two lines had united in accordance with the law of Levirate marriage. By this theory, Heli and Jacob being stepbrothers, Jacob married Heli's widow and was the real father of Joseph. Thus both genealogies would be the descent of Joseph, one the real, the other the legal. This theory is ably advocated by McClellan, pp. 416 ff., and Waddy, p. xvii. It is argued that Jechoniah's children were born in captivity and so, being slaves, lost both his royal dignity and his legal status. Stress is laid upon the word "begat" to show that Matthew's descent must be the natural pedigree of Joseph, and upon the use of the expression "son (as was supposed) of Joseph." Hence both Joseph's real and legal standing are shown, for by Luke's account he had an undisputed legal title to descend from David. This is certainly possible, although it rests on the hypothesis of the Levirate marriage.

(b) Lord Arthur Hervey, in his volume on the Genealogies of Our Lord, and in Smith's Dictionary, argues that Matthew gives Joseph's legal descent as successor to the throne of David. According to this theory Solomon's line failed in Jechoniah (Jer. 22:30) and Shealtiel of Matthew's line took his place. Luke's account, on the other hand, gives Joseph's real parentage. Matthew's Matthan and Luke's Mattathias are identified as one, and the law of Levirate marriage comes into service with Jacob and Heli. This explanation has received favor with such writers as Mill, Alford, Wordsworth, Ellicott, Westcott, Fairbairn. McNeile (on Matthew) considers this the "only possible" view. The chief objection seems to be the most natural meaning of "begat," implying direct descent, and the necessity for two suppositions, one about Shealtiel and another about Jacob and Heli. It is even fairly probable that the Shealtiel and Zerubbabel of Matthew and Luke are different persons.

(c) The third and most plausible solution yet suggested makes Matthew give the real descent of Joseph, and Luke the real descent of Mary. Several arguments of more or less weight can be adduced for this hypothesis.

(1) The most natural meaning of "begat" in Matthew is preserved. Jesus goes through David's royal line and so fulfils prophecy. It is not elsewhere stated that Mary was of Davidic descent, although presumptive evidence exists in the language of the angel ([Luke 1:32](#)) and the enrollment of Mary ([Luke 2:5](#)). So Robinson (Revised edition).

(2) The use of Joseph without the article, while it is used with every other name in the list. "The absence of the article puts the name outside of the genealogical series properly so-called."—Godet. This would seem to indicate that Joseph belonged to the parenthesis, "as was supposed." It would read thus, "being son (as was supposed of Joseph) of Heli." Luke had already clearly stated the manner of Christ's birth, so that no one would think he was the son of Joseph. Jesus would thus be Heli's grandson, an allowable meaning of "son." See Andrews' (new edition) *Life of Our Lord*, p. 63.

(3) It would seem proper that Matthew should give the *legal* descent of Jesus, since he wrote chiefly for Jews. This, of course, could only be through Joseph.

(4) And it would seem equally fitting that Luke should give the *real* genealogy of Jesus, since he was writing for all. And this could come only through Mary. If it is objected that a woman's genealogy is never given, it may be replied that women are mentioned for special reasons in Matthew's list, though not counted, and that Mary's name is not mentioned in this list. The

genealogy goes back to her father either by skipping her as suggested above and making son mean the grandson of Heli, or by allowing Joseph to stand in her place in the list, as he would have to do anyhow. On the whole, then, this theory seems the most plausible and pleasing. So practically Luther, Bengel, Olshausen, Lightfoot, Wieseler, Robinson, Alexander, Godet, Weiss, Andrews (new edition, p. 65), Broadus, and many recent writers.

But Bacon (*Genealogy of Jesus Christ*, Hastings D. B. and Am. J. of Theol. Jan., 1911) says that nearly all writers of authority abandon any effort to reconcile the two pedigrees of Jesus save as the effort of Christians to give "His Davidic sonship rather than His actual descent." See Machen's survey of negative criticism, on the subject in *Princeton Theol. Review* (Jan., 1906). Barnard (Hastings D. C. G.) admits two independent accounts, but sees no solution, but Sweet (*Int. St. Bible Encycl.*) accepts the view that Matthew gives the real genealogy of Joseph and Luke that of Mary. Plummer (*Comm. on Luke*) thinks it incredible that Mary's genealogy should be given by Luke.

6. *The Probable Time of the Saviour's Birth*

Every one now understands that the accepted date of our Lord's birth is wrong by several years. The estimates of the true date vary all the way from one to seven years B.C. There are various data that fix the year with more or less certainty, but none of them with absolute precision. They do, however, agree in marking pretty clearly a narrow limit for this notable occurrence, B.C. 6 or 5.

1. The death of Herod the Great is relied on with most certainty to fix the year of Christ's birth. The rule of Archelaus and Antipas demands B.C. 4. Josephus mentions an eclipse of the moon which occurred shortly before he died. *Ant. XVII, 6, 4*. This eclipse is the only one alluded to by Josephus, and fixes with absolute certainty the time after which the birth of Jesus could not have occurred, since, according to [Matt. 2:1-6](#), Jesus was born while Herod was still living. The question to be determined would be the year of this eclipse. Astronomical calculations name an eclipse of the moon March 12 and 13, in the year of Rome 750, and no eclipse occurred the following year that was visible in Palestine. Josephus (*Ant. XVII, 8, 1*), says that Herod died thirty-seven years after he was declared king by the Romans. In 714 he was proclaimed king, and this would bring his death counting from Nisan to Nisan, as Josephus usually does, "in the year from 1st Nisan 750 to 1st Nisan 751, according to Jewish computation, at the age of seventy" (Andrews). Herod died shortly before the Passover of 750, then, according to the eclipse and the length of his reign. Caspari contends for January 24, 753, as the date of Herod's death, because there was a total eclipse of the moon January 10. So he puts his death fourteen days later. Mr. Page (*New Light from Old Eclipses*) argues for the eclipse that occurred July 17, 752, as the one preceding Herod's death. He thinks that this makes unnecessary the subtraction of two years from the reign of Tiberius on the theory that Tiberius was contemporary ruler with Augustus for two years. But he finds difficulty in lengthening Herod's reign so long, and his theory has gained no great acceptance as yet. Our present era makes the birth of Christ in the year of Rome 754, and is due to the Abbot Dionysius Exiguus in the Sixth Century. Hence it is clear that if Herod died in the early spring of 750, Jesus must have been born *at least* four years before 754, the common era, and likely in the year 749.

2. It has been inferred by some that Jesus was at least two or three years old when Herod slaughtered the infants in Bethlehem, [Matt. 2:16](#). Thus the year would be put two years further back to the end of 747 or beginning of 748. But this is not demanded by the "two years" of Matthew, for Herod would naturally extend the limit so as to be sure to include the child in the number slain, and a child just entering the second year would be called "two years" old by Jewish custom. No more definite note of time comes from this circumstance, save that the massacre probably took place some months before Herod's death, which fact would bring the Saviour's birth back some time into the year 749.

3. The appearance of the "star in the east" ([Matt. 2:2](#)). This, of course, was before Herod's death, and would agree in time with the slaughter of the children, if the star be looked upon as a supernatural phenomenon, and not the wise men's interpretation of a natural conjunction of planets. Kepler first suggested that, as there was a conjunction of Jupiter and Saturn in 747, to which Mars was added in 748, this conjunction might have been the bright star that led on the wise men. See Wieseler, *Synopsis*, p. 57. Kepler had also suggested that a periodical star or a comet might have joined the constellation. The Chinese records preserve the account of the appearance of a comet in the spring of 749. Either of these theories is fascinating in itself, especially to those minds that prefer a natural explanation of anything that looks miraculous. Both phenomena are possible in themselves, but they hardly meet the requirements of the record in Matthew. (1) The word used is *aster*, star, and not *astron*, a group of stars. (2) Rev. C. Pritchard, whose calculations have been verified at Greenwich (Smith's Dic.), has shown that those "planets could never have appeared as one star, for they never approached each other within double the apparent diameter of the moon." So Ideler's hypothesis that the wise men all had weak eyes seems rather feeble. (3) The year 747 would conflict slightly with other evidence for Christ's birth that favors 749, although Wieseler, p. 53, note 4, contends that the star first appeared to the wise men two years before their visit, and a second time on their visit to Bethlehem. (4) Besides, the star is said to have stood over "where the young child was," v. 9. If it were a natural star it would have kept going as they went, and would not have stopped till they

stopped. Even then it would appear as far away as ever from Bethlehem. It seems best, therefore, to admit the existence of a miracle here, and hence gain nothing from the visit of the Magi to establish the date of the Saviour's birth, save that it was not long before the slaughter of the infants, and would at least agree with the date 749. See Broadus, Comm. *in loco*.

4. The language of the heavenly host in [Luke 2:14](#) is urged by some as fixing the birth at a time when there was universal peace throughout the world. The closing of the temple of Janus in the time of Augustus is also adduced, but it is not certainly known when it was closed apart from 725 and 729. It was intended to be closed at the end of 744, but was delayed on account of trouble among the Daci and Dalmatæ. See Greswell i. 469. Nothing specific can be obtained from this fact, save that there was a time of comparative quiet in the Roman world from 746 to 752. There was a hush in the clangor of war when Jesus was born.

5. The entrance of John the Baptist upon his ministry gives us another note of time. See [Luke 3:1](#) f. John emerged from the wilderness seclusion in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius. Augustus died August 29, 767. Adding fifteen years to this, the fifteenth year of Tiberius would begin August 29, 781. John was of a priestly family and so could naturally enter upon his work when thirty years of age. Thirty years subtracted from this gives 751, as the date of John's birth. But that is too late by two years to agree with the other date. Here, however, the Roman histories come to our help. Tacitus, Ann. 1, 3: "Tiberius is adopted by Augustus as his son, and *colleague in empire*." Vell. Pat. 2, 121; "At the request of Augustus, Tiberius was invested with equal authority in all the provinces." So Suetonius Aug. 97 and Tib. 21. It is clear, then, that Tiberius reigned jointly with Augustus about two years before he assumed full control of the empire at the death of Augustus. Luke could have used either date, but Tiberius' power was already equal to that of Augustus in the provinces two years before his death. Luke would naturally use the provincial point of view. Taking off the two years from the joint reign of Augustus, we again come to the year 749, as John was born six months before Jesus. So if John was born in the early part of the spring, Jesus would have been born in the summer or fall of 749.

6. The age of Jesus at his entrance upon his ministry, [Luke 3:23](#). "And Jesus himself, when he began to teach, was about thirty years of age." So most modern scholars, taking the language in the obvious sense. Origen refers it to the beginning of a new life, by the second birth of baptism, after his spiritualizing fashion. The Authorized Version has it: "And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age," applying the "beginning" to the period of thirty years. McClellan argues that it means "about thirty years, beginning"; that is, a little the rise of thirty years. The Revised Version seems to be preferable and the only doubt would be as to what is included in the phrase "about thirty years." It has been variously argued that Jesus was from one to three years younger or older than thirty. It seems more reasonable to give the words the meaning that he was just about thirty, a few months under or over. Apparently this fact explains the idiom. The argument that Jesus had to be exactly thirty years old because the priest had to be so, when he entered upon his work, has no great force. For Jesus was not a priest save in a spiritual sense. John had been preaching no great while when Jesus was baptized by him and so entered upon his public ministry. If John began his ministry when he was thirty years old in the fifteenth year of Tiberius, then Jesus's ministry would begin about six months later. His birth would then come in the latter part of 749, unless John was born in the latter part of 748, when it would be earlier in the year.

7. The building of the temple of Herod gives a further clue to the date of Christ's birth. In [John 2:20](#), the Jews say, "Forty and six years was this temple in building." Josephus tells us in one place that Herod began rebuilding the temple in the fifteenth year of his reign, War. I, 21, 1, and in another that he did so in the eighteenth year of his reign, Ant. XV, 11, 1. In the account of Herod's death, Ant. XVII, 8, 1, he used two dates for his reign, according as he counted from his declaration as king by the Romans 714, or the death of Antigonus 717. Eighteen and fifteen would both be correct, according as he reckoned from the one date or the other. Eighteen added to forty-six and both to 714 would make 778. It was at the first Passover in his ministry that this expression is used. It has been probably six months since his baptism. If thirty and a half years be taken from 778, his birth would be thrown back to the year 747, unless the forty-six years be taken as completed, when it would be 748. So Robinson. But this does not quite agree with the other notes of time we have. Many modern harmonists count the eighteen years from 717, and so bring the whole number, adding forty-six, down to 780, or, if the years are complete, 781. Thirty and a half from this would give the autumn of 749 or 750. This is done because Josephus usually reckons Herod's reign from the death of Antigonus, 717. On the whole it seems clear that Josephus is wrong in the War. It is common enough to find Josephus in one passage contradicting what he has said elsewhere. The temple was begun the year that the Emperor came to Syria, as is plain from Josephus. According to Dio Cassius, LIV, 7, this visit was made in B.C. 20 or 19. Correcting Josephus by himself and by Dio Cassius we thus again get B.C. 5 as the probable year of the birth of Christ. See Schuerer, *History of the Jewish People in the Time of Jesus Christ*, Div. I., Vol. I., p. 410.

8. The census of Augustus Cæsar mentioned in [Luke 2:1](#) f., furnishes the last note of time for this event. This subject is involved in a great many difficulties, and for a full discussion, the reader is referred to Ramsay's *Was Christ Born at Bethlehem*, and his *Bearing of Recent Discovery on the Trustworthiness of the New Testament* (Chap. XX) and to my *Luke the Historian in the Light of Research*. Every statement made by Luke in [2:1-7](#) was once challenged. Every one is now shown to be correct.

(1) It used to be said that no census was ever taken by Augustus, but heathen writers mention three, in 726, 746, 767. One of these, 746, may be the one here mentioned, which was delayed for various reasons, or which was executed slowly in the distant provinces. But it is not necessary that the phrase "all the world" should be pressed to its literal meaning, though this is more natural. Nor does the argument from silence prove that no other general census was taken by Augustus. But Ramsay has triumphantly vindicated Luke and the general census under Augustus by proof from the papyri that Augustus inaugurated a periodical census every fourteen years from B.C. 8 on. The second occurred A.D. 6 (Acts 5:37). See Ramsay's *Was Christ Born at Bethlehem*, and *Bearing of Recent Discovery on Trustworthiness of the New Testament* (Chap. XX) and my *Luke the Historian* (Chap. XX). We have only to think that there was delay in the carrying out of the census in Palestine to bring this date down to B.C. 6 (or even 5).

(2) It is not a "taxing," but an "enrollment" (Rev. Ver.) that was taken. There was a taxing later (Acts 5:37). And if it were done while Herod was king, Augustus could not have taxed Judea without Herod's consent. But Herod was not now in good form with Augustus.

(3) This helps to explain another objection that the enrollment would not have included Judea anyhow, because it was not yet a province, but a kingdom. But it is not likely that Herod would have displeased Augustus by refusing such information if it was desired. Tacitus asserts that the *regna*, the dependent kingdoms, were included in the census taken by Augustus.

(4) Hence, also, it is natural that the enrollment should have taken place according to the Jewish and not according to the usual Roman method, because Herod would wish it to be in accordance with the customs of his kingdom. So every one went to his own city. We now know from numerous papyri that in Egypt the family went to the home city. The Jews were used to enrollment by tribes and that was allowed. See Deissmann's *Light from the Ancient East*, p. 268, and Ramsay's *Was Christ Born at Bethlehem*, p. 108.

(5) We now have to meet the objection that Quirinius was not governor till ten years later, A.D. 6, when a taxing did occur. (See Acts 5:37.)

It is now possible to give a real solution of this problem. Luke is now shown to be wholly correct in his statement that Quirinius was twice governor, and that the first census took place during the first period. A series of inscriptions in Asia Minor show that Quirinius was governor of Syria B.C. 10-7 and so twice governor of Syria (second time A.D. 6; Josephus, Ant. XVIII, 1:1). See Ramsay, *Bearing of Recent Discovery*, pp. 273-300, and my *Luke the Historian*, pp. 127-9. Tertullian (*adv. marc.* iv, 19) says that Sentius Saturninus was governor of Syria B.C. 9-6. But we now know that Varus was controlling the internal affairs of Syria while Quirinius was leader of the army. Luke is therefore quite accurate in his statement about Quirinius being twice governor of Syria. The *Lapis Tiburtinus* has *iterum Syriam* about Quirinius. Ramsay has cleared up this famous historical puzzle and has completely vindicated Luke.

Few subjects have excited as much interest, even needless curiosity, as the date of the birth of the Saviour. But it is noticeable that by the masses of Christians more interest is taken in the day of Christ's birth than in the year. The Christmas festivities and the natural desire to make that the birthday of Jesus cause this widespread interest in December 25. Not only is it impossible to determine with any degree of certainty the day of the month, but the time of the year also is equally uncertain. The chief thing that appears proved is that December 25 is not the time, since the shepherds would hardly be in the fields at night with the flocks, which were usually taken into the folds in November and kept in till March. The nights of December would scarcely allow watching in the mountain fields even as far south as Bethlehem. And besides, the long journey from Nazareth to Bethlehem would hardly be made by Joseph and Mary in winter, the rainy season. McClellan argues for December 25, but his arguments are not convincing. The ancients had various days for Christ's birth: May 20 (Clement of Alexandria), April 20, December 25, January 5. Tertullian and others even say that the day of his birth (December 25) was kept in the register at Rome. But chronologists attach little weight to this testimony, since the same tradition puts the birth of John, June 24; the annunciation of Mary, March 25, and Elizabeth's conception, September 25—the four cardinal points of the year. If one might hazard an opinion, it would be that the birth of Jesus occurred in the summer or early in the fall of 749 or of 748, that is B.C. 6 or 5. Turner (*Chronology*, Hastings D. B.) reaches B.C. 6 as the probable year of the birth of Jesus though he did not have the new light on the census and on Quirinius which confirms it. Hitchcock (*Hastings D. C. G.*) saw the bearing of the periodical census that called for B.C. 7-5, but did not yet know the discovery about Quirinius. Armstrong (*Chronology New Testament*, Int. St. Bible Encycl.) is less certain about the precise year.

7. *The Feast of John 5:1, and the Duration of Our Lord's Ministry*

It seems almost impossible to decide with certainty what feast is alluded to in [John 5:1](#). One can only speak with moderation where everything is so doubtful. Various feasts have been suggested as solving the problem.

1. The Feast of Dedication has been proposed by Kepler and Petavius. But this view has met with no great amount of favor, for there is too short an interval between the first Passover and December, when it occurred. It might be a later Feast of Dedication, but this feast was not one of

the great feasts and would hardly have drawn Jesus all the way from Galilee to attend it. He did attend this feast once ([John 10:22](#)), but he was already in Judea at this time, having come up to attend the Feast of Tabernacles ([John 7:2, 14](#)). So Robinson, Clark, etc. So this feast seems to be ruled out of the question.

2. The Feast of Tabernacles is advocated by Ebrard, Ewald, Patritius. It is very unlikely that the Feast of Tabernacles after the first Passover could be meant, as the Saviour did not return to Galilee for some time afterwards. He could hardly have come back so soon to Jerusalem. But the Feast of Tabernacles after the Passover of [John 6:4](#) is mentioned later, [John 7:2](#) f., which Jesus attended, it seems, because he was hindered from going up to the previous Passover by the murderous designs of the Jews. It is possible that the feast of [John 5:1](#) may have been the Feast of Tabernacles after a Passover not mentioned, and so would come after the second Passover of his public ministry. But we do not know that Jesus attended any other Feast of Tabernacles save the one in [John 7:2](#), which he may have done because he missed the preceding Passover.

3. The Feast of Purim, first suggested by Kepler, has had great favor with modern harmonists, but apparently more on sentimental than on scholarly grounds. Meyer says, "Without doubt it was Purim." But it is by no means so certain as Meyer would have us believe. (a) Meyer relies on [John 4:35](#) and [6:4](#) to show that this was the Feast of Purim just before [John 6:4](#). But the expression, "Say not ye, There are yet four months and then cometh the harvest?" may be, and probably is a proverbial saying indicating the usual length of time between sowing and reaping, which, as a matter of fact, was about four months. Hence nothing can be determined by this note of time. And, besides, the four months could precede the Passover just as well as Purim, because the sowing lasted a month or so. (b) The Feast of Purim occurred a month before the Passover. Is it at all likely that two circuits of all Galilee were made in the meantime, besides much work of other kinds? See [Luke 8:1](#) and [Matt. 9:35-38](#). The three general circuits throughout Galilee, besides the mission of the twelve and a large part of their training, the general statements about the Master's work of preaching and healing, require an expansion rather than a contraction of the time for this period of his ministry. It seems then quite unreasonable, when once the mind takes in this enlarged conception of the missionary work of Jesus, as recorded by the Synoptic Gospels, to limit it to the amount of work mentioned by John, since he omits much of the early ministry, because, it would seem, the others are so full just here. (c) The Feast of Purim, moreover, was observed at home in the synagogues, and not by going to Jerusalem. See Esther 9:22 and Jos. Ant. xi. 6, 13. But "the multitude" ([John 5:13](#)) seems to imply (Robinson) a concourse of strangers at one of the great festivals. (d) It seems hardly probable, besides, that Jesus would go to any feast just a month before the Passover and come back to Galilee and not go to the Passover itself ([John 6:4](#)). Least of all would he do this in the case of Purim. (e) The man who was healed at this feast was healed on the Sabbath ([John 5:9](#)), and this occasioned the outburst among the people. But the Feast of Purim was never celebrated on the Sabbath, and when it came on a Sabbath it was postponed. See Reland, Antiq. Sacr. 4, 9.

4. Pentecost is held to be the feast here alluded to by many early and some later writers, such as Chrysostom, Cyril of Alexandria, Erasmus, Calvin, Bengel, etc. Norris makes it the Pentecost after the first Passover, but to do this, has to crowd into this short interval Christ's first Judean ministry, the journey through Samaria together with the first part of his Galilean ministry. So this idea has little weight. McClellan argues that the allusions of Jesus in [John 5:17-47](#), "infallibly point to Pentecost," meaning the Pentecost after a second Passover that is not mentioned. He further contends that this best suits the chronological arrangement and the term "a feast of the Jews." This view is certainly possible and cannot be positively disproved, although it is not so "infallibly" clear as McClellan imagines.

5. The Passover has always met with many adherents, being the second Passover in the Saviour's ministry and making four in all ([John 2:13; 5:1; 6:4; 12:1](#)). An unnamed Passover may exist in the ministry even if not referred to here. The arguments in favor of this interpretation are the most satisfactory. We cannot consider them as absolutely conclusive, yet the Passover meets all sides of the case better than any of the other feasts. (a) The plucking of ears from standing grain by the disciples ([Luke 6:1](#)) would indicate a time after the Passover and before Pentecost. This incident appears to have happened after the feast mentioned in [John 5:1](#). (b) It is fairly implied ([John 5:1](#)) that the feast took Jesus to Jerusalem. The Passover would more likely be the one to lead him there. It is expressly stated that he attended two Passovers and a special reason is given for his not attending a third. If there was another Passover in his ministry, this would naturally be the one. (c) This suits best the hostility manifested at this feast, which would have time to become acute (Broadus' Comm. on Matt.) and break out with increased vigor in Galilee and prevent his attending the next Passover ([John 6:4; 7:1](#)). (d) If this Passover be a second Passover of the ministry, sufficient time is afforded for the great Galilean ministry without artificial crowding. His ministry would be long enough to allow the great work recorded as done by him. Only two serious objections can be urged to this idea. (1) It is objected that the article would be used with "feast," if the Passover were thus mentioned as *the* feast. But to this we can reply: (a) The article is sometimes omitted when the Passover is meant ([Matt. 27:15; Mark 15:6](#)). (b) The absence of the article proves nothing whatever one way or the other. No conclusion can be drawn for or against the idea of the Passover. (c) The article does occur in many manuscripts, including the Sinaitic, and is put in the margin of the Revised Version. So nothing can be gained against this theory here. (2) The chief objection is that Jesus would not have remained so long away from Jerusalem, a year and six months, from the Second Passover till the Feast of Tabernacles after the Third Passover. But (a) we do not know that he did not attend any other feast in that time, for

silence proves nothing; and (b) a good reason is given for his failure to attend the Third Passover, which may have applied to the others, if he did not go, viz., the desire of the Jews to kill him ([John 7:1](#)).

Hence it is natural that there should be a variety of opinions as to the length of the Saviour's ministry, varying all the way from one to four years, leaving out mere guesses based on five and more Passovers. McKnight argues that the ministry may have lasted five or more full years, since all the Passovers of Christ's ministry may not be mentioned.

(1) The *Bi-paschal* theory makes the time of the public life of Jesus one year, allowing only two Passovers to the Gospel of John. Browne in his *Ordo Saeculorum* advocates this view. But the words, "the Passover," in [John 6:4](#) must be omitted, and for this there is not enough documentary evidence. If this could be done, Westcott thinks Browne would make out a good case. But with the present text, his view cannot be entertained.

(2) The *Tri-paschal* theory finds only three Passovers in the life of Christ. Hence the public work of Jesus would be from two to two and a half years in length. This view is quite possible, as is shown in the Harmony. These writers usually make the feast of [John 5:1](#) Purim before the Passover of [John 6:4](#), or Pentecost after it.

(3) The *Quadri-paschal* theory contends for four Passovers and a ministry of from three to three and a half years. This theory follows from making [John 5:1](#) a Passover or Purim before or Pentecost or Tabernacles after an unnamed Passover. This seems to be the more probable length of the Saviour's public work on earth. How short a space was even this to compass such a marvellous work. The ministry of Jesus seems crowded beyond our comprehension. It would be certain that the Saviour's public life lasted about three years and a half, if it was admitted that [John 5:1](#) referred to a Passover. Various writers seek to find an allusion to the three years of the Saviour's ministry in the Parable of the Barren Fig Tree ([Luke 13:6](#)), but this application of the parable is by no means certain, since three might naturally be used as a round number. But there can very well have been a passover not mentioned. All we can say is that we know that the ministry of Jesus was two and a half years in length with the probability of three and a half.

8. The Four Lists of the Twelve Apostles

It is interesting to compare the four lists of Jesus' chosen apostles as given by Matthew, Mark, Luke, and Acts.

Mark 3:16 f.	Matthew 10:2 f.	Luke 6:14 f.	Acts 1:13 f.
1. Simon Peter	Simon Peter	Simon Peter	Simon Peter
2. James	Andrew	Andrew	James
3. John	James	James	John
4. Andrew	John	John	Andrew
5. Philip	Philip	Philip	Philip
6. Bartholomew	Bartholomew	Bartholomew	Thomas
7. Matthew	Thomas	Matthew	Bartholomew
8. Thomas	Matthew	Thomas	Matthew
9. James the son of Alpheus	James the son of Alpheus	James the son of Alpheus	James the son of Alpheus
10. Thaddeus	Thaddeus	Simon the Zealot	Simon the Zealot
11. Simon the Cananæan	Simon the Cananæan	Judas the brother of James	Judas the brother of James
12. Judas Iscariot	Judas Iscariot	Judas Iscariot	

Let us examine the names here given.

(1) The lists are given some time after the selection was made, and hence represent a later grouping according to later developments in this inner circle. The primacy of Peter in these lists does not mean necessarily that he was the acknowledged leader at first. See discussion under (4) below. The point to note here is that we are not to think of Peter as the formal leader of the Twelve before the death of Christ. Jesus was himself that leader.

(2) One mark of an apostle was that he should have been with the Lord from the baptism of John until the day that he was received up (Acts 1:21 f.). Perhaps no great stress is to be laid on any exact time here, provided it began in the time of John. An apostle must know the Lord. Hence Paul received the vision of Christ. We have some knowledge of seven of these apostles before this time. If we infer from [John 1:41](#) that John followed the example of Andrew in finding his own brother, it was not long till James was a disciple as well as John, Andrew, and Peter. Philip and Nathanael are soon added to the list ([John 1:43](#) f.). Later Matthew hears the call of the Saviour, too ([Matt. 9:9](#); [Mark 2:13](#) f.). Of the other five we have no knowledge previous to this occasion. Jesus had "found" them by the same insight that led to his other selections. He chose Judas, though knowing that he was a devil.

(3) Observe the three groups of four, headed by Simon Peter, Philip, and James the son of Alphaeus, respectively. The great variety in the arrangement of the other names makes this uniformity significant. It seems clear that there are three recognized groups among the apostles (Bengel, Broadus, Clark). Each group has the same persons in every list, although there is such a variety in the order. In the first group Matthew and Luke have the same order, while Mark and Acts agree. In the second group Mark and Luke have a like order, while Matthew and Acts agree in putting Matthew at the end of this group. In the third group Matthew and Mark agree exactly, while Luke and Acts are identical save the dropping out of Judas Iscariot from the list in Acts because of his apostasy and death. No great importance can be attached to the precise order within the groups since Luke, in the Gospel and Acts, gives a different arrangement in the first and second groups.

(4) Observe also that Simon Peter not only stands at the head of his group, but at the head of all the groups, while Judas Iscariot is always at the bottom till he drops out entirely. Simon finally occupied a position of precedence of some sort. He was one of the inner circle of three that was so close to the Saviour's heart. Perhaps it was this, rather than any notion of primacy in authority or power. He was the spokesman because of his natural impetuosity. The question as to who should be greatest among the apostles illustrates the spirit of rivalry about precedence that existed among them. In the October, 1916, *Journal of Theol. Studies*, Dr. A. Wright argues that the critical text in [Mark 14:10](#) means "Judas Iscariot the first of the Twelve." The *Koiné* did sometimes use *heis* as an ordinal (see Moulton, *Prolegomena*, p. 96 and my *Grammar of the Greek New Testament*, pp. 671 f.). But the disputes among the Twelve show that they themselves considered Jesus only as leader till his death. See my article on "The Primacy of Judas Iscariot," the *Expositor* (London) for April, 1917, and one by Rendel Harris in the June, 1917, issue, and Wright's reply in the November, 1917, number.

(5) There are among the Twelve three pairs of brothers—Simon and Andrew, James and John, James the son of Alphaeus and Judas the brother of James. The first two pairs form the first group of the Twelve. It is, however, uncertain whether Judas is the brother or the son of James. The Greek is ambiguous, James's Judas. The Revised Version translated it "Judas son of James," but the Epistle of Jude begins "Judas a servant of Jesus Christ and brother of James." But the Jude of the Epistle and the Judas of the Twelve were hardly the same. Cf. Broadus, *Comm. on Matt.*, p. 216.

(6) There are some apparent discrepancies in the names in the various lists. Bartholomew occurs in every list, but is generally understood to be another name for Nathanael. Thaddeus is also called Judas the brother of James. Matthew and Mark give Thaddeus, and Luke in Gospel and Acts gives Judas the brother of James. It was a very common circumstance for one to have two names. Lebbeus, given in some MSS. in Matthew and Mark, is only a marginal explanation of Thaddeus. Both are terms of endearment. Matthew and Mark again call Simon the Cananæan, while Luke in the Gospel and Acts speaks of him as Simon the Zealot. But "Zealot" is simply a translation into Greek of the Aramaic "Cananæan." Jesus gave the other Simon the name "Cephas," which was translated into the Greek "Peter," meaning rock. He is called by all three names in the New Testament. Matthew likewise had another name, Levi, and Thomas was also called Didymus, which was a Greek translation of Thomas, meaning "twin."

9. The Sermon on the Mount

Do Matthew and Luke record the same discourse? Let us consider the several theories on this subject. My own view will be stated last.

1. Some hold that the two discourses are entirely distinct in time, place, circumstances and audience. The arguments for this theory usually presented are these.

(a) The time of delivery of the two sermons appears to be different. Matthew gives the sermon before his call ([Matt. 9:9](#)), while Luke precedes his sermon by the call of the twelve. Hence Matthew's discourse comes quite a while before Luke's in the early Galilean ministry. But it may be well replied that, inasmuch as Matthew's arrangement in ch. 8-13 is not chronological, but topical, it is entirely possible, even likely, that the same arrangement should prevail in ch. 5-7. It is perfectly natural that Matthew, writing for Jewish readers and about the Messianic reign, should give at the beginning of his account of that reign the formal principles that rule in this new state of affairs, as proclaimed by Jesus on a later occasion. In the early part of the ministry of Jesus, besides, the hearers would hardly be prepared for so advanced and radical ideas. Besides, Matthew makes no note of time whatever for this discourse.

(b) The place appears to be different. One is on a mountain ([Matt. 5:1](#)), while the other is on a plain ([Luke 6:17](#)). Hence the one is called by Clark the Sermon on the Mount, and the other the Sermon on the Plain. Miller (*Int. Stand. Bible Encyclopædia*) is uncertain whether Matthew and Luke report the same discourse and so discusses also Luke's "Sermon on the Plain." But his argument is not convincing. If it is necessary that "plain" here shall mean a place away from a mountain, down in a valley, this would seem to refer to a different place. McClellan seeks to show that Luke uses "and" in [6:17-20](#) by way of anticipation. He presents for effective grouping events that happened after Jesus came down out of the mountain before he gives the sermon delivered to the whole body of disciples up in the mountain. This is possible, but another interpretation is

much more likely. The plain here is really simply "a level place" (Rev. Ver.). So then the two accounts of Matthew and Luke will harmonize quite well. Jesus first went up into the mountain to pray ([Luke 6:12](#)) and selected and instructed the Twelve. Afterwards he came down to a level place on the mountain side whither the crowds had gathered, and stood there and wrought miracles ([Luke 6:17](#)). He then went up a little higher into the mountain where he could sit down and see and teach the multitudes ([Matt. 5:1](#)). Matthew gives the multitudes as the reason for his going up into the mountain. By this arrangement any discrepancy between "sat" in Matthew and "stood" in Luke disappears. Waddy has given an admirable arrangement of the material at this point in Note C, p. xix. Many writers affirm that the tradition mentioned by Jerome, making the Horns of Hattin the place where the Sermon on the Mount was delivered, suits this explanation exactly. There is a level place on it where the crowds could have assembled. It is not necessary to insist that this mountain is the Mount of Beatitudes, nor need we contend, as Robinson does, that the mountain must be very close to Capernaum.

(c) The audience is different. Matthew ([4:25](#)) states that his audience was composed of "great multitudes from Galilee and Decapolis and Jerusalem and Judea and from beyond Jordan," while Luke ([6:17](#)) says that there was "a great multitude of his disciples, and a great number of the people from all Judea and Jerusalem, and the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon." Matthew says ([5:1](#)) also that "his disciples came unto him." Hence both assemblages were composed of great multitudes from many regions besides many of his disciples, but in neither case is Jesus said to address himself to any save his disciples, his followers ([Matt. 5:1](#) and [Luke 6:20](#)). So in both accounts the Saviour seems to withdraw a little from the great outside crowd of curiosity seekers. But the multitudes also must have heard something of what he said, for they were astonished at his teaching ([Matt. 7:28](#)). Andrews well shows that the audience in Matthew were not mostly Jews (according to Kraft), and the audience in Luke mostly heathen. Matthew omits Tyre and Sidon, but he had already mentioned Syria ([4:24](#)), which includes Tyre and Sidon. Neither list may be complete. Hence nothing can be made out of Luke's omission of Galilee, Decapolis, and beyond Jordan. Great multitudes from the same general regions are alluded to as being present.

(d) The contents are radically different. It is objected by Alford, Greswell, etc., that Luke omits large portions of what Matthew has so that Luke has only thirty verses, while Matthew has one hundred and seven. But this leaves out of consideration the several large portions of the same matter which Luke has placed elsewhere, or which Jesus repeated on other occasions (cf. [Matt. 6:9-13](#) and [Luke 11:2-4](#); [Matt. 6:25-34](#) and [Luke 12:22-31](#)). Jesus often repeated his sayings on other occasions as all teachers do and ought to do. Neither evangelist gives a complete report of this wonderful discourse. So Matthew omits some things which Luke records (cf. [Matt. 5:12](#) with [Luke 6:23-6](#); [Matt. 7:12](#) with [Luke 6:31-40](#)). Nor need we be surprised that Luke, writing generally for all Christians, omits large portions towards the beginning of the sermon that were designed especially for Jews (see [Matt. 5:17-27](#); [6:1-18](#)). These Matthew would be sure to record. Luke adds four woes to the beatitudes. It is unnecessary to remark upon minor variations of language, since the gospels manifestly aim to give the sense of what the Saviour said and not the *verbatim* words. The variations in the Synoptic reports of the sayings of Jesus add much to the interest of the narratives. Moreover, to offset these variations, which admit of explanation, it ought to be remembered that the two discourses begin alike and end alike, that they have a general similarity in the order of the different parts, and that they show a general likeness and often absolute identity of expression.

So these differences all melt away on careful comparison, and it is not proved that there are two distinct sermons.

2. Another theory holds that the two sermons are distinct, but spoken on the same day, and near together. So Augustine, who is followed by Lange. The further points of this theory are two. (a) The one (Matt.) was spoken before the choice of the Apostles, to the disciples alone, and while Jesus was sitting on the mountain. (b) The other (Luke) was spoken after the choice of the Apostles, to the multitudes, and standing upon the plain. It is not hard to see that these points do not solve the question. In [Matt. 7:28](#) we are told that the multitudes were astonished at his teaching and in [Luke 6:20](#) that "he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said." So this distinction vanishes. The question of the mountain and the plain has been already discussed, and another more probable explanation suggested. It is only a conjecture that the discourse of Matthew was before the appointment of the Twelve. This theory has had no great following.

3. Wieseler holds that Matthew has simply brought together detached sayings of Jesus on different occasions and does not mean to present the whole as one discourse; Luke's account being only one of the discourses used by Matthew. But this violates the evident notes of place and audience and surroundings by which Matthew gives local color and cast to the entire discourse. See [Matt. 5:1](#) and [8:1](#). The case of the grouping of the miracles in chapters 8 and 9 is not parallel, since there Matthew does not state that they occurred on one occasion. The fact that various portions of this discourse are repeated elsewhere by Matthew is immaterial, because this was a common habit of Jesus in his discourses. Votaw in his exhaustive and able discussion of the Sermon on the Mount in the extra volume in the Hastings D. B. admits the possibility of this hypothesis, but considers it far less probable than the historical reality of the Sermon as recorded by both Matthew and Luke. Moffatt (Encycl. Biblica) considers it "a composition rather than an actual address," while Bacon (Sermon on the Mount) admits only what is also in Luke. Adeney (Hastings D. C. G.) holds to the essential integrity of the address in Matthew.

4. Both Matthew and Luke give substantially similar accounts of the same discourse. In that case we have a good illustration of the use of the Logia in Matthew and Luke. Most of the arguments for this interpretation have been mentioned in rebuttal of the previously mentioned theories. (a) This is the most natural explanation in view of the large volume of similar matter in both, in the beginning, progress, and close of the discourse. It is always best to give the Scripture the most natural and manifest setting, when possible. (b) This theory is the most probable one, since it is hardly likely that Jesus would again make the same sermon to the same audience, and under the same circumstances. (c) There are no objections to this theory that do not admit of a probable explanation. See the discussion above. The omissions and additions in each case suit the specific purpose of the writer. The apparent contradictions, when studied carefully, blend into a harmonious whole. Hence we seem to be justified in maintaining the identity of the discourses recorded by Matthew and Luke. For a careful outline of this matchless discourse see Broadus on Matthew. Stalker, *The Ethics of Jesus*, has a very able exposition of the teaching.

10. The Combination of Luke and John

We now have to deal with the most perplexing question in harmonistic study, the proper disposal of the mass of material furnished by Luke in 9:51-18:14. McClellan discusses ten schemes, pushes them all aside, and then suggests another which is no more convincing and equally complicated. Nothing can be attempted here but a presentation of the chief points in this endless discussion. All the principal plans for arranging this part of Luke proceed on one or the other of the following ideas:

1. Some hold that this portion of Luke is neither orderly nor chronological. Hence many of the incidents, here recorded as apparently belonging to the last six months of the Saviour's ministry, in reality are to be placed earlier. They are put here as a sort of summing up of things not mentioned elsewhere. So Robinson and others. In favor of this theory it is urged that Luke here speaks of some things that Matthew and Mark put before the third Passover, such as the healing of a demoniac ([Luke 11:14-36](#)) and the blasphemy following. But it may be well replied.

(a) It is not at all clear that we have here the same events that are recorded in Matthew and Mark. Similar miracles were often wrought in the Master's work and similar sayings were frequently repeated on similar or different occasions. This was a common habit with him, as we have heretofore seen.

(b) This portion of Luke is his distinctive contribution to the ministry of Christ in addition to his account of the nativity. He has condensed his account of the withdrawals from Galilee, apparently to make room for the description of another part of Christ's work. Matthew and Mark almost confine themselves to the ministry in Galilee, while Luke thus devotes the bulk of his narrative to what seems to be a later ministry, after Jesus has left Galilee. It is hardly likely that this account should be a mere jumble of scattered details.

(c) Especially is this unlikely in view of Luke's express statement ([1:3](#)) that he was going to write an orderly narrative. In no real sense could this be true, if this large section is dislocated in time and order of events.

2. Others refer the entire narrative (Luke 9:51-18:14) to the last journey of the Saviour to Jerusalem to the Passover and see a triple reference to the same journey arguing for triplications in Luke. Others prefer to understand it as meaning the journey to the Feast of the Tabernacles or Dedication. Some would combine this idea with the unchronological plan noticed above. In favor of this journey being continuous and the last one to Jerusalem, the following arguments are adduced:

(a) The language of [Luke 9:51](#), "when the days were being completed that he should be received up," implies that the end was drawing near, and that he was setting his face towards Jerusalem to meet it. This is true without doubt, for Wieseler's interpretation of "received up" as meaning Christ's reception by man is entirely too forced. The expression points to the end of Christ's earthly career. But what does the vague expression, "the days were being completed," mean? Does it have to mean only a few weeks? May it not include as much as six months? For we know that Jesus had been instructing his disciples on this very subject expressly and pointedly, and at the Transfiguration he had spoken of his "decease." Henceforward this was the uppermost subject in his mind. So the interpretation is correct, but the inference is not necessary. This journey in [Luke 9:51](#) need not be either just before the Passover or the Dedication. It could be as early as Tabernacles and be thus described.

(b) It is insisted that this is Jesus' final departure from Galilee, the one described by Matthew and Mark. No place is allowed for a return to Galilee after the departure in [Luke 9:51](#). Robinson urges that [Luke 9:51](#) naturally means a final departure from Galilee. But it may simply mean that he left it as a sphere of activity, not that he never entered Galilee again. And then [Luke 17:11](#) expressly says that Jesus went "through the midst of Samaria and Galilee." This means more than going on the border between the two countries, as McClellan argues. He went through some portions of Samaria and Galilee. In order for McClellan to carry out his scheme he has to resort to the artificial device of referring part of [John 10:40](#) to the departure from Galilee, and the other half to the Perea ministry after a diversion of considerable length into Samaria and back into

Galilee. So the effort is not convincing to place all the material in this large section of Luke in one last journey to Jerusalem.

3. The combination of Luke's narrative with that of John. Wieseler was the first to point out a possible parallel between Luke and John. John gives us three journeys,—the Feast of Tabernacles ([John 7:2 ff.](#)), the journey to Bethany at the raising of Lazarus ([John 11:17 f.](#)), the final Passover ([John 12:1](#)). Luke likewise three times in this section speaks of Jesus going to Jerusalem, [9:51](#); [13:22](#); [17:11](#). Hence it would seem possible, even probable, that their journeys corresponded. If so, John 7:2-11:54 is to be taken as parallel to Luke 9:51-18:14. This plan is followed by various modern scholars.

According to John's chronology, Jesus was in Jerusalem at the Feast of Tabernacles ([7:2](#)), at the Feast of Dedication ([10:22](#)), and at the Passover ([12:1](#)). Just after the Feast of the Dedication we find him abiding beyond Jordan, where John had baptized ([John 10:40](#)). From this point he comes to Bethany near Jerusalem at the raising of Lazarus ([John 11:17](#)), whence he withdraws to a little town called Ephraim in the hills north of Jerusalem ([John 11:54](#)). Here he abides awhile with his disciples away from his enemies till he goes to the Passover. Such is John's outline of these last six months of the Saviour's life.

(a) But how is all this to be reconciled with the statement of Luke ([17:11](#)) that Jesus went through Samaria and Galilee? If Jesus went back to Galilee, John would have mentioned it, we are told. Not necessarily, not unless it fell in with his plan to do so. Hence no conflict need exist between Luke and John. Luke says he went through Galilee and John permits it by the break in his narrative at [11:54](#). Various points in the six months have been suggested as the point when the return to Galilee was made. The most natural point is from Ephraim, whither he had withdrawn ([John 11:54](#)). It was not far to go up through Samaria and join in Galilee ([Luke 17:11](#)) the pilgrims from his own country who were in the habit of going to the Passover through Perea, to avoid passing through Samaria. This supposition is not improbable, as Robinson and McClellan urge, but very natural; it makes Luke and John both agree, and allows [Luke 9:51](#) to mean that Jesus then left Galilee as a field of operations. Various other theories are suggested for this return to Galilee, but none of them appear as fitting as this one. It was just before the Passover, when such a journey from Galilee to Jerusalem would be made.

(b) One other point needs to be considered. The theory we hold makes the journey in [Luke 9:51](#) identical with the one in [John 7:2-10](#), viz., to Tabernacles. Many hold such identity to be impossible because of apparent contradictions in the narratives. Andrews makes three objections against this identity: (1) That the Lord refused to go with his brethren ([John 7:6](#)). But it was his brothers who were not favorable to him that he refused to go with. He simply wished to avoid publicity. His face was set ([Luke 9:51](#)) all the time, but he was not going with them. (2) That the manner of the going is unlike; the one in John is secret, while the one in Luke is public. But the secrecy in John may merely mean the avoidance of the caravan routes and so through Samaria (Luke). The messengers sent before were not to herald his coming to gather crowds simply, but to make ready for him. It was needed, since the Samaritans saw that his face was as if he were going to Jerusalem. (3) That he went rapidly according to John and slowly according to Luke. He does, according to John, appear in Jerusalem before the feast is over, but Luke does not make him move slowly. Nor is it necessary to connect the sending of the seventy ([Luke 10:1 ff.](#)) with this journey. It belongs rather to the interval between Tabernacles and Dedication. So the secret going of John and the going through Samaria of Luke agree. John explains, [7:10](#), that Jesus rejected the advice of his brothers. This theory is held irrespective of this being the final departure from Galilee. It is not necessary to fill out every detail in this programme and show where Jesus was between Tabernacles and Dedication. The main outlines remain clear and harmonious and are fairly satisfactory. This combination of Luke and John preserves the integrity of both narratives and fills up a large blank that would otherwise exist in these closing months of the Saviour's life. Upon the whole, therefore, this view seems decidedly preferable, though nothing like absolute certainty can be claimed in regard to the question.

We do not know what special source Luke had for 9:51-18:14. Some of it may have come from the Logia (Q). Hawkins (*Oxford Studies*, pp. 55 ff.) calls it "the Travel Document." Burton (*Some Principles of Literary Criticism and Their Application to the Synoptic Problem*) suggests "The Peræan Document" and thinks that Luke may have drafted it early out of oral material. But at any rate it is a great and characteristic portion of his Gospel and adds greatly to our knowledge of Christ.

11. Did Christ Eat the Passover?

To put this question in another form, it would be, On what day of the month was Jesus crucified? For the crucifixion occurred on the same Jewish day as the eating of the meal recorded by all four Evangelists. Nearly all agree that the crucifixion occurred on Friday and the meal was eaten the evening before, our Thursday, but the beginning of the Jewish day, counting from sunset to sunset. But what day of the month was it? The Passover feast began on the 15th Nisan, the lamb being slain in the afternoon of the 14th. But the day of the week would vary with the new moon. If Jesus ate the regular Passover supper, he was crucified on the 15th Nisan. If he ate an anticipatory meal a day in advance and was himself slain at the hour of killing the paschal lamb, he was crucified on the 14th Nisan. In that case he did not really eat the Passover supper at all.

So then we must seek to determine the truth about this matter, because express statements are made about it in the Gospels.

1. Some sentimental views of the question need to be disposed of first. A great controversy once raged in the early churches about the Passover.

(a) In the latter part of the second century some of the churches of Asia Minor, largely composed of Jewish Christians, kept up the Passover on the ground that Jesus had eaten it the night before his crucifixion. Polycarp, the disciple of John, expresses the persuasion that Jesus ate the Passover.

(b) But some of the churches were afraid of this example and its application to the discussion about the relation of the Mosaic laws to Christianity. So they took the position that Jesus did not eat the Passover himself, but as the Paschal Lamb, was crucified at the time the lamb was slain. He was our Passover. The Greek churches now hold this position, while the Latin churches hold that Jesus ate the Passover. But those arguments are purely subjective and do not affect the question of fact. Hence we waive this old-time controversy and come to the testimony of the Gospels themselves.

2. The testimony of the Synoptists, Mark, Matthew, and Luke. The evidence they give is abundant and explicit to the effect that Jesus ate the regular Paschal Supper on the evening after the 14th Nisan.

(a) Jesus predicted that his death would occur during the Feast of the Passover. See [Matthew 26:2](#), "Ye know that after two days the Passover cometh, and the Son of Man is delivered up to be crucified." See also [Mark 14:1](#) and [Luke 22:1](#), where the fact is alluded to. Passover is used in the general sense of the feast of unleavened bread, as Luke explains. The feast of unleavened bread followed the Passover meal, beginning the next morning and lasting a week. But the one term was used to include the other. The Passover was expanded to mean the entire feast that followed, and *vice versa*.

(b) It is true that the Jewish authorities decided not to put Jesus to death during the feast ([Matthew 26:5](#); [Mark 14:2](#)). But this decision was reached not because of any compunctions of conscience in the matter, but because they were afraid of a tumult among the people, owing to the great crowds, many of whom were friendly to Christ. But so soon as Judas offered his services, their fears vanished and they proceeded with their murderous designs ([Matthew 26:14](#); [Mark 14:11](#)). The rulers did expedite matters at the crucifixion that the bodies might not be exposed on the Sabbath. But they had often tried to slay Jesus on the Sabbath heretofore. Public executions did take place during the feasts (Deut. 17:12 f.).

(c) The Synoptists flatly say ([Matthew 26:17, 20](#); [Mark 14:12, 17](#); [Luke 22:7, 14](#)) that on the first day of unleavened bread Jesus sent Peter and John from Bethany into the city to make preparations for eating the Passover, and that on the evening of the same day he ate it with his disciples. Luke calls it "the hour." Now, the first day of unleavened bread was the 14th Nisan. There is no question about this. Josephus speaks of the feast lasting eight days. The lamb of the supper being slain on the afternoon of this day, it was regarded as the beginning of the feast. Besides, Mark and Luke end the whole matter by saying that on this day they sacrificed the Passover. Jesus himself calls it the Passover ([Luke 22:15](#)). It is useless to say that Jesus ate the Passover a day in advance. This could not be done, especially by one to whom the temple authorities were hostile. Equally useless is it to say that the Jews ate the Passover a day too late. If a mistake was made about the new moon, they would hardly keep the Passover on two different days, nor would Jesus be apt to make a point about the matter.

3. The testimony of John. If we had only the evidence of the Synoptists, no serious trouble would ever arise on this question. Strauss has strenuously urged that John is on this point in hopeless conflict with the other Evangelists, since he makes Jesus eat the Passover on the evening after the 13th Nisan (Wednesday), and not the evening after the 14th (Thursday). This idea has gained a foothold among many able modern writers who see a clear contradiction between the Synoptics and the Fourth Gospel. Some of these evidently do so because they hold that the Paschal controversy in Asia Minor arose from this supposed conflict of John with the Synoptists, and that this shows John's Gospel to have been in existence when that controversy began. It is not worth while to maintain that John in chapter 13 alludes to a different meal on a different occasion. The points of contact with the Synoptists are too sharp and clear, such as the sop given to Judas. But five passages in John are produced as being in direct opposition to the statements of the Synoptic Gospels. A careful examination of each of these five passages in the Fourth Gospel will show that John does not say that Jesus ate the Passover meal a day in advance of the regular time, but quite the contrary.

(a) [John 13:1](#) f., "Now before the feast of the Passover, Jesus knowing, etc." Here, it is alleged, a distinct statement is made that this supper was before the Passover, and consequently twenty-four hours before. But several things are taken for granted in this inference. One is that the phrase "feast of the Passover" is to be confined to this particular meal, and is not to include the entire festival of unleavened bread (*cf.* [Luke 22:1](#)). Often by a metonymy of speech the name of a part is given to the whole. Besides, it is not certain that verse 1 is to be connected with verse 2. The best exegetes agree that a complete idea may be presented therein, either a general statement that Jesus loved his own before the Passover and until the end, or that he came into

special consciousness of this love just before the Passover. And if the more natural interpretation be taken and the application of this love be made in verse 2, it is not necessary that the "before" be as much as twenty-four hours. Observe also the text adopted in the Revised Version in verse 2, not "supper being ended," but "during supper." With this reading agree the other references in 13:4, "riseth from supper," 13:12, "sat down again," 13:23, "there was at the table reclining in Jesus' bosom." So the natural meaning is that just before the meal began, Jesus purposed to show his love for his own by a practical illustration. So, after they had all reclined at the table according to custom, Jesus arose and passed around the tables, washing their feet; then he reclined again and proceeded with the meal. So nothing at all can be made out of this passage against the view that this was the regular Passover; but, on the other hand, the most natural meaning is that John is here describing what took place at this Passover meal. Else, why should he mention the Passover at all?

(b) [John 13:27](#), "That thou doest, do quickly." The objection is made that the disciples would not have thought that Jesus referred to the feast (13:29), if the Passover meal was already going on or was over. So, it is urged, this remark must have been made a day before the Passover was celebrated. But if that were the case, where would be the necessity for hurry, as there would be plenty of time on the morrow? The word "feast" here need not be confined to the paschal supper, but more naturally refers to the whole of the feast, of which the supper was a part. So this haste was needed to provide for the feast of unleavened bread which began on the next morning. No real force lies in the fact that this day was a holy day, being the first day of the Passover festival. The Mishna expressly allows the procuring, even on a Sabbath, what was needed for the Passover. If this could be done on a Sabbath, much more could it be done on a feast day which was not a Sabbath. Hence not only was it possible for the disciples to have misunderstood the remark of Jesus on the Passover evening, but it was far more natural that such misapprehensions should arise then than a day before. So this passage, like the preceding, when rightly understood, really confirms the Synoptists.

(c) [John 18:28](#), "They themselves entered not into the palace, that they might not be defiled, but might eat the Passover." At first sight this does look like a contradiction. For this was certainly after the feast of [John 13:2](#); and if they had not eaten the Passover meal, why here is a clear case of conflict of authorities. But it is by no means certain that the phrase "eat the Passover" means simply the paschal supper. This phrase occurs five times in the New Testament besides this, but all in Matthew, Mark, and Luke ([Matt. 26:17](#); [Mark 14:12, 14](#); [Luke 22:11, 15](#)). In all of these the reference is to the paschal supper. But the word "passover" is used in three senses in the New Testament, the paschal supper, the paschal lamb, or the paschal festival. The word is used eight times in John besides this instance, and in every case the Passover festival is meant. So we may fairly infer that the usage of John must determine his own meaning rather than that of the Synoptists. This becomes more probable when we remember that John wrote much later than they, after the destruction of Jerusalem, when these terms were not used so strictly. He always speaks of "the Jews" as separate from Christians. And this very expression is used in 2 Chronicles 30:22, "And they did eat the festival seven days." The Septuagint translates it, "And they fulfilled (kept) the festival of unleavened bread seven days." See Robinson. So it is entirely possible for the phrase, "eat the Passover," to mean in this instance also the celebration of the Passover festival. Some have urged that the Sanhedrin had not eaten the Passover at the regular hour because of the excitement of the trial. But this is hardly tenable. And, moreover, since this remark was made early in the morning, how could that affect the eating of the supper in the evening? For whatever impurities one had during the day passed away at evening. Hence this uncleanness must belong to the same day on which it was incurred. If the Passover festival had begun, this would be true, for they would wish to participate in the offerings of that day. So this passage likewise becomes an argument in favor of agreement with the Synoptists.

(d) [John 19:14](#), "Now it was the Preparation of the Passover." This is claimed to mean the day preceding the Passover festival. Hence Christ was crucified on the 14th Nisan, in opposition to the Synoptists. The afternoon before the Passover was used as a preparation, but it was not technically so called. This phrase "Preparation" was really the name of a day in the week, the day before the Sabbath, our Friday. We are not left to conjecture about this question. The Evangelists all use it in this sense alone. Matthew uses it for Friday ([27:62](#)), Mark expressly says that the Preparation was the day before the Sabbath ([15:42](#)), Luke says that it was the day of the Preparation and the Sabbath drew on ([23:54](#)), and John himself so uses the word in two other passages ([19:31, 42](#)), in both of which haste is exercised on the Preparation, because the Sabbath was at hand. The New Testament usage is conclusive, therefore, on this point. This, then, was the Friday of Passover week. And this agrees with the Synoptists. Besides, the term "Preparation" has long been the regular name for Friday in the Greek language, caused by the New Testament usage. It is so in the Modern Greek to-day. It was the Sabbath eve, just as the Germans have Sonnabend for Sunday eve, *i.e.*, Saturday afternoon. So this passage also becomes a positive argument for the agreement between John and the Synoptists.

(e) [John 19:31](#), "For the day of that Sabbath was a high day." From this passage it has been argued that at this Passover the first day of the Passover festival coincided with the weekly Sabbath. But that is an entirely gratuitous inference. This coincidence would, of course, be a "high day," but so would the first day of the feast, the last day, or the Sabbath of the feast. In [John 7:37](#) the last day is called "the great day of the feast." The Sabbath occurring during the festival would be a high day likewise. Robinson's arguments on this point are quite conclusive. Nothing can be made out of the expression against the position of the Synoptists.

McClellan discusses various other passages in John which show that the crucifixion occurred on Friday, and that this was the first day of the feast ([John 18:39, 40](#); [19:31, 42](#); [20:1, 19](#), etc.). We conclude then that a fair interpretation of the passages alleged not only removes all contradiction between John and the Synoptists, but rather decidedly favors the view that they have the same date for the Passover meal, and that Jesus ate the Passover at the regular hour and was crucified on Friday, 15th Nisan.

It is reassuring to note that David Smith (*The Days of His Flesh*, Appendix VIII) reaches the same conclusion as that just stated. He makes it out that Jesus ate the regular Passover meal and was crucified on Friday 15th of Nisan and that the passages in John really agree with the Synoptic account.

12. The Hour of the Crucifixion

In [John 19:14](#) it is stated that the time when Pilate sentenced Jesus to be crucified, or rather when he began the last trial in which he sentenced him, was about the sixth hour. We read, however, in [Mark 15:25](#) that it was the third hour when Christ was crucified. The Synoptists all unite in saying that the darkness began at the sixth hour. The Jewish way of counting the hours was to divide the night and day into twelve divisions each, beginning at sunrise and sunset. The hours would thus vary in length with the time of year. Just after the vernal equinox the third hour of Mark would be about 9 A.M., and the sixth hour of the Synoptists would be about noon. The ninth hour, when Jesus gave his piteous cry to God ([Mark 15:34](#)), would be about 3 P.M. But how can the sixth hour of John, the time when Jesus was sentenced by Pilate, be reconciled to this schedule? A real difficulty is here presented, but by no means an insuperable one, as Alford and Meyer hold. Let us discuss some of the more usual explanations. Andrews and McClellan give quite a variety of suggested solutions.

1. Some hold that "sixth" in John is a textual error for "third." This could easily happen, since the gamma and the digamma of the Greek are very similar. Eusebius said that the accurate copies had it "third" in John. But the textual evidence is overwhelmingly against it, and, besides, the difficulty would not be removed. John is evidently speaking of the time at the last trial and Mark of the time after Jesus has been led out to the crucifixion. So nothing is gained by this hypothesis. We should still be confronted with the same difficulty. The change to *third* in John was a mere stupid scribal correction.

2. Others would change the punctuation in [John 19:14](#) so as to make "of the Passover" belong to "sixth hour," beginning from midnight. But there is no evidence that the Passover began with midnight. So Hofmann. This is very forced and unnatural.

3. Views that hinge on the word "preparation." Some would hold that John simply says that about noon the preparation time of the Passover begins. But Preparation here means Friday, and noon is not the hour needed to harmonize with Mark. Equally arbitrary is it to count six hours backward from noon so as to reach six o'clock.

Augustine suggested that the six hours are to be counted from 3 A.M. This would make 9 A.M., and would concur with the hour of Mark. But this is wholly arbitrary and unsatisfactory, and would not relieve the trouble.

4. Equally arbitrary is the solution that makes Mark refer to the hour of the sentence and John to the crucifixion, just the reverse of the Scripture account. Augustine also proposed that Jesus was crucified at the third hour by the tongues of the Jews, and at the sixth by the hands of the soldiers.

5. Others hold that Mark and John both speak in general terms. Hence the crucifixion may have taken place between 9 and 12 in the morning. Mark looks in one direction and John in the other without aiming at definiteness. The Jews, it is true, were not as exact in the use of expressions of time as we are to-day, but this solution hardly meets the requirements of the case. Mark puts his *third* hour at the beginning of the crucifixion, and John his *sixth* hour at the beginning of the last trial. This reconciliation does not reconcile.

6. The most satisfactory solution of the difficulty is to be found in the idea that John here uses the Roman computation of time, from midnight to noon and noon to midnight, just as we do now. Hence the sixth hour would be our six o'clock in the morning. If this hour was the beginning of the last trial of Jesus, we then have enough, but not too much, time for the completion of the trial, the carrying away of Jesus outside the city walls, together with the procuring of the crosses, etc. All the events, moreover, narrated by the Evangelists, could have occurred between dawn ([John 18:27](#)) and six or seven.

For a long time it was doubted whether the Romans ever used this method of computing time for civil days. Farrar vehemently opposes this idea. But Plutarch, Pliny, Aulus Gellius, and Macrobius expressly say that the Roman civil day was reckoned from midnight to midnight. So the question of fact may be considered as settled. The only remaining question is whether John used this mode of reckoning. Of course, the Romans had also the natural day and the natural night just as we do now. In favor of the idea that John uses the Roman way of counting the hours in the civil day,

several things may be said.

(a) He wrote the Gospel late in the century, probably in Asia Minor, long after the destruction of Jerusalem, when the Jewish method would not likely be preserved. Roman ideas were prevalent in Asia Minor. John evidently is not writing for the Jews primarily, since he constantly speaks of "the Jews" as outsiders. John is writing to be understood by the people, and this is the way it would be understood in Asia Minor.

(b) All the passages in John, where the hour is mentioned, allow this computation. John [1:39](#) would be 10 A.M.; [4:6](#) f. would be 6 P.M., counting from noon also (as we do). This hour suits best the circumstances. In the evening the women would come to get water, Jesus would have time for his journey thither, and would be tired and hungry. In John [4:52](#) the hour would be 7 P.M. This hour likewise suits the circumstances better. John [11:9](#), Are there not twelve hours in the day? is not against this idea, since here obviously the natural day, as opposed to night, is meant. The Romans used both methods and so do we.

(c) Moreover, one passage in John ([20:19](#)), when compared with [Luke 24:29, 36](#), makes it necessary to understand that John used the Roman method in this instance. It was toward evening, and the day had declined, according to Luke, when Jesus and the disciples drew near to Emmaus. Here he ate supper and, "rising up that very hour," the disciples returned seven miles to Jerusalem and told these things to the eleven who were together. But while they were narrating these things Jesus appeared to them. Now John, in mentioning this very appearance of Jesus ([20:19](#)), says that it "was evening on *that day*, the first day of the week," *i.e.*, evening of the day when Mary Magdalene had seen the Lord. But with the Jews the evening began the day. Hence John, here at least, is *bound* to mean the Roman day. It was the evening of the same day in the morning of which Mary had seen Jesus. This appears conclusive. John did use the Roman method here, may have done so always, almost certainly did so in [19:14](#). Besides, as McClellan shows, the natural meaning of John's phrase is that it was the sixth hour of the Friday (Preparation) of the Passover. But we have just seen that John in [20:19](#) counts according to the Roman day. Hence the sixth hour of Friday would be six o'clock in the morning.

This is the only solution that really harmonizes John and Mark. The rest make the hours agree, but the hours bring together different events. This method harmonizes the whole narrative, and seems entirely probable, if we can assume that the Romans or Greeks employed hours in this sense, a point denied by Ramsay.

Sir W. M. Ramsay (*The Expositor* for March, 1893, and Extra Volume, Hastings D. B.) contends that Mark and John are at variance, but that it is of small moment, since the ancients had little notion about hours. He seeks to show that the martyrdom of Polycarp and Pronius, usually relied on to prove that in Asia Minor the hours were counted from midnight, took place in the afternoon, instead of the morning, the usual time. Hence the eighth and tenth hours respectively would be 2 P.M. and 4 P.M. Ramsay argues that, when hours were counted, they were always counted from sunrise. He holds that John is more accurate about hours than Mark and that hence Mark is in error. He agrees that John "stood on the Roman plane" in the use of time, but denies that the sixth hour can be our 6 A.M. But the evidence is too uncertain for such a dogmatic position.

13. *The Time of the Resurrection of Christ*

1. Mark, Luke, and John say that the resurrection had taken place early on the first day of the week, *i.e.* early Sunday morning. Mark ([16:9](#)) says that Jesus, "having risen early, on the first day of the week, appeared, etc." The position of "early" is ambiguous in the Greek and the passage is disputed. Mark ([16:2](#)) states that it was very early on the first day of the week, the sun having risen, when the women came to the sepulchre. Luke ([24:1](#)) says that the women came to the tomb at early dawn on the first day of the week. John ([20:1](#)) says that Mary Magdalene came to the tomb in the morning on the first day of the week. So then, there is no doubt that these three Evangelists mean to say that Jesus rose very early on Sunday morning, and that shortly after that event came the two Marys and some other women to anoint his body with spices.

Much objection is made to some of the details in the accounts of Mark and John especially as being inconsistent. John ([20:1](#)) says that Mary comes while it is yet dark, while Mark says ([16:2](#)) that the sun was risen. But Mark also says in the same verse that it was very early, which would agree with John's statement that it was yet dark. Hence Mark's other statement, that the sun was risen, must be interpreted in the light of his own words. Two solutions can be offered.

(a) We may suppose, as McClellan and others, that John's note of time refers to the starting from Bethany, while it was yet dark or very early (Mark). In a few minutes it would be early dawn (Luke), and by the time the women come to the tomb, the sun would be up. All this is entirely possible and looks even probable, for in the twilight of early dawn, the border line is very narrow between darkness and sunrise. A stiff morning walk would pass through all the stages. It all depends on where you take your stand in this fleeting interim. Mark covers both sides and so includes it all from the first glimmering light till the full light of day.

(b) Or the expression, "the sun was risen" (aorist participle), may simply be a general expression

applicable to the phenomena of sunrise. The first gleam of daylight comes from the rising sun, though not yet completely risen. Robinson gives several examples from the Septuagint, where the same phrase is used in the aorist tense in a general way for the dawning light of day (Judges 9:33; 2 Kings 3:22; Ps. 104:22). Either of these explanations is entirely possible and removes the difficulty.

2. But Matthew seems to put the resurrection on the evening after the Sabbath, our Saturday evening. He says (28:1), "But late on the Sabbath day, as it was dawning into the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to view the sepulchre." If this passage means that the visit was made at the end of the Sabbath day (evening) and after the resurrection of Jesus, then Matthew is in plain contradiction to the other Evangelists. Some have taken the position that Jesus rose at sunset on the Sabbath day, forgetting that Mark (16:9) says that he rose early in the morning. There are several ways of reconciling Matthew with the other gospels.

(a) Greswell, Alford and others would translate "late on the Sabbath day" by "late in the week." The Greek word is the same in this verse for Sabbath and week. In both cases, therefore, the translation could be the same. But little sense would result from this translation. "Late in the week" and "dawning into the first day of the week" hardly fit well. By this explanation the latter expression is used for the first part of Sunday and the visit occurred in this dawning part of the day.

(b) Others would translate "late on the Sabbath day" by "after the Sabbath day." Godet, Grimm and others contend that the Greek idiom could mean this, and the *Koiné* allows it (Robertson, *Grammar of the Greek New Testament*, pp. 645 f.). This rendering is possible, though the papyri have instances of "late on" for this preposition (*opse*), and it is so translated by several English translators. Thus the Greek idiom allows either "late on" or "after."

(c) Matthew does not clearly say that this visit was made after the resurrection of the Saviour although his words may mean that. Hence the words may have their natural meaning as sustained by the papyri. Late on the Sabbath day, about sundown say, the two Marys go to view the sepulchre (Matt. 28:1), having rested through the day (Luke 23:56). The women who had come with Jesus from Galilee had gone thither on Friday, after his burial, to see where he was laid and had prepared spices. If they went at nightfall at the close of the Sabbath (Matt. 28:1) "to see the sepulchre," they could have bought spices after sundown (Mark 16:1). Then (Mark 16:2) in the early morning, they rose and took the spices and went to anoint his body. It was then that they saw the angel (Matt. 28:5). Matthew does not say that in the visit of 28:1 the angel appeared to them. He speaks of the earthquake having come, and the resurrection, and then resumes. This view gains some support from the use of the same Greek word in Luke 23:54, "And it was the day of the Preparation (Friday) and the Sabbath drew on (was dawning)." Here the meaning seems to be that the Sabbath *dawned* at the close of the day. So Westcott, McClellan and others. However it may be about the visit of the women in Matt. 28:1, Matthew certainly does not mean to say that Jesus rose at sunset on the Sabbath. The whole course of his narrative in the rest of the chapter shows that it was the morning of Sunday when the angel appeared. While (Matt. 28:11) the women went to the disciples, the soldiers ran to the chief priests (Matt. 28:13) and said that the disciples came by *night* and stole him while they slept, clearly implying that it was now day. Hence Matthew does not teach that Jesus rose at sunset, but the reverse. Besides, Matthew expressly says that Jesus rose on the third day, which would not be true, if he rose on the Sabbath.

(d) Sabbath day may be used of the day followed by the night, according to a possible understanding of the language. The Jews originally counted from evening to evening, but this custom did not prevail universally. Jonah (1:17) and Matthew (12:40) speak of three days and three nights, following the day by the night. Meyer, Morison, Clark and others hold this view, and it is possible, but certainly not so satisfactory as the view given under (c). At any rate, it remains clear that Matthew agrees with the other Evangelists in putting the resurrection of Jesus Sunday morning. The chief point of difficulty is Matthew's visit of the women in 28:1, whether this was in the evening before simply "to view the sepulchre," or in the morning to anoint the body of the Saviour. The condensed account of Matthew leaves this question unsettled, and there we too shall have to leave it. And this last matter does not affect the question as to the time of the Lord's resurrection, but only the number of the visits made by the women.

14. *The Length of Our Lord's Stay in the Tomb*

Quite an effort is made in some quarters to show that Jesus remained in the tomb seventy-two hours, three full days and nights. The effort seems due to a desire to give full value to the expression "three days" and to vindicate scripture. But a minutely literal interpretation of this phrase makes "on the third day" flatly erroneous. A good deal of labor has been expended in the impossible attempt to make three and four equal to each other. There are three sets of expressions used about the matter, besides the express statements of the Gospels about the days of the crucifixion and resurrection. Let us examine these lines of evidence.

1. Luke settles the matter pointedly by mentioning all the time between the crucifixion and the resurrection (Luke 23:50-24:3). The burial took place Friday afternoon just before the Sabbath drew on (Luke 23:54). The women rested on the Sabbath (Saturday) (Luke 23:56), and went to

the sepulchre early Sunday morning, the first day of the week ([Luke 24:1](#)). There is no escaping this piece of chronology. This is all the time there was between the two events. Jesus then lay in the tomb from late in the afternoon of Friday till early Sunday morning. The other Gospels agree with this reckoning of the time, as we have already seen.

2. But how about the prediction of Jesus, repeatedly made, and once illustrated by the case of Jonah, that he would rise after three days? Are two nights and a day and two pieces of days three days? Let us see.

(a) The well-known custom of the Jews was to count a part of a day as a whole day of twenty-four hours. Hence a part of a day or night would be counted as a whole day, the term day obviously having two senses, as night and day, or day contrasted with night. So then the part of Friday would count as one day, Saturday another, and the part of Sunday the third day. This method of reckoning gives no trouble to a Jew or to modern men, for that matter. In free vernacular we speak the same way today.

(b) Besides, the phrase "on the third day" is obliged to mean that the resurrection took place on that day, for, if it occurred after the third day, it would be on the fourth day and not on the third. Now it so happens that this term "third day" is applied *seven* times to the resurrection of Christ ([Matt. 16:21](#); [Matt. 17:23](#); [Matt. 20:19](#); [Luke 24:7, 21, 46](#); 1 Cor. 15:4). These numerous passages of Scripture, both prophecy and statement of history, agree with the record of the fact that Jesus did rise on the third day. ([Luke 24:7](#).)

(c) Moreover, the phrase "after three days" is used by the same writers (Matthew and Luke) in connection with the former one, "the third day," as meaning the same thing. Hence the definite and clear expressions must explain the one that is less so. The chief priests and Pharisees remember ([Matt. 27:63](#)) that Jesus said, after three days I rise again. Hence they urge Pilate to keep a guard over the tomb until the *third day* ([Matt. 27:64](#)). This is their own interpretation of the Saviour's words. Besides, in parallel passages in the different Gospels, one will have one expression and another the other, naturally suggesting that they regarded them as equivalent. (Cf. [Mark 8:31 with Matt. 16:21](#), [Luke 9:22 with Mark 10:34](#).) On the third day cannot mean on the fourth day, while after three days can be used as meaning on the third day.

(d) [Matthew 12:40](#) is urged as conclusive the other way. But the "three days and three nights" may be nothing more than a longer way of saying three days, using day in its long sense. And we have already seen that the Jews counted any part of this full day (day and night) as a whole day (day and night). Hence this passage may mean nothing more than the common "after three days" above mentioned, and, like that expression, must be interpreted in accordance with the definite term "on the third day" and with the clear chronological data given by Luke and the rest. They seemed to be conscious of no discrepancy in these various expressions. Most likely they understood them as well as we do at any rate.

A LIST OF THE PARABLES OF JESUS

The Sign of the Temple, §

[31](#)

.

The Physician, §

[39](#)

(cf. §

[47](#)

).

The Three Parables about the New Dispensation, §

[48](#)

.

The Blind Guiding the Blind, The Mote and the Beam, §

[54](#)

.

The Wise and Foolish Builders, §

[54](#)

.

The Children in the Market Place, §

[57](#)

.

The Two Debtors, §

[59](#)

.

Parables about Satan's Kingdom, §

[61](#)

.

The Unclean Spirit that Returned, §

[62](#)

.

The Sower, §

[64](#)

.

The Seed Growing of Itself, §

[64](#)

.

The Tares, §

[64](#)

.

The Mustard Seed, §§

[64](#)

and

[110](#)

.

The Leaven, §§

[64](#)

and

[110](#)

.

The Hid Treasure, §

[64](#)

.

The Pearl of Great Price, §

[64](#)

.

The Net, §

[64](#)

.

The Scribe, §

[64](#)

.

The Parable of Corban, §

[77](#)

.

The Unmerciful Servant, §

[92](#)

.

The Good Shepherd, §

[101](#)

.

The Good Samaritan, §

[103](#)

.

The Importunate Friend, §

[105](#)

.

The Rich Fool, §

[108](#)

.

The Waiting Servants, §

[108](#)

.

The Wise Steward, §

[108](#)

.

The Fig Tree, §

[109](#)

.

Seats at Feasts, §

[114](#)

.

Feast for the Poor, §

[114](#)

.

The Great Supper, §

[114](#)

.

The Tower and the King, §

[115](#)

.

The Lost Sheep, §

[116](#)

(cf. §

[91](#)

).

The Lost Coin, §

[116](#)

.

The Lost Son, §

[116](#)

The Unrighteous Steward, §

[117](#)

The Rich Man and Lazarus, §

[117](#)

Unprofitable Servants, §

[117](#)

The Importunate Widow, §

[121](#)

The Pharisee and the Publican, §

[121](#)

The Laborers in the Vineyard, §

[124](#)

The Pounds, §

[127](#)

The Two Sons, §

[132](#)

The Wicked Husbandmen, §

[132](#)

.

The Rejected Stone, §

[132](#)

.

The Marriage Feast and the Wedding Garment, §

[132](#)

.

The Fig Tree, §

[139](#)

.

The Porter, §

[139](#)

.

The Master and the Thief, §

[139](#)

.

The Wise Servant, §

[139](#)

.

The Ten Virgins, §

[139](#)

.

The Talents, §

[139](#)

.

The Sheep and the Goats, §

[139](#)

.

A LIST OF THE MIRACLES OF JESUS

The Water Made Wine, §

[29](#)

.

The Courtier's Son, §

[38](#)

.

The First Draught of Fishes, §

[41](#)

.

The Capernaum Demoniac, §

[42](#)

.

Simon's Mother-in-law, §

[43](#)

.

A Leper, §

[45](#)

.

The Paralytic, §

[46](#)

.

The Impotent Man, §

[49](#)

.

The Man with a Withered Hand, §

[51](#)

.

The Centurion's Servant, §

[55](#)

.

The Widow's Son, §

[56](#)

.

A Blind and Dumb Man, §

[61](#)

.

The Stilling of the Storm, §

[65](#)

.

The Gadarene Demoniacs, §

[66](#)

.

The Woman with an Issue of Blood, §

[67](#)

.

Jairus' Daughter, §

[67](#)

.

Two Blind Men, §

[68](#)

.

A Dumb Demoniac, §

[68](#)

.

The Five Thousand Fed, §

[72](#)

.

Jesus Walking on the Water, §

[74](#)

.

The Phoenician Woman's Daughter, §

[78](#)

.

The Deaf and Dumb Man, §

[79](#)

.

The Four Thousand Fed, §

[79](#)

.

A Blind Man Healed, §

[81](#)

.

The Demoniac Boy, §

[87](#)

.

The Shekel in the Fish's Mouth, §

[89](#)

.

The Man Born Blind, §

[100](#)

.

The Woman with an Infirmity, §

[110](#)

.

The Man with the Dropsy, §

[114](#)

.

The Raising of Lazarus, §

[118](#)

The Ten Lepers, §

[120](#)

Blind Bartimæus and His Companion, §

[126](#)

The Fig Tree Cursed, §

[129](#)

Malchus' Ear, §

[153](#)

The Second Draught of Fishes, §

[180](#)

Besides these particular miracles numerous general groups must be added, as

[Mark 6:56](#)

;

[Matt. 4:23 f.](#)

;

[9:35 f.](#)

;

[Luke 4:40 f.](#)

;

[5:15 f.](#)

;

[6:17-19](#)

;

[7:21 f.](#)

;

[John 2:23](#)

;

[3:2](#)

;

[4:45](#)

;

[20:30](#)

;

[21:25](#)

.

LIST OF OLD TESTAMENT QUOTATIONS IN THE GOSPELS

Mark	Quoted From
1:2	Mal. 3:1; Isa. 40:3
1:3	Isa. 40:3
1:11	Ps. 2:7; Isa. 42:1
1:24	Ps. 16:10
1:44	Lev. 13:49; 14:2-32
2:24	Ex. 20:10; Deut. 5:14; 23:25
2:25	Lev. 24:9; 1 Sam. 21:1-6
4:12	Isa. 6:9, 10
4:29	Joel 3:13
4:32	Dan. 4:9
6:18	Lev. 18:16; 20:21
7:6, 7	Isa. 29:13
7:10	Ex. 20:12; 21:17; Lev. 20:9; Deut. 5:16
8:18	Isa. 6:9, 10; Jer. 5:21; Ezek. 12:2
8:38	Ps. 62:12; Prov. 24:12
9:7	Deut. 18:15; Isa. 42:1; Ps. 2:7
9:12	Mal. 4:5
9:13	1 Kings 10:2, 10
9:48	Isa. 66:24
9:49	Lev. 2:13
10:4	Deut. 24:1
10:6	Gen. 1:27; 5:2
10:7, 8	Gen. 2:24
10:19	Ex. 20:12-17; Deut. 5:16-21
10:27	Gen. 18:14; Job 42:2
11:9	Ps. 118:26
11:17	Isa. 5:17; Jer. 7:11
12:2	Isa. 5:1 f.
12:10, 11	Ps. 118:22 f.
12:19	Gen. 38:8; Deut. 25:5, 6
12:26	Ex. 3:6
12:29	Deut. 6:4, 6
12:31	Lev. 19:18
12:33	1 Sam 15:22

[12:36](#) Ps. 8:7; 110:1
[13:12](#) Mic. 7:6
[13:14](#) Dan. 9:27
[13:19](#) Dan. 12:1
[13:24](#) Dan. 8:10; Eccl. 12:2; Joel 4:16
[13:26](#) Dan. 7:13
[14:12](#) Ex. 12:18-20
[14:18](#) Ps. 41:9
[14:24](#) Ex. 24:8; Lev. 4:18-20; Jer. 31:31
[14:27](#) Zech. 13:7
[14:34](#) Ps. 42:6
[14:62](#) Ps. 110:1; Dan. 7:13
[14:64](#) Lev. 24:16
[15:24](#) Ps. 22:18
[15:34](#) Ps. 22:1

Matthew	Quoted From
1:1-17	1 Chron. 1:34; 2:1-15; 3:1-19
1:23	Isa. 7:14
2:2	Num. 24:17
2:6	Mic. 5:1 f.
2:15	Hos. 11:1
2:18	Jer. 31:15
3:3	Isa. 40:3
3:17	Ps. 2:7; Isa. 42:1
4:4	Deut. 8:3
4:6	Ps. 91:11
4:7	Deut. 6:16
4:10	Deut. 6:13
4:15 f.	Isa. 8:23; 9:1 f.
5:4	Isa. 61:2
5:5	Ps. 37:11
5:6	Ps. 55
5:7	Ps. 18:25; Prov. 11:17
5:8	Ps. 24:3-5
5:21 f.	Ex. 20:13; Deut. 5:17
5:27	Ex. 20:14; Deut. 5:18
5:31	Deut. 24:1
5:33 ff.	Ex. 20:7; Num. 30:2; Lev. 19:12; Deut. 5:11; 23:21; Isa. 66:1; Ps. 48:2
5:38	Ex. 21:24; Lev. 24:20; Deut. 19:21
5:43	Lev. 19:18; Deut. 23:6; 25:19
8:11	Isa. 49:12
8:17	Isa. 53:4
9:13	Hos. 6:6
9:36	Num. 27:17; Ezek. 24:5
10:35	Mic. 7:6
11:5	Isa. 2:18-19; 35:5-6; 61:1
11:10	Mal. 3:1
11:15	Mal. 4:5
11:23	Isa. 14:13-15
11:24	Gen. 19:24
11:29 f.	Jer. 6:16
12:2	Ex. 20:10; Deut. 5:14; 23:25
12:3	Lev. 24:9; 1 Sam. 21:1-6
12:5	Num. 28:9-10
12:7	Hos. 6:6
12:18-21	Isa. 42:1-4
12:40	Jonah 1:17; 2:1-2; 3:5; 4:3; 1 Kings 10:1-10
13:14, 15	Isa. 6:9, 10
13:32	Dan. 4:9-21
13:35	Ps. 78:2
13:43	Dan. 12:3
15:4	Ex. 20:12; 21:17; Lev. 20:9

[15:8, 9](#) Isa. 29:13
[16:4](#) Jonah 3:4
[16:18](#) Ps. 89:4, 26, 38, 48
[16:27](#) Ps. 62:12; Prov. 24:12
[17:5](#) Isa. 42:1; Deut. 18:5; Ps. 2:7
[17:11-12](#) 1 Kings 19:2, 10; Mal. 4:5-6
[18:16](#) Deut. 19:15
[19:4](#) Gen. 1:27; 5:2
[19:5](#) Gen. 2:24
[19:7](#) Deut. 24:1
[19:18](#) Ex. 20:12, 13, 14; 21:17; Deut. 5:19, 20
[19:19](#) Lev. 19:18; Ex. 20:12
[19:26](#) Gen. 18:14
[21:5](#) Isa. 62:11; Zech. 9:9
[21:9](#) Ps. 118:26
[21:13](#) Isa. 56:7; Jer. 7:11
[21:16](#) Ps. 82
[21:33](#) Isa. 5:1 f.
[21:42](#) Ps. 118:22
[21:44](#) Isa. 8:14
[22:24](#) Deut. 25:5
[22:32](#) Ex. 3:6, 15
[22:37](#) Deut. 6:5
[22:39](#) Lev. 19:18
[22:44](#) Ps. 110:1
[23:5-6](#) Ex. 13:9; Num. 13:38-39; Deut. 6:8; 11:18
[23:23](#) Lev. 27:30; Mic. 6:8
[23:35](#) Gen. 4:8; 2 Chron. 24:20-21
[23:38 f.](#) Ps. 118:26; Jer. 12:7; 22:5
[24:15](#) Dan. 9:27; 11:31; 12:11
[24:21](#) Dan. 12:1
[24:24](#) Deut. 13:1
[24:29](#) Dan. 8:10; Joel 4:16
[24:30](#) Dan. 7:13; Isa. 13:9-10; Ezek. 32:7-8;
 Amos 8:9; Zeph. 1:14-16
[24:37](#) Gen. 6:11-13; 7:7, 21-23
[25:31](#) Zech. 14:5
[25:46](#) Dan. 12:2
[26:28](#) Ex. 24:8; Lev. 4:18-20; Jer. 31:31;
 Zech. 9:11

[26:31](#) Zech. 13:7
[26:64](#) Ps. 110:1; Dan. 7:13
[26:65](#) Lev. 24:16
[27:6](#) Deut. 23:18
[27:9, 10](#) Jer. 18:2; 19:2; 32:6; Zech. 11:13
[27:24](#) Deut. 21:6-9
[27:34](#) Ps. 69:21
[27:35](#) Ps. 22:19
[27:46](#) Ps. 22:1

Luke	Quoted From
1:15	Num. 6:3; Judg. 13:4-5; 1 Sam. 1:11
1:17	Mal. 3:1; 4:5-6
1:19	Dan. 8:16; 9:21
1:31	Isa. 7:14
1:32	2 Sam. 7:12-17
1:35	Ex. 13:12
1:38	Gen. 18:14
1:46 f.	1 Sam. 2:1-10
1:48	1 Sam. 1:11
1:49	1 Sam. 2:2
1:50	Ps. 103:17
1:51	1 Sam. 2:4; Ps. 89:10

[1:52](#) 1 Sam. 2:7; Job. 5:11; 12:19
[1:53](#) 1 Sam. 2:5; Ps. 107:9
[1:54](#) Isa. 41:8-9; Gen. 17:7; Mic. 7:20
[1:59](#) Lev. 12:3
[1:68](#) Ps. 72:18; 111:9
[1:69](#) 1 Sam. 2:10; Ps. 18:3
[1:71](#) Ps. 18:4; 106:10
[1:72 f.](#) Gen. 17:7; Lev. 26:42; Ps. 105:8; Mic. 7:20
[1:76](#) Mal. 3:1
[1:78](#) Mal. 4:2
[1:79](#) Isa. 8:22; 9:2
[2:21](#) Gen. 17:12; Lev. 12:3
[2:23 f.](#) Ex. 13:2, 12; Lev. 12:1-8
[2:30](#) Isa. 52:10
[2:32](#) Isa. 42:6; 49:6
[2:41](#) Ex. 23:14-17; Deut. 16:1-8
[2:52](#) 1 Sam. 2:26
[3:4-6](#) Isa. 40:3-5
[3:22](#) Ps. 2:7; Isa. 42:1
[3:23-38](#) 1 Chron. 1:1-4, 24-28; 2:1-15; 3:17; Ruth 4:18-22
[4:4](#) Deut. 8:3
[4:8](#) Deut. 6:13
[4:10 f.](#) Ps. 91:11
[4:12](#) Deut. 6:16
[4:18 f.](#) Isa. 58:6; 61:1 f
[4:25-27](#) 1 Kings 17:1, 8-9; 18:1-2; 2 Kings 5:1, 14
[4:34](#) Ps. 16:10
[5:14](#) Lev. 13:49; 14:2-32
[6:2](#) Ex. 20:10; Deut. 5:14; 23:25
[6:3](#) Lev. 24:9; 1 Sam. 21:1-6
[6:21](#) Isa. 61:2
[7:22](#) Isa. 2:18-19; 35:5-6; 61:1
[7:27](#) Mal. 3:1
[8:10](#) Isa. 6:9 f.
[10:12](#) Gen. 19:24
[10:15](#) Isa. 14:13-15

[10:27](#) Lev. 18:5; 19:18; Deut. 6:4 f.
[11:29](#) Jonah 3:1-4
[11:31](#) 1 Kings 10:1-3
[11:32](#) Jonah 3:5-10
[11:42, 51](#) Lev. 27:30; Gen. 4:8; 2 Chron. 24:20 f.; Mic. 6:8
[12:53](#) Mic. 7:6
[13:14, 19](#) Ex. 20:8-11; Deut. 5:12-15; Dan. 4:10-12, 20 f.
[13:27, 29](#) Ps. 6:8; 13:29; 107:3; Isa. 49:12
[17:12](#) Lev. 13:45-46
[17:13 f.](#) Lev. 13:49; 14:1-3
[17:26](#) Gen. 6:11-13; 7:7, 21-23
[17:28, 33](#) Gen. 18:20-22; 19:24-25; Gen. 19:26
[18:20](#) Ex. 20:12-17; Deut. 5:16-21
[19:8, 10](#) Ex. 22:1; Num. 5:6-7; Ezek. 34:16
[19:38](#) Ps. 118:26
[19:46](#) Isa. 56:7; Jer. 7:11

[20:9](#) Isa. 5:1 f.
[20:17](#) Ps. 118:22 f.
[20:18](#) Isa. 8:14
[20:28, 38](#) Gen. 38:8; Deut. 25:5 f.; Ex. 3:6
[20:42 f.](#) Ps. 8:7; 110:1
[21:20](#) Dan. 9:27
[21:22](#) Dan. 12:1
[21:25 f.](#) Dan. 8:10; Joel 4:16; Isa. 13:9 f.;
Ezek. 32:7 f.; Amos 8:9; Zeph. 1:14 f.
[21:27, 28](#) Dan. 7:13; Deut. 30:4 (LXX); Isa. 21:12 f.;
Zech. 2:6 (LXX)
[22:37](#) Isa. 53:12
[22:46](#) Ps. 31:5
[22:69](#) Ps. 110:1; Dan. 7:13
[23:30](#) Hos. 10:8

[23:46](#) Ps. 31:6
[23:56](#) Ex. 12:16; 20:8-11; Deut. 5:12-15
[24:46](#) Hos. 6:2

John	Quoted From
1:23	Isa. 40:3
1:29, 36	Isa. 53:7
1:49	2 Sam. 7:14; Ps. 2:7
1:51	Gen. 28:12
2:18	Ex. 16:4, 15; Neh. 9:15; Ps. 69:9
3:14	Num. 21:8-9
4:5	Josh. 24:32
5:10	Ex. 20:10; Deut. 5:14
6:14	Deut. 18:15
6:31	Ex. 16:4; Neh. 9:15; Ps. 78:24
6:45	Isa. 54:13
7:22	Gen. 17:9-14; Lev. 12:1-3
7:38	Prov. 18:4
7:42	2 Sam. 7:12; Isa. 11:1; Mic. 5:2
8:5	Lev. 20:10; Deut. 22:22-24
8:17	Deut. 17:6; 19:15
8:39	Isa. 6:9 f.
10:16	Ezek. 35:23; 37:24
10:34	Ps. 82:6
12:13	Ps. 118:26
12:14 f.	Zech. 9:9
12:27	Ps. 42:6
12:38	Isa. 53:1
12:40	Isa. 6:9 f.
13:18	Ps. 41:9
15:25	Ps. 35:19; 69:5
16:22	Isa. 66:14
17:12	Ps. 41:9
19:24	Ps. 22:18
19:29	Ps. 69:21
19:36	Ex. 12:46; Num. 9:12; Ps. 34:21
19:37	Zech. 12:10
19:42	Deut. 21:22

A LIST OF SOME UNCANONICAL SAYINGS OF JESUS

Some of the more important reported sayings of Christ are given which are not found in the Gospels or Acts; whether true words of the Master or not, it is not known. Some certainly are not like the Spirit of Christ, but it will be of service to the student to compare them with the genuine Words of Jesus in our Gospels. The Apocryphal Gospels are passed by as not worth using in this list.

1. The Logia of Jesus (Grenfell and Hunt):

Jesus saith: Except ye fast to the world, ye shall in no wise find the Kingdom of God; and except ye keep the Sabbath, ye shall not see the Father.

Jesus saith: I stood in the midst of the world, and in the flesh was I seen of them, and I found all

men drunken, and none found I athirst among them, and my soul grieveth over the sons of men because they are blind in their heart.

Jesus saith: Wherever there are ... and there is one ... alone, I am with him. Raise the stone and there thou shalt find me, cleave the wood and there am I.

Jesus saith: A prophet is not acceptable in his own country, neither doth a physician work cures upon them that know him.

Jesus saith: A city built upon the top of a high hill and stablished, can neither fall nor be hid.

2. Readings found in Codex D.

One is concerning a man found working on the Sabbath, and comes after [Luke 6:4](#): O man, if indeed thou knowest what thou doest, thou art blessed; but if thou knowest not, thou art cursed and art a transgressor of the law.

Likewise Codex D has, after [Matt. 20:28](#): But you seek to increase from little, and from greater to be less.

3. Quotations found in various early Fathers.

From Barnabas: Let us resist all iniquity, and hold it in hatred. They who wish to see me and lay hold on my kingdom must receive me by affliction and suffering.

From Origen and others: Show yourselves tried money changers.

Ask great things, and the small shall be added to you; and ask heavenly things, and the earthly shall be added unto you.

He who is near me is near the fire: he who is far from me, is far from the kingdom.

For those that are sick I was sick, and for those that hunger, I suffered hunger, and for those that thirst, I suffered thirst.

From Clement of Rome (Ep. II.): Keep the flesh pure, and the seal unspotted.

When the two shall be one, and that which is without as that which is within, and the male with the female neither male nor female.

If ye kept not that which is small, who will give you that which is great? For I say unto you, that he that is faithful in very little is faithful also in much.

From Justin Martyr: In whatsoever I may find you, in this will I also judge you. Such as I may find thee, I will judge thee.

From Ignatius: Take hold, handle me, and see that I am not an incorporeal spirit.

From Clement of Alexandria: He that wonders shall reign, and he that reigns shall rest. Look with wonder at that which is before you. My mystery is for me and for the sons of my house.

From Papias: The days will come in which vines shall spring up, each having ten thousand stocks, and on each stock ten thousand branches, and on each branch ten thousand shoots, and on each shoot ten thousand bunches, and on each bunch ten thousand grapes, and each grape when pressed shall give five and twenty measures of wine. And when any saint shall have seized one bunch, another shall cry: I am a better bunch; take me; through me bless the Lord.

SIMILAR INCIDENTS AND CHIEF REPEATED SAYINGS

Calling Disciples: §§

[41](#)

, and

[53](#)

.

Cleansing the Temple: §§

[31](#)

and

[129](#)

.

Owning Jesus as Messiah: §§

[28](#)

,

[35](#)

,

[41](#)

,

[76](#)

,

[82](#)

,

[118](#)

.

Rejection at Nazareth: §§

[39](#)

and

[69](#)

.

Miraculous Draught of Fishes: §§

[41](#)

and

[180](#)

.

Parables of Mustard Seed and Leaven: §§

[64 \(d\)](#)

and

[110](#)

.

The Tours of Galilee: §§

[44](#)

,

[60](#)

, and

[70](#)

.

Healings on the Sabbath: §§

[42](#)

,

[43](#)

,

[49-51](#)

,

[100](#)

,

[110](#)

,

[114](#)

.

The Lists of the Twelve: §§

[53](#)

and

[70](#)

.

Courtier's Son and Centurion's Servant: §§

[38](#)

and

[55](#)

.

The Model Prayer: §§

[54](#)

and

[105](#)

.

The Anointing of Christ: §§

[59](#)

and

[141](#)

.

The Blasphemous Accusation: §§

[61](#)

,

[68](#)

, and

[106](#)

.

Groups of Parables: §§

[64](#)

,

[91-92](#)

,

[108](#)

,

[114-117](#)

,

[121](#)

,

[124](#)

,

[132](#)

,

[139](#)

.

Sending the Twelve and Sending the Seventy: §§

[70](#)

and

[102](#)

.

Feeding the Five Thousand and the Four Thousand: §§

[72](#)

and

[79](#)

.

Tests of Discipleship: §§

[76](#)

,

[83](#)

and

[115](#)

.

Jesus Foretelling His Death: §§

[31](#)

,

[83](#)

,

[85](#)

,

[86](#)

,

[88](#)

,

[125](#)

,
[139-152](#)

.

The Twelve Contending for Supremacy: §§

[90](#)

,
[125](#)

,
[144](#)

.

Attacking Jesus in Jerusalem: §§

[31](#)

,
[49](#)

,
[96-101](#)

,
[111](#)

,
[119](#)

,
[124-135](#)

,
[153-167](#)

.

Foretelling the Second Coming: §§

[84](#)

,
[120](#)

,
[127](#)

,
[139](#)

,
[148-151](#)

Divorce: §§

[54](#)

and

[122](#)

Like Children: §§

[90](#)

and

[123](#)

Rewards of Service: §§

[93](#)

and

[124](#)

Worldly Anxieties: §§

[54](#)

and

[108](#)

The Ninety and Nine: §§

[91](#)

and

[116](#)

Baptism of Death: §§

[108](#)

and

[125](#)

.

The Pounds and the Talents: §§

[127](#)

and

[139](#)

.

The Agony of Christ: §§

[130](#)

and

[152](#)

.

Denouncing the Scribes and Pharisees: §§

[61](#)

and

[137](#)

.

Lament Over Jerusalem: §§

[113](#)

,

[128](#)

, and

[137](#)

.

About a Sword: §§

[70](#)

,

[147](#)

,

[153](#)

.

The Three Commissions: §§

[178](#)

,

[181](#)

, and

[183](#)

.

In general the Later Judean Ministry and the Perean Ministry, chiefly Luke's contribution to the Life of Christ, furnish many events and discourses similar to those described in the Galilean Ministry. Sections 102 to 127 furnish most of the so-called "doublets" or repeated sayings of Jesus or similar miracles. This is just what we should expect in a popular teacher who journeyed in different parts of the country. Some of these were real doublets, spoken by Jesus more than once. Others may be grouped by Luke in a different place. We have no way to decide the problem.

BY PROFESSOR A. T. ROBERTSON

A HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS FOR STUDENTS OF THE LIFE OF CHRIST. Based on the BROADUS HARMONY.

A GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT IN THE LIGHT OF HISTORICAL RESEARCH. Third Edition. Pages 1538.

A SHORT GRAMMAR OF THE GREEK NEW TESTAMENT. Fifth Edition. Pages 284. Translation in Dutch, French, German and Italian.

PRACTICAL AND SOCIAL ASPECTS OF CHRISTIANITY. The Wisdom of James. Second Edition. Pages 271.

PAUL THE INTERPRETER OF CHRIST. Second Edition. Pages 155.

TYPES OF PREACHERS IN THE NEW TESTAMENT. Pages 238.

EPOCHS IN THE LIFE OF JESUS. Pages 212. Numerous Editions.

EPOCHS IN THE LIFE OF PAUL. Numerous Editions. Pages 337.

JOHN THE LOYAL: Studies in the Ministry of the Baptist. Pages 327. Several editions.

THE PHARISEES AND JESUS. The Stone (Princeton) Lectures. The Studies in Theology Series. Pages 201.

LUKE THE HISTORIAN IN THE LIGHT OF RESEARCH. Pages 267.

THE NEW CITIZENSHIP. Pages 157. Second Edition.

THE GLORY OF THE MINISTRY. Pages 243. Second Edition.

MAKING GOOD IN THE MINISTRY. A sketch of John Mark. Pages 174. Second Edition.

PAUL'S JOY IN CHRIST. Studies in Philippians. Pages 267. Second Edition.

THE DIVINITY OF CHRIST IN THE GOSPEL OF JOHN. Pages 173. Second Edition.

THE STUDENT'S CHRONOLOGICAL NEW TESTAMENT. Second Edition.

COMMENTARY ON THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO MATTHEW. The Bible for Home and School. Pages 308.

STUDIES IN MARK'S GOSPEL. Pages 158.

STUDIES IN THE NEW TESTAMENT. Many editions. Pages 284.

THE TEACHING OF JESUS CONCERNING GOD THE FATHER. The Teaching of Jesus Series. Pages 190.

KEYWORDS IN THE TEACHING OF JESUS. Pages 127. Several Editions.

LIFE AND LETTERS OF JOHN A. BROADUS. Pages 476. Numerous Editions.

SYLLABUS FOR NEW TESTAMENT STUDY. Pages 207. Fourth Edition.

*** END OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK A HARMONY OF THE GOSPELS FOR
STUDENTS OF THE LIFE OF CHRIST ***

Updated editions will replace the previous one—the old editions will be renamed.

Creating the works from print editions not protected by U.S. copyright law means that no one owns a United States copyright in these works, so the Foundation (and you!) can copy and distribute it in the United States without permission and without paying copyright royalties. Special rules, set forth in the General Terms of Use part of this license, apply to copying and distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works to protect the PROJECT GUTENBERG™ concept and trademark. Project Gutenberg is a registered trademark, and may not be used if you charge for an eBook, except by following the terms of the trademark license, including paying royalties for use of the Project Gutenberg trademark. If you do not charge anything for copies of this eBook, complying with the trademark license is very easy. You may use this eBook for nearly any purpose such as creation of derivative works, reports, performances and research. Project Gutenberg eBooks may be modified and printed and given away—you may do practically ANYTHING in the United States with eBooks not protected by U.S. copyright law. Redistribution is subject to the trademark license, especially commercial redistribution.

START: FULL LICENSE
THE FULL PROJECT GUTENBERG LICENSE
PLEASE READ THIS BEFORE YOU DISTRIBUTE OR USE THIS WORK

To protect the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting the free distribution of electronic works, by using or distributing this work (or any other work associated in any way with the phrase “Project Gutenberg”), you agree to comply with all the terms of the Full Project Gutenberg™ License available with this file or online at www.gutenberg.org/license.

**Section 1. General Terms of Use and Redistributing Project Gutenberg™
electronic works**

1.A. By reading or using any part of this Project Gutenberg™ electronic work, you indicate that you have read, understand, agree to and accept all the terms of this license and intellectual property (trademark/copyright) agreement. If you do not agree to abide by all the terms of this agreement, you must cease using and return or destroy all copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in your possession. If you paid a fee for obtaining a copy of or access to a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work and you do not agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement, you may obtain a refund from the person or entity to whom you paid the fee as set forth in paragraph 1.E.8.

1.B. “Project Gutenberg” is a registered trademark. It may only be used on or associated in any way with an electronic work by people who agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement. There are a few things that you can do with most Project Gutenberg™ electronic works even without complying with the full terms of this agreement. See paragraph 1.C below. There are a lot of things you can do with Project Gutenberg™ electronic works if you follow the terms of this agreement and help preserve free future access to Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. See paragraph 1.E below.

1.C. The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation (“the Foundation” or PGLAF), owns a compilation copyright in the collection of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. Nearly all the individual works in the collection are in the public domain in the United States. If an individual work is unprotected by copyright law in the United States and you are located in the United States, we do not claim a right to prevent you from copying, distributing, performing, displaying or creating derivative works based on the work as long as all references to Project Gutenberg are removed. Of course, we hope that you will support the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting free access to electronic works by freely sharing Project Gutenberg™ works in compliance with the terms of this agreement for keeping the Project Gutenberg™ name associated with the work. You can easily comply with the terms of

this agreement by keeping this work in the same format with its attached full Project Gutenberg™ License when you share it without charge with others.

1.D. The copyright laws of the place where you are located also govern what you can do with this work. Copyright laws in most countries are in a constant state of change. If you are outside the United States, check the laws of your country in addition to the terms of this agreement before downloading, copying, displaying, performing, distributing or creating derivative works based on this work or any other Project Gutenberg™ work. The Foundation makes no representations concerning the copyright status of any work in any country other than the United States.

1.E. Unless you have removed all references to Project Gutenberg:

1.E.1. The following sentence, with active links to, or other immediate access to, the full Project Gutenberg™ License must appear prominently whenever any copy of a Project Gutenberg™ work (any work on which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” appears, or with which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” is associated) is accessed, displayed, performed, viewed, copied or distributed:

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere in the United States and most other parts of the world at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at www.gutenberg.org. If you are not located in the United States, you will have to check the laws of the country where you are located before using this eBook.

1.E.2. If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is derived from texts not protected by U.S. copyright law (does not contain a notice indicating that it is posted with permission of the copyright holder), the work can be copied and distributed to anyone in the United States without paying any fees or charges. If you are redistributing or providing access to a work with the phrase “Project Gutenberg” associated with or appearing on the work, you must comply either with the requirements of paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 or obtain permission for the use of the work and the Project Gutenberg™ trademark as set forth in paragraphs 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.3. If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is posted with the permission of the copyright holder, your use and distribution must comply with both paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 and any additional terms imposed by the copyright holder. Additional terms will be linked to the Project Gutenberg™ License for all works posted with the permission of the copyright holder found at the beginning of this work.

1.E.4. Do not unlink or detach or remove the full Project Gutenberg™ License terms from this work, or any files containing a part of this work or any other work associated with Project Gutenberg™.

1.E.5. Do not copy, display, perform, distribute or redistribute this electronic work, or any part of this electronic work, without prominently displaying the sentence set forth in paragraph 1.E.1 with active links or immediate access to the full terms of the Project Gutenberg™ License.

1.E.6. You may convert to and distribute this work in any binary, compressed, marked up, nonproprietary or proprietary form, including any word processing or hypertext form. However, if you provide access to or distribute copies of a Project Gutenberg™ work in a format other than “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other format used in the official version posted on the official Project Gutenberg™ website (www.gutenberg.org), you must, at no additional cost, fee or expense to the user, provide a copy, a means of exporting a copy, or a means of obtaining a copy upon request, of the work in its original “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other form. Any alternate format must include the full Project Gutenberg™ License as specified in paragraph 1.E.1.

1.E.7. Do not charge a fee for access to, viewing, displaying, performing, copying or distributing any Project Gutenberg™ works unless you comply with paragraph 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.8. You may charge a reasonable fee for copies of or providing access to or distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works provided that:

- You pay a royalty fee of 20% of the gross profits you derive from the use of Project Gutenberg™ works calculated using the method you already use to calculate your applicable taxes. The fee is owed to the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, but he has agreed to donate royalties under this paragraph to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation. Royalty payments must be paid within 60 days following each date on which you prepare (or are legally required to prepare) your periodic tax returns. Royalty payments should be clearly marked as such and sent to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation at the address specified in Section 4, “Information about donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation.”
- You provide a full refund of any money paid by a user who notifies you in writing (or by e-

mail) within 30 days of receipt that s/he does not agree to the terms of the full Project Gutenberg™ License. You must require such a user to return or destroy all copies of the works possessed in a physical medium and discontinue all use of and all access to other copies of Project Gutenberg™ works.

- You provide, in accordance with paragraph 1.F.3, a full refund of any money paid for a work or a replacement copy, if a defect in the electronic work is discovered and reported to you within 90 days of receipt of the work.
- You comply with all other terms of this agreement for free distribution of Project Gutenberg™ works.

1.E.9. If you wish to charge a fee or distribute a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work or group of works on different terms than are set forth in this agreement, you must obtain permission in writing from the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the manager of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark. Contact the Foundation as set forth in Section 3 below.

1.F.

1.F.1. Project Gutenberg volunteers and employees expend considerable effort to identify, do copyright research on, transcribe and proofread works not protected by U.S. copyright law in creating the Project Gutenberg™ collection. Despite these efforts, Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, and the medium on which they may be stored, may contain “Defects,” such as, but not limited to, incomplete, inaccurate or corrupt data, transcription errors, a copyright or other intellectual property infringement, a defective or damaged disk or other medium, a computer virus, or computer codes that damage or cannot be read by your equipment.

1.F.2. LIMITED WARRANTY, DISCLAIMER OF DAMAGES - Except for the “Right of Replacement or Refund” described in paragraph 1.F.3, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, and any other party distributing a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work under this agreement, disclaim all liability to you for damages, costs and expenses, including legal fees. YOU AGREE THAT YOU HAVE NO REMEDIES FOR NEGLIGENCE, STRICT LIABILITY, BREACH OF WARRANTY OR BREACH OF CONTRACT EXCEPT THOSE PROVIDED IN PARAGRAPH 1.F.3. YOU AGREE THAT THE FOUNDATION, THE TRADEMARK OWNER, AND ANY DISTRIBUTOR UNDER THIS AGREEMENT WILL NOT BE LIABLE TO YOU FOR ACTUAL, DIRECT, INDIRECT, CONSEQUENTIAL, PUNITIVE OR INCIDENTAL DAMAGES EVEN IF YOU GIVE NOTICE OF THE POSSIBILITY OF SUCH DAMAGE.

1.F.3. LIMITED RIGHT OF REPLACEMENT OR REFUND - If you discover a defect in this electronic work within 90 days of receiving it, you can receive a refund of the money (if any) you paid for it by sending a written explanation to the person you received the work from. If you received the work on a physical medium, you must return the medium with your written explanation. The person or entity that provided you with the defective work may elect to provide a replacement copy in lieu of a refund. If you received the work electronically, the person or entity providing it to you may choose to give you a second opportunity to receive the work electronically in lieu of a refund. If the second copy is also defective, you may demand a refund in writing without further opportunities to fix the problem.

1.F.4. Except for the limited right of replacement or refund set forth in paragraph 1.F.3, this work is provided to you ‘AS-IS’, WITH NO OTHER WARRANTIES OF ANY KIND, EXPRESS OR IMPLIED, INCLUDING BUT NOT LIMITED TO WARRANTIES OF MERCHANTABILITY OR FITNESS FOR ANY PURPOSE.

1.F.5. Some states do not allow disclaimers of certain implied warranties or the exclusion or limitation of certain types of damages. If any disclaimer or limitation set forth in this agreement violates the law of the state applicable to this agreement, the agreement shall be interpreted to make the maximum disclaimer or limitation permitted by the applicable state law. The invalidity or unenforceability of any provision of this agreement shall not void the remaining provisions.

1.F.6. INDEMNITY - You agree to indemnify and hold the Foundation, the trademark owner, any agent or employee of the Foundation, anyone providing copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in accordance with this agreement, and any volunteers associated with the production, promotion and distribution of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, harmless from all liability, costs and expenses, including legal fees, that arise directly or indirectly from any of the following which you do or cause to occur: (a) distribution of this or any Project Gutenberg™ work, (b) alteration, modification, or additions or deletions to any Project Gutenberg™ work, and (c) any Defect you cause.

Section 2. Information about the Mission of Project Gutenberg™

Project Gutenberg™ is synonymous with the free distribution of electronic works in formats readable by the widest variety of computers including obsolete, old, middle-aged and new

computers. It exists because of the efforts of hundreds of volunteers and donations from people in all walks of life.

Volunteers and financial support to provide volunteers with the assistance they need are critical to reaching Project Gutenberg™'s goals and ensuring that the Project Gutenberg™ collection will remain freely available for generations to come. In 2001, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation was created to provide a secure and permanent future for Project Gutenberg™ and future generations. To learn more about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and how your efforts and donations can help, see Sections 3 and 4 and the Foundation information page at www.gutenberg.org.

Section 3. Information about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation is a non-profit 501(c)(3) educational corporation organized under the laws of the state of Mississippi and granted tax exempt status by the Internal Revenue Service. The Foundation's EIN or federal tax identification number is 64-6221541. Contributions to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation are tax deductible to the full extent permitted by U.S. federal laws and your state's laws.

The Foundation's business office is located at 809 North 1500 West, Salt Lake City, UT 84116, (801) 596-1887. Email contact links and up to date contact information can be found at the Foundation's website and official page at www.gutenberg.org/contact

Section 4. Information about Donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

Project Gutenberg™ depends upon and cannot survive without widespread public support and donations to carry out its mission of increasing the number of public domain and licensed works that can be freely distributed in machine-readable form accessible by the widest array of equipment including outdated equipment. Many small donations (\$1 to \$5,000) are particularly important to maintaining tax exempt status with the IRS.

The Foundation is committed to complying with the laws regulating charities and charitable donations in all 50 states of the United States. Compliance requirements are not uniform and it takes a considerable effort, much paperwork and many fees to meet and keep up with these requirements. We do not solicit donations in locations where we have not received written confirmation of compliance. To SEND DONATIONS or determine the status of compliance for any particular state visit www.gutenberg.org/donate.

While we cannot and do not solicit contributions from states where we have not met the solicitation requirements, we know of no prohibition against accepting unsolicited donations from donors in such states who approach us with offers to donate.

International donations are gratefully accepted, but we cannot make any statements concerning tax treatment of donations received from outside the United States. U.S. laws alone swamp our small staff.

Please check the Project Gutenberg web pages for current donation methods and addresses. Donations are accepted in a number of other ways including checks, online payments and credit card donations. To donate, please visit: www.gutenberg.org/donate

Section 5. General Information About Project Gutenberg™ electronic works

Professor Michael S. Hart was the originator of the Project Gutenberg™ concept of a library of electronic works that could be freely shared with anyone. For forty years, he produced and distributed Project Gutenberg™ eBooks with only a loose network of volunteer support.

Project Gutenberg™ eBooks are often created from several printed editions, all of which are confirmed as not protected by copyright in the U.S. unless a copyright notice is included. Thus, we do not necessarily keep eBooks in compliance with any particular paper edition.

Most people start at our website which has the main PG search facility: www.gutenberg.org.

This website includes information about Project Gutenberg™, including how to make donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, how to help produce our new eBooks, and how to subscribe to our email newsletter to hear about new eBooks.